





# RED PACKET SERVER

BOOK 06

*Zhi Xin*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Red Packet Server

(超级红包群)

by

Zhi Xin

(知新)

# Synopsis

---

On a certain day, Ye Zichen was dragged into a deities' chat group. These deities liked to brag, and also liked to send red packets.

Ever since then, Ye Zichen's life has had unbelievable changes.

The God of Fortune sent a red packet. I'm going to snatch it! Wow, I got a large gold ingot.

Taibai Jinxing sent a red packet, I'm going to snatch it as well! Wow, I got a thousand years of cultivation.

Super WeChat Red Envelope Group, with a swipe of my hands, I got them red packets.

Stop messing around, I'm going to snatch red envelopes now!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Selutu @ [Volare Novels](#)

Translation Editing by Khuja & etvolare @ [Volare Novels](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 501 – How about teaching me pill refining?

---

Ye Zichen raised his hand and touched the snowshoe hare. Just like I thought, spiritual beasts are more or less the same as the animals in the Modern Realm. The only thing different is that the former has yao spiritual energy flowing within.

I suppose it's all thanks to him being a spiritual beast. An animal in the Modern Realm would have died from these injuries already.

His meridians are all over the place, and his guts are displaced.

It seems like Zhen Yingjun really tried to kill him. The only reason this snowshoe hare could run over here might have been due to his iron will of wanting to tell his older sister to run.

“My little brother...”

“Wait a moment, I have to find an expert.”

With that, Ye Zichen told Lil' White to stabilize the hare's situation, and took out his phone to find Old Lord Taishang!

“Old Man, do you have the kind of special pill which can heal a yao? Give me ten vials!”

“You're insane!” Old Lord Taishang replied instantly. “Did you really treat this old man as your medical storage, so you just coming running to me whenever you need some sort of pill?”

“What else am I supposed to do? You're the only pill refiner I know,” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth. “If I knew anyone else, then I wouldn't come and find you! How about... You teach me how to refine pills?”

I heard that pill refiners are rather amazing in the Three Realms. If I can get Old Lord Taishang's skills in pill refinement...

Then I'd be all set.

“You want to learn pill refinement?”

“Yes, yes, yes!”

“Hehe, no way in hell,” Old Lord Taishang frowned, then typed out his reply on the screen. “All those who want to learn pill refinement from me goes through the proper ceremony of gaining a master. Then, they will be with this old man for three thousand years to ensure that their personality is alright, and only then will they be able to learn the art of pill refinement.”

“Oh, then I’m not going to learn anymore. I’ll leave it to you to supply me with pills!”

This geezer is so sinister. He actually wants me to be his disciple, and act as his lackey for three thousand years...

You’ve got to be kidding me!

“Kid, there aren’t any!” Old Lord Taishang also got annoyed.

Ye Zichen quickly replied, “Stop messing around. There’s life on the line here, hurry up and send me the pills. I’ll just get Yue Lao to gift you two sets of kinky lingerie for your woman.”

“Scram, scram, scram...”

A bunch of angry emojis instantly filled the screen, and at the same time, so did a red packet appear.

Tap.

You received Old Lord Taishang’s red packet.

Yao Recovery Pill x1

Yao Recovery Pill: A level 3 earth grade yao pill refined from an earth grade yao’s inner core.

“Thanks.”

Ye Zichen sent a few kiss emojis to Old Lord Taishang, then withdrew the pill and stuffed it into the hare’s mouth.

“Help him absorb this yao pill. He should recover after that.”

Approximately an hour later, the hare gradually transformed back into a handsome young man once again, and when he did, he still wore a long white robe...

Ye Zichen couldn't help but muttered silently. Did their clothes transform from their fur?

If that's the case, then it should shield them from the cold during winter pretty well, right?

"Sis..." the young man laying on the ground opened his eyes and called out weakly.

Lin Xue's expression immediately brightened when she heard his voice.

After carefully asking the young man whether he felt any discomfort, she directly kneeled down in front of Ye Zichen, "My lord, you saved my little brother's life. Lin Xue has no other way to repay you, so I can only..."

"Don't think about repaying him with your body. He can't have anymore women by his side," Zuo Mo walked over with a pout.

"No, Lin Xue doesn't dare to wish for that. Lin Xue merely wants to serve my lord in order to repay this aid," Lin Xue repeatedly shook her head.

Ye Zichen let out a sigh, then helped her up with a smile, "It was just a small thing, don't mind it too much."

"How can that be okay?"

"Then follow me in the future," Zuo Mo smiled. "I'll be worried if you follow him. No one would dare to bully you if you follow me."

"Then can my little brother come with me?"

"As for him..." Zuo Mo squinted her eyes. "I don't like unfamiliar men around me. How about letting him follow Ye Zichen!"

Zuo Mo actually had a very selfish reason for saying that. If this

young man follows Ye Zichen, then I'll have more excuses to go and find him.

“Lil' White, take care of this young man from now on.”

“No problem,” Lil' White smiled, then walked in front of the white-robed young man, who didn't understand what was going on with a smile. “You'll be following Lord White from now on. You'll have a great life, and if anyone dares to bully you, then tell Lord White. Lord White will definitely support you.”

“O-Okay!”

...

Thus, the rest of the day passed by in the blink of an eye. Ye Zichen and co. stayed in the city for the night, before travelling over to the Nine Tail Fox clan's location the next morning.

During so, Lin Xue and her little brother, Lin Lei, also became more familiar with the rest.

That was especially true for Lin Xue and Zuo Mo, who became like actual sisters. Of course, Lin Xue was not foolish enough to think that they were truly sisters, and so she did respect the hierarchy of mistress and servant.

...

At the Nine Tail Fox Clan.

The birthday of the clan's Third Young Lady could be described as a celebration for the entire clan, and the main reason was because the newly ascended Third Young Lady was extremely favored by the two other young ladies of the clan.

The various clans of the Central Continent all hurried over with a red birthday invitation in their hands.

“Zichen-ge, we don't have an invitation,” Lil' White blinked. At that moment, they were standing and waiting outside of the Nine Tail Fox Clan's city gates dumbly.

“We’ll get it soon. Don’t worry,” Ye Zichen had sent Su Yan a message when they had arrived, and Su Yan had told him that she would come out to get them shortly.

“I really didn’t expect you to have relationships with the Nine-Tail Foxes. Ye Zichen, are you really from the Immortal Region?”

Zuo Mo couldn’t help but raise her eyebrows. It was one thing that Ye Zichen had contacts within the Tiangou Clan, since she did suspect Ye Zichen of being from one of the sacred lands, so it was understandable for someone like that to have contacts in the Beast Region.

But Tiangou, Nine-Tail Fox, and Phoenix...

These are all peak powers.

He actually knows all of them!

“Oh wow, the world really is a tiny place. We actually bumped into you here!” A mocking voice sounded out. Everybody turned their heads back, and saw Zhen Yingjun walk towards them with a sneer.

He had already completely recovered from his injuries, since the Black Fox Clan was still one of the fox yaos.

“Look at how you look like you want a beating. Do you seek to get slapped?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

Zhen Yingjun subconsciously took a step back, but he very quickly snorted coldly, “You still want to scare me in the lands of our fox yaos!?”

“Lil’ Bro, you met an acquaintance of yours?” Just as Zhen Yingjun was mocking Ye Zichen and co., a man with a shoe horn-shaped face appeared behind him.

The man wore a long black robe, and had a very hairy chest...

When coupled with his shoe horn-shaped face!

Ugh!

“Acquaintance? Big Bor, don’t mess with me. My arms ended up like that because of these grandsons,” Zhen Yingjun immediately complained as if he was a beaten up kid complaining to his parents.

“Retract your words, or else... die!” Jail King took a step forward, and his shocking aura caused both Zhen Yingjun and the man beside him to raise their eyebrows.

Then, the man smiled, and walked in front of Ye Zichen, before reaching out his hand. “Hey, I’m Zhen Niubi!”

# Chapter 502 – Honor Cannot be Violated

---

Ahem.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but blink when he heard the other person's self-introduction, while Lil' White laughed loudly.

Zhen Niubi.

[This name is seriously awesome!](#)

“Big Bro, what's there to know about them?” Zhen Yingjun's expression turned for the worse when he saw that his older brother actually went to introduce himself to the others instead of getting revenge for him.

“Yingjun!” Zhen Niubi squinted his eyes. These are clearly not people to easily offend.

The ability to take human form symbolized both status and identity. From what he recalled about his little brother, his little brother was not such a brainless person.

“Big bro, don't you understand yet? These people are actually human merchants. Why else would they be standing here? It is clear that they want to get into contact with us, the fox yaos, but they aren't able to enter without an invitation,” Zhen Yingjun snorted. The yaos from powerful races such as theirs really did not care about human merchants at all.

That feeling that felt was exactly the same as how locals would look towards foreigners who had settled down. No matter how strong they are, they are still foreigners.

“Humans?” Zhen Niubi was momentarily stunned when he heard that, before the disdain became clear on his face.

Humans.

Then why am I bullshitting with them!?

“So you're actually human merchants. I thought you were from

some large family. Since you're humans, then we have to have a nice long chat," Zhen Niubi cracked his neck, then raised his eyebrows. "What are you going to do about hitting my little brother?"

The sudden change in attitude made Ye Zichen and co. completely speechless.

Ye Zichen merely shrugged, "I hit him, so what? What do you want to do to me?"

"What? I, Zhen Niubi am rather awesome in the Central Continent. The honor of the Black Fox Yaos cannot be violated. I heard that you human merchants are rather rich. Compensate my brother fifty million spirits marks, then kneel down and apologize to him."

"Mwahahahahaha..." Ye Zichen couldn't help but laugh out loud.

Zhen Yingjun raised his eyebrows, "Big bro, why is he laughing?"

"They're definitely shocked by my kingly aura," Zhen Niubi chuckled proudly. "There isn't anyone on the Central Continent that dares to act cocky with me, Zhen Niubi. Big bro will help you take revenge later. Not only will I make him compensate you with money, I'll make him lose face as well!"

Then, he walked forward with his hands on his hips, then snorted cockily with his chin raised, "Brat, don't think that I'll let you off just because you put on a pitiful look."

"Ai, you came to crack jokes, didn't you?" Ye Zichen raised his hand and cracked his neck, then looked towards Zhen Niubi and co. "Laozi haven't been able to loosen up too well over since I arrived in the Three Realms. Since you guys are so shamelessly asking for a beating, then I'll satisfy you!"

Ye Zichen hooked his fingers towards them.

Zhen Yingjun immediately walked over to his older brother...

“Big bro!”

“Heh, getting pretentious with me!? Get him, you guys must beat this brat to submission, and make him understand that the honor of the Black Fox Clan cannot be violated!” Zhen Niubi and Zhen Yingjun immediately rushed over.

Ye Zichen merely stood on the spot with a smile.

Bang. Bang. Bang.

Zhen Yingjun and Zhen Niubi ended up on the floor with swollen faces alongside their clansmen in mere moments.

“Was that fun?” Ye Zichen put his hands in his pocket, then squatted in front of the two brothers. He slapped Zhen Niubi. “You still awesome or not?”

“Brat, you tricked us!” Zhen Niubi cursed angrily on the floor. They had thought that the one who would fight the was Ye Zichen, but the one who truly attacked was Jail King and the guest chamberlains who came with Lil’ White.

Every single one of them were experts of the complete stage Human Immortal level, or the Sky Immortal level.

No matter how awesome Zhen Niubi was, he would be beaten up until he wasn’t awesome at all!

“I never said that I would fight you guys by myself, right?” Ye Zichen smiled, then patted Zhen Niubi’s face. “Don’t be called Zhen Niubi from now on, and call yourself [Bu Niubi](#), get it?”

“This is the land of the fox yaos, you dare...”

Bang.

Ye Zichen kicked Zhen Niubi in his stomach, then squinted his eyes and placed his hands by his ear, “What did you say? My hearing isn’t that good, so I couldn’t hear you that clearly.”

“I said this is the fox yaos’ ...”

Bang.

“What did you say?”

“The fox yaos...”

Bang.

“What did you say?”

That was something which repeated for six or seven times, and only when Zhen Niubi finally shut up about them being in the land of the fox yaos did Ye Zichen stop bullying him.

Instead, Ye Zichen merely chuckled, “You still awesome?”

“No, not anymore!” Zhen Niubi repeatedly shook his head.

Ye Zichen then squinted his eyes and chuckled, “Can the Black Fox Clan’s honor be violated?”

“Any time!” Zhen Niubi replied with a coy smile.

Ye Zichen nodded in satisfaction, then lifted his foot off Zhen Niubi’s back, and slowly walked in front of Zhen Yingjun.

“Big bro, I’m not [Bu Yingjun](#)! Not handsome at all. Just look at my face, it’s already like this...” Zhen Yingjun did not want to get beaten once again, and when he saw his older brother get beaten up so harshly, he instantly gave in.

Bang.

The only thing which answered him was a merciless kick.

“Did I ask you anything? You immediately speaking is you trying to show off how smart you are, right? You learned to answer quickly now, haven’t you?”

“No, no,” Zhen Yingjun shook his head repeatedly with a forced smile.

Bang.

Ye Zichen kicked him again.

Zhen Yingjun muttered in a troubled manner, “I didn’t say anything special. Why did you kick me again?”

“I just want to kick you because of your damn looks. You got a problem with that?” Ye Zichen put his hands in his pocket and asked with a smile.

Zhen Yingjun quickly shook his head with a tearful look, “None at all.”

Despite saying that, he still silently waited for the people from the Nine Tail Fox Clan to come.

The Black Fox Yaos were a vassal clan of the Nine Tail Foxes. Although they didn’t have a particularly high status, they were still fox yaos, so it was impossible for the Nine Tail Foxes to just ignore them.

Plenty of people from other clans who have come to the birthday party also noticed the situation over there. When they saw that it was actually the Black Fox Yaos getting bullied, they all became rather surprised.

Beating up the subordinate in the territory of the boss was definitely face smacking!

But the Nine Tail Foxes haven’t arrived. I wonder how the situation is going to change.

“That’s right,” Ye Zichen smiled, then reached his hand towards Zhen Yingjun...

Zhen Yingjun thought that Ye Zichen was going to hit him once again, so he quickly covered his face with his hands, then hid it.

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but chuckle when he saw how funny Zhen Yingjun looked, then kicked him a little.

“Don’t cover your face. Laozi doesn’t want to hit you right now. C’mon, give me your invitation.”

“You won’t be able to enter even if I gave it to you,” Zhen

Yingjun complained.

Ye Zichen frowned when he heard those words, “Why do you have so much bullshit? Do you want to get beaten up?”

“Don’t, don’t, don’t. Here...”

With that, Zhen Yingjun handed the invitation over.

Just as Ye Zichen reached his hand over to grab the invitation, it directly flew up. Then, when everybody looked up, they saw a foxy lady in a blue dress smile as she walked towards them.

Zhen Niubi (甄牛敝) is homophonic with the slang “seriously awesome”(真牛逼)

Bu Niubi (布牛敝) is homophonic with “not awesome”(不牛逼)

Bu Yingjun (布英俊) is homophonic with “not handsome” (不英俊)

## Chapter 503 – I'm Your Third Sis

---

The moment the Zhen brothers saw her, they immediately revealed looks of joy on their face. During the entire time they laid on the floor, they were merely waiting for the woman's arrival.

“Clan Head Su, you finally came!” Zhen Niubi sobbed. The brat was damn dirty when he hit me, it truly made me want to die.

However, since Ye Zichen's side had tough people as well, he didn't dare to say anything else at the time. Now that he also got a tough person on his side, he definitely had to get even.

“It was this guy, he didn't take us, the fox yaos seriously at all. I already said that I'm a fox yao, but look at how he hit me.”

The two brothers immediately started complaining like tell-tale children who were complaining to their parents.

Then, many of the other clansmen looked over when they saw that the foxy woman began to descend.

The lord of the land was here, it was time for the show!

“You said they hit you?” the woman squinted her eyes. Even though her actions radiated endless coldness, she was still extremely alluring.

“Yes!” The Zhen brothers lowered their hands. They did not dare to meet her gaze at all in fear of having other thoughts when they saw her face.

“Heh,” the woman snorted softly, then threw the invitation back in front of Zhen Niubi. “Take the invitation and hurry up in. Stop losing face for us fox yaos.”

Nobody else expected the lady in the blue dress to do that. Thus, the Zhen brothers were also momentarily stunned. However, when they returned to their senses, they did not dare to argue, and merely picked up the invitation, and hurried into the Nine Tail

Fox's city.

"You're Ye Zichen?"

The lady in the blue dress walked over, while her eyes were filled with a sharp cold look.

"Yes," Ye Zichen answered seriously.

The woman merely glanced at him and laughed.

"If it wasn't for lil' sis, then you would have already died. Since it's your first time in the Central Continent, I'll let you off once. If you repeat this offense, then I will definitely punish you severely," with that, she turned around and snorted. "Come on in!"

Then, she began to walk back into the city without turning around once again. However, when he took a few steps forward and noticed that no one else was with him, he could only look back, and saw that the people behind him were all mesmerized.

"Pretty Sister," Lil' White repeatedly muttered.

"That woman is truly so beautiful," Zuo Mo couldn't help but say as well, while enthrallment filled her eyes.

"That is the Nine Tail Fox's Clan Head, Su Liu'er. They say that the Endless Beast Region's Nine Tail Fox Clan is filled with beauties, and the two Clan Heads are beautiful beyond comparison. After seeing her just now, I truly think that she is one of a kind, it really is understandable why one of the Four Spiritual Monkeys actually caused such a commotion for her," the Jail King couldn't help but shake his head and praise her. Every single one of Su Liu'er's actions radiated allure. That was the mesmerization technique that fox yaos were born with. However, since the fatty was pretty strong, and Su Liu'er did not focus on that art, he naturally did not fall for it.

However, from the looks of both Lil' White and Zuo Mo, they were most likely affected by it. The same could also be said for the guest chamberlains who accompanied them.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen found it rather interesting. Why was I not affected?

“Hurry up, I don’t have too much time to waste on you guys,” Su Liu’er frowned.

However, when she saw that Ye Zichen was completely unaffected at all, she was rather confused as well.

Hearing her words, ye Zichen hurriedly patted Lil’ White and Zuo Mo on their backs in order to return them to their senses before following Su Liu’er.

When Su Liu’er saw Zuo Mo, who walked beside Ye Zichen, she snorted softly, “This is the man lil’ sis fell for. Hmmph...”

When Ye Zichen and co. entered the Nine Tail Fox Clan’s city, they found it to be just like any other ones. Rows of shops filled the streets in the outer area, while a huge ancient tree towered over everything else at the utmost center of the city, which represented the place that the Nine Tail Fox Clan lived around.

Su Liu’er had already disappeared after guiding them into the city, and just as Ye Zichen was going to go over with the people from the other clans, someone suddenly covered his eyes.

“Guess who!” Due to the intentional changing of the voice, it appeared rather coarse. Yet, despite that, the coarseness was still unable to hide how cute the voice was.

“Keke, stop messing around,” Ye Zichen pulled the pair of hands away from his eyes, and looked back, only to see Xia Keke pout unhappily.

“How did you guess it right away?”

“Do you think that I’m retarded?” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes.

At that very moment, Zuo Mo squinted her eyes and walked near them with a hostile gaze, “Who is she!?”

“Who is she!?” Xia Keke also asked at the same time.

“I’m asking you, who are you? What right do you have to cover his eyes!?”

Zuo Mo continued to act as strong as she always had, and Ye Zichen could only sigh and think to himself that it was just like Zuo Mo to act that way.

“Oh, I get it. You’re the new concubine that Ye Zichen got, right? Heh, you’re still so cocky even though you got with him later? I’m telling you, if we’re going in sequential order, then I’m your third sis. C’mon, smile for third sis,” at the same time, Xia Keke’s answer was just like her as well.

The atmosphere instantly became extremely tense the moment they two women met. Ye Zichen could only sigh and scratch his head. He had expected such a situation already, but he still patted Xia Keke’s shoulder, “Don’t just say stuff. She’s different from you guys. She’s a rather good partner for cooperation that I found after coming to the Three Realms.”

“Oh,” Xia Keke pouted, then shrugged. “So she isn’t even a concubine. Then why is she still so cocky?”

Then she turned towards Zuo Mo and snorted. “Be more obedient from now on, especially since you haven’t even married over. Even after you do, Susu and I are still your seniors, so if you don’t act obediently, then I’ll get Zichen-ge to divorce you!”

Xia Keke raised her head in a tsundere manner, then wrapped her arms around Ye Zichen’s with a giggle, “Zichen-gege, let’s go and see Susu.”

Thus, she begun to drag Ye Zichen away.

All of the dragon attendants following Xia Keke were shocked. They never knew that their Young Lady was actually the mistress of someone else.

What’s more, from the sound of it, it seemed like the third young lady of the Nine Tail Fox Clan had an ambiguous relationship with

the man as well.

However, they quickly shook their heads to forget about the conversation. They did not dare to know too much gossip as attendants.

At the same time, Zuo Mo also clenched her teeth in anger due to Xia Keke's words.

She walked over to Lil' White with clenched fists.

Lil' White immediately knew that something was wrong, so he quickly looked up towards the sky, "Oh wow, the sky here at the Nine Tail Fox's place is truly blue!"

"Little fellow, stop pretending. Tell me the truth, just how many women does Ye Zichen have?" Zuo Mo squinted her eyes with a frown.

Lil' White immediately raised his hand when he saw her expression...

"Five?" Zuo Mo glared.

"Ahem, that's a safe bet!" Lil' White replied carefully. However, when he noticed Zuo Mo's expression, which made her seem like she was about to explode, he quickly chuckled. "I didn't say anything. Jail King, let's go..."

# Chapter 504 – True Purpose of the Birthday Party

---

“Second sis, isn’t this just a normal birthday party? Why are you guys spending so long to dress me up?” Su Yan couldn’t help but frown as she looked at the woman in the dressing-table mirror. At that moment, she anxiously wanted to go out, because she knew that Ye Zichen had already arrived.

“Don’t be in such a hurry. I already got Su Liu’er to go and receive the person you want to see,” the woman behind her smiled as she combed Su Yan’s long hair. She was no other than the second clan head of the Nine Tail Fox Clan – Su Zhu.

Su Yan suddenly jumped up from the chair, then turned around and looked at Su Zhu in shock. “Big sis went!?”

“Why are you so surprised?” Su Zhu pressed Su Yan back down onto the chair in front of the dressing table and smiled. “That boy should be the one in your heart, right?”

“Second sis!” Su Yan suddenly blushed, then fidgeted silently.

However, at that very moment, another person entered Su Yan’s bedroom.

What was surprising was that the person who entered looked identical to Su Zhu, and even wore the exact same clothes.

“Lil’ Yan, why didn’t you... Who are you!?”

“Second sis!” Su Yan also turned around. However, when she saw the woman who had appeared in the room, she was completely shocked as well. She subconsciously glanced at the woman behind her, then at the woman at the entrance...

Two second sis’!

“Lil’ Yan, come over to older sister,” the Su Zhu at the entrance of the door frowned. “Who are you? You actually dare to

transform into how I look. Just what intentions do you have!? Hurry up and reveal your true form right now. We, the Nine Tail Foxes, are not to be trifled with!”

“Lil’ Zhu-meimei, your words are rather humorous. Aside from us, who else can take somebody else’s appearance in the Endless Beast Region, and cause you Nine Tail Foxes to be unable to tell?” With that, the woman behind Su Yan transformed into a monkey in golden armor, who held a peach in his hands.

“So it’s actually you. Why did you come here?” Su Zhu’s tense expression relaxed. The monkey in front of her was in some ways one of their own.

“I naturally came here for my Third Bro. About this... Lil’ Zhu, you should understand, right?” the monkey smiled.

For some reason, a smile also surfaced on Lil’ Zhu’s face. Then, she walked in front of Su Yan, “Lil’ Yan, go out and chat with Liu’er-jie, and leave this place to me. Remember, don’t tell her anything. This is our secret.”

“Okay,” Su Yan could only nod in confusion, then left.

At that moment, Su Zhu also rubbed her hands in excitement, “That monkey contacted me half a month ago, but he merely said a bunch of random stuff. Since you came this time, then tell me, just what sort of huge commotion does he want to cause?”

The first thing Su Yan did after getting out of the room was send Ye Zichen a message on WeChat.

When Ye Zichen, who was wandering around with Xia Keke felt his phone vibrate, he immediately took his phone out...

“It’s from Su Yan!” Ye Zichen said to Xia Keke, then opened up WeChat to look at Su Yan’s message, before sending Su Yan their location.

“Is Susu coming over?”

“Mhmm,” Ye Zichen nodded. Then he looked towards the surrounding guests with a frown. “Don’t you feel like the atmosphere is very strange?”

“How so?” Xia Keke raised her eyebrows in confusion.

“Look at all these clans and families that came. The ones who have come are all men of a similar age to Su Yan.”

“Isn’t that normal? Their families are telling the younger generation to come over and show themselves,” Xia Keke raised her eyebrows.

However, Ye Zichen shook his head with a frown, “That’s not right. If that really is the case, then why are there so few women... Look, you can’t even see any younger girls, all of them are men. What’s more, these men are actually displaying hints of hostility towards each other.”

“Oh, that’s true,” Xia Keke glanced around and couldn’t help but nod.

“Now, now, there’s something you didn’t get. All of them came to fight for the right of marriage,” a man with a peach in his hand suddenly appeared beside them.

“Marriage?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. “Isn’t this a birthday party? What does that have to do with the right for marriage?”

“This birthday party is actually just an excuse. The true purpose of this gathering is to help the Nine Tail Fox’s third young miss find a husband. Why else would so many talented young men come. Plenty of them actually hurried over from the other continents...” The man finished his peach as he spoke, then took out another one seemingly out of thin air.

“Susu actually didn’t tell me!” Xia Keke opened her eyes wide in shock.

Ye Zichen shook his head, “It might be that she doesn’t even know that it is going on. But now, where did you get this

information?”

“What’s so hard about that?” the man replied, speechless. “From the looks of it, you guys didn’t know? Then why did you come...”

“To fight for the right of marriage!” Ye Zichen smiled.

Seeing this smile, the man also smiled. However, that’s when he noticed Ye Zichen swinging his fist towards him.

He quickly blocked Ye Zichen’s punch, then frowned as he said, “Bro, what are you doing!?”

“You should be an opponent for me since you came here, right? One less opponent means that I would have a greater chance of victory,” Ye Zichen smiled meaningfully.

However, the man’s eyes lit up when he heard that, “Hey, heroes really do think alike. How about we work together?”

“Work together?”

“I didn’t come for the Su family’s third young lady. I feel like we can cooperate.”

“Explain?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

The man immediately whispered something into his ear.

“You fell for her?”

“Shh,” the man quickly covered Ye Zichen’s mouth, then frowned. “What are you shouting for? Something bad’s going to happen if someone else hears about this!”

“I’m just surprised!” Ye Zichen smiled coyly. It’s all because what he said was too shocking!

“So, what do you want to do?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“My side will be fine, but it’s mostly on you,” the man hooked his arm around Ye Zichen’s shoulder, then whispered something into his ear.

Soon, the two of them looked at each other, and smiled evilly.

“Ai... Hehehe, let’s do as you said.”

With that, Ye Zichen took out his phone and handed it over to Xia Keke, who didn’t really understand what was going on.

“I’ll leave my phone with you. I’ll be back very soon.”

Then, Ye Zichen turned towards the man, “We doing it right now?”

“We have to. Otherwise, it’ll be too late,” the man chuckled.

Ye Zichen immediately nodded, “Then... let’s go!”

# Chapter 505 – Mount Huaguo and the Water Curtain Cave

---

Dong, dong.

All of the people in the Nine Tail Fox Clan's kitchen randomly fell down, and two people with their faces covered in red veils climbed in through the window.

“What do we do now that you took them all down? The two of us aren't going to be enough!”

“What are you getting worked up for? I naturally have my plans.”

“Then hurry up and give me the drugs!”

The two of them carefully ran over in front of the stoves, which were cooking food for the people the Nine Tail Fox clan had invited for the birthday party.

“Be swift, and hurry up. Pour twenty bags in each.”

“This isn't poison, right?”

“What poison? This is just laxative. Hurry up and pour it all in.”

“Where did this villain come from? You actually dared to poison the food within the Nine Tail Fox clan,” a playful chuckle suddenly sounded out in the kitchen.

The two people pouring laxatives into the food stiffened...

They turned around slowly, then, when they saw the person who had appeared, one of the two people let out a long sigh before yanking his mask off.

“Lil' Zhu, you scared me to death.”

The person who spoke up was the man who had suggested to cooperate with Ye Zichen. Their plan was also very simple, it was merely to “poison” the food.

When all their competitors end up with diarrhea, then both he and Ye Zichen would achieve victory without any combat!

More importantly, Ye Zichen was also very willing to witness his competitors suddenly rush over to the bathroom just as they are showing off.

“You’re just acting guilty,” Su Zhu twitched her mouth, then raised his eyebrows towards Ye Zichen. “Who is this person beside you? You actually found yourself an ally?”

“Uhm, this little brother is someone with the same interests as me.”

“It really is rare to find someone who share your unique interests,” Su Zhu twitched her mouth in a mocking manner, then raised her eyebrows. “Then, please, do continue. I’m looking forward to your show.”

“Watch us carefully!” the man chuckled, then waved towards him. Just as Ye Zichen and him were going to continue the “poisoning”...

“Liu’er-jie, why did you come over?”

The two people who were doing the “poisoning” froze once more. Meanwhile, Ye Zichen also looked towards his partner in confusion.

What to do!?

Now we’re caught!

At the same time, outside the kitchen...

“Why are they so slow? It’s nearly time...” Su Liu’er frowned slightly.

“I took a look just now, it’s more or less done,” Su Zhu smiled nervously. Just as she started to reach out to yank Su Liu’er away...

Or even if she couldn’t, she at least had to buy time for the people

inside!

“No, I still have to remind them,” Su Liu’er ignored Su Zhu’s words and forced her way into the kitchen.

Su Zhu was extremely nervous. However, when they arrived at the kitchen...

The staff in the kitchen rapidly worked as normal. From the looks of things, it was as if they had no idea about what just happened.

Only then did Su Zhu let out a long sigh.

As I thought, nothing would go wrong when it comes to that monkey. Su Zhu raised her eyebrows, then left the kitchen.

Su Liu’er also frowned, “Hurry up. It’ll be bad if we miss the auspicious hour.”

After repeatedly hurrying the staff, she turned around, only to find that Su Zhu had already departed, causing her to mutter, “When did Lil’ Zhu leave...”

...

“Keke, why isn’t Ye Zichen over here?”

Su Yan, who went over anticipating to meet up with him, immediately looked a little depressed when she saw that Ye Zichen wasn’t there.

Xia Keke also frowned, then shrugged, “I don’t know either. He left with a very strange uncle. The two of them were acting very mysterious. I have no idea what they went off to do.”

“Uncle?” Su Yan frowned. “Also, I had snuck away to come visit. Since Zichen isn’t here, then I’ll go back first, then come and find you again after the birthday party ends.”

...

Achoo.

The man who had grabbed Ye Zichen by the shoulder suddenly sneezed. He rubbed his nose, then let Ye Zichen go, spoke while shaking off the last remnant of his fear. “Thank god laozi left a spatial drop-off point. Otherwise, we definitely would have been caught by that woman.”

At the same moment, Ye Zichen also looked up and around in confusion.

If there was no surprise, then they aren't in the Nine Tail Fox's city anymore.

Suddenly, he saw that in front of him...

A group of monkeys were messing around and playing with each other. All sorts of fruit trees could be seen all around them. What was even more eye-catching was that there was also several bags of... spicy gluten near a fruit plate!

Then, Ye Zichen looked around in confusion a few more times.

Water Curtain Cave.

Oh my god, is this Mount Huaguo!?

“Hey, is this Mount Huaguo?” Ye Zichen blinked in shock.

The man paused for a moment, then nodded, “Yes. I'm telling you, thank god laozi was intelligent, otherwise, both of us would have been caught by Su Liu'er.”

That isn't the point, alright?

The main point is just how did you bring me to Mount Huaguo? Isn't this the Great Sage's place?

To Ye Zichen's surprise, just as he was thinking about the Great Sage, an armor wearing monkey with a cup of cup noodles in his hands walked over to greet them.

It was the Great Sage himself!

“Ol' Three, didn't you take your son to go for a marriage

interview alongside Ol' Four? You're already back?"

"There's no way that was over so quick. I haven't even made my move yet," the man rolled his eyes showing his annoyance. "I nearly got caught by her just now when we were drugging the good. I just came back to take a breather before going back."

"Oh, I see. Here, noodles that big bro just heated up. Want a taste?" With that, the Great Sage handed the cup of cup noodles over. At the same time, he also noticed Ye Zichen, who stood at a distance not far away. "And who is this?"

The man gulped down the entire cup of cup noodles, then smacked his lips and placed the cup off to the side.

"A small ally I met when I was going over there. We're going to snatch two of the sisters of the Su family. I'm going for the big sis, and he's going for the third sis."

"Interesting. I, Old Sun, have heard that they have a second sis as well. How about I, Old Sun, come and join in the fun as well?" the Great Sage immediately got interested when he heard that.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen was already shocked completely speechless...

Mount Huaguo and the Water Curtain Cave.

What's more, this man is actually the Great Sage's third lil' brother.

Then, doesn't that mean that, according to the [Baidu baike](#) pages I've read in the Modern Realm, this slightly evil monkey in front of me is actually Yuan Hong, the Long Armed Ape!?

What made Ye Zichen even more speechless was that the Great Sage actually wanted to join in on the fun as well.

"You're better off not going. You're already a Buddhist, and you're still thinking of snatching women..." Ye Zichen couldn't help but retort.

The Great Sage was stunned, “Who are you? You actually dare to tell me, Old Sun, off? But this is very strange, why does your voice sound a bit familiar?”

Yuan Hong, who was currently allied with Ye Zichen, couldn't help but frown. He knew his big brother's personality very well.

He has a shitty temper.

“Little brother, don't just randomly say things. I can't help you if my big bro wants to bully you,” Yuan Hong couldn't help but raise his eyebrows.

To his surprise, Ye Zichen merely chuckled, “How could I not sound familiar to you. Look at who I am!”

Ye Zichen raised his hand and yanked the veil away from his face.

When the Great Sage saw Ye Zichen...

“Bro, how did you get here!?”

Chinese equivalent of Wikipedia.

## Chapter 506 – Seeking a Husband

---

The Great Sage walked over in shock. He could not understand how Ye Zichen actually appeared on Mount Huaguo.

“Didn’t your third little bro already explain it once? He brought me over?”

“You two already know each other?” Yuan Hong was completely confused when he heard what was going on. The random ally I found at the Nine Tail Fox’s place is actually bro with my big bro.

“He’s the same Sky Sovereign Nameless I told you about,” the Great Sage pointed over at Ye Zichen.

Yuan Hong was stunned.

Yuan Hong had held a good impression of the Sky Sovereign ever since Ye Zichen had just entered the Heavenly Court’s chat group and got to know the Great Sage.

That was all because... He was a Wahaha fanatic as well.

He had always wanted to see Sky Sovereign, and he had hoped to get on good terms with the latter so that... he could be given the discount the next time he buys Wahaha.

“Sky Sovereign, so it’s actually you,” Yuan Hong’s face was covered in smiles. He then rubbed his hands with a chuckle. “It really is fate for us to meet at Su Liu’er’s. What’s more, your relationship with big bro is also beyond great... So, I wonder if I can make an unreasonable request?”

“Please ask away.”

“Can you give me a discount on Wahaha? Yue Lao’s pricing is truly too expensive!”

...

Ye Zichen’s expression instantly became strange. He scratched his nose, then thought about it after taking a glance at Yuan

Hong's anticipatory gaze, then couldn't help but chuckle, "Alright, then I'll tell Yue Lao the next time you go and buy stuff from him."

"Then add me on WeChat?"

After adding Yuan Hong on WeChat, Ye Zichen stared at the surrounding fruit trees with great interest. Mount Huaguo's fruits are all spiritual fruits. Although they were not as amazing as the Peaches of Immortality, it was still able to strengthen people's bodies and lengthen their lifespans.

If I steal a bit back...

But it definitely is going to be hard with the Great Sage here.

I had to send so many bottles of Wahaha to him just for a single peach. If I want to pick a few fruits, I definitely have to avoid him.

Just as Ye Zichen thought about that, the Great Sage left as if he had just thought of something...

"Yuan Hong," Ye Zichen shouted towards Yuan Hong.

He immediately ran over, "Sky Sovereign, what is it?"

"Your fruits here are quite nice..." Ye Zichen's meaning was already very clear, and since Yuan Hong was a smart person, he nodded with a smile, and hooked his finger at a nearby fruit tree...

All of the fruits on the fruit trees immediately flew over, and not long later, they had already piled up into a huge pile.

"Sky Sovereign, put them away quickly. We're screwed if my big bro comes back and discovers this."

"Understand," Ye Zichen took out his phone to scan all the fruits, and stored them into his phone's Treasure Chest in mere moments.

He couldn't help but smirk when he stared at the spiritual fruits sitting in the Treasure Chest.

I truly didn't come over to Mount Huaguo for nothing!

At the same time, the Great Sage also hurried over. However, he did not notice that the fruit trees themselves were already bare.

Instead, he merely asked, “Aren’t you guys going to steal the girls’ hand in marriage. Are you going to be in time if you just stay here?”

His sudden appearance caused Ye Zichen to jump, thus causing him to put on a strange expression.

Meanwhile, Yuan Hong continued to mutter silently. “It’s getting late. Big bro, then Sky Sovereign and I are going to return!”

“Go on, go on. I’ll be waiting for your good news at home,” the Great Sage smiled and waved towards them. After watching them leave, he walked over to a nearby stone chair and hooked his finger at the fruit trees...

No response.

“Hmm? That is strange.”

He leaped over to the fruit trees.

The Great Sage immediately cursed when he saw the bare fruit trees, “You really are my good bro. You didn’t even leave a single one for me, Old Sun! Never mind, since there isn’t any here, then I, Old Sun, will just steal it from the Heavenly Court.

Zoom.

Yuan Hong and Ye Zichen suddenly appeared in the Nine Tail Fox’s kitchen once again, completely shocking every single one of them.

“Huuuu,” Yuan Hong was not worried at all. He merely raised his palm and blew towards it.

Bang, bang, bang.

The Nine Tail Foxes all fell down onto the floor once again like the first time they had arrived in the kitchen.

“It seems like it has already begun. We have to hurry.”

...

“Everyone, thank you for coming to my little sister’s birthday, regardless of the length of the journey,” Su Zhu wore a long purple dress and smiled towards the masses.

The splitting of tasks for the Nine Tail Fox Clan was very clear between Su Liu’er and Su Zhu.

Su Liu’er was in charge of battles. She would dominate anyone who dared to challenge the position of the Nine Tail Fox Clan with violence, personally.

Meanwhile, Su Zhu was in charge of external relationships, including and not limited to things such as their alliance with other clans.

One example of such was Su Yan’s birthday party.

“Lil’ sis,” Su Zhu waved towards Su Yan.

The figure, who sat on the chair and looked around for Ye Zichen, walked over. However, she continued to search for Ye Zichen’s position amongst the crowds.

“I believe that this is the first time a lot of you have seen the Third Young Lady of the Nine Tail Fox Clan. Allow me to introduce her to you all. She is Su Yan!”

Many of the young men gulped. As expected of someone from the Nine Tail Fox Clan, her beauty...

“I believe that all of you have already gotten some news about it. It is as you all have heard. Lil’ Sis will be twenty-one with this birthday, so as the older sisters, we wish so help her seek a good partner. The method of competition is very simple, all it requires is for lil’ sis to like you. Of course, you will get extra points if you can move Liu’er-jie and I,” Su Zhu smiled towards the audience.

However, Su Yan was completely shocked, “Sis!”

“Shhh,” Su Zhu put her finger on her lips, then rubbed Su Yan’s head, before turning back to the audience. “Of course, we’re not only just marrying our little sister off this time... Su Liu’er is also part of the prize.”

Wow.

The entire audience was dumbfounded, then a round of commotion broke the silence.

Both Su Liu’er’s strength and beauty were amongst the best. Anyone who can get her to marry them would cause the entire Three Realms to feel envious of them.

However, there was a single question that required answering first – Who dares to marry her!

Yuan Hong had caused a huge commotion while pursuing Su Liu’er. Since he was one of the top existences of the Endless Beast Region, no one would even dare to fight over a woman with him.

“Lil’ Sis!” Su Liu’er couldn’t stand it anymore. She instantly stood up in surprise.

“Big sis, don’t be like this. I’m just saying. Who would dare to pursue you outside of Yuan Hong? I merely said that to...”

“Hehe...” Su Liu’er smiled, then nodded. “I understand. I’m actually just a sideshow, right?”

With that, her body released a shockingly freezing air.

This cold air not only chilled the audience’s bodies, but also any interest they had in Su Liu’er.

“Men, who wants to come and try?”

# Chapter 507 – You're all trash

---

Gulp.

All of the young men present didn't even dare to raise their heads when the chill radiated out. All of them lowered their heads while trembling.

This is Su Liu'er, a peak existence in the Endless Beast Region.

Although Su Zhu said Su Liu'er was looking for a partner as well, anyone without sufficient strength going up would merely be seeking death!

Su Yan was extremely frantic as well. She stared at Su Zhu with wide open eyes...

After all, this older sister of hers knew that she has someone she loves.

"Second sis," Su Yan silently pulled on the corner of Su Zhu's robes. At that moment, Su Zhu was merely waiting for Yuan Hong's grand entrance...

Why hasn't he come yet?

"Second sis!" Su Yan yanked with a bit more force once again when she saw that Su Zhu did not notice.

"Huh? Ah!" Su Zhu instantly understood what Su Yan wanted to say when she saw Su Yan's expression, so she merely raised her eyebrows. "Don't be nervous, this doesn't have much to do with you."

"But..."

"Do you not believe second sis's words?" Su Zhu smiled.

At the same time, Su Liu'er also looked down emotionlessly at the audience, who were already frozen in fear.

"Huh, people like you actually want to wed me?"

At that very moment, a young man stood up with a tremble. Su Liu'er frowned when she saw him, causing the young man to nearly fall back onto the floor in fear...

"Clan-Clan Head Su, I want to ask for Su Yan's hand in marriage."

"Heh, no," Su Liu'er snorted.

"Why not? I'm not asking for your hand in marriage, you should at least let me speak to Su Yan, right?" the young man replied with a frown.

His thoughts were very simple. Su Yan's beauty was also excellent, and if he were able to wed her, then he would still be able to become related to the Nine Tail Fox Clan.

"Are you questioning me?" Su Liu'er stared.

The young man immediately sat down once again with a tremble.

Su Liu'er couldn't help but snort when she saw that, "Heh, you actually want to marry someone of our Su family just like that. A bunch of wimps!"

"Aren't Clan Head Su's words a bit too much?" a young man suddenly stood up. "Yes, the Nine Tail Fox Clan is indeed the peak clan in the Central Continent, but isn't insulting us, the other clans and races, like that a bit too much?"

"Too much? I don't think so at all," at that very moment, a playful snort sounded out from the sky.

When everyone looked up to see the source of the laughter, they saw Ye Zichen slowly descend and land in an extremely handsome manner. Then, he stood up straight and pointed at the audience with a chuckle, "I'm not targeting anyone, but I merely want to say that, you're all trash!"

"Zichen-ge," Xia Keke, who sat among the audience, suddenly giggled.

Lil' White also couldn't help but speak up, "My Boss is truly dominating."

"Heh, merely a flamboyant show," Zuo Mo bit her lips tightly. If there is no surprise, then Su Yan is the Susu that Xia Keke mentioned earlier.

"So it's this kid..." Su Liu'er also couldn't help but knit her eyebrows. However, she didn't disagree with his words.

She felt the same thing as Ye Zichen from her perspective.

All of them here are trash!

"Ye Zichen," the eyes of Su Yan, who stood on the side, lit up. Meanwhile, Su Zhu also smiled meaningfully.

From the looks of this young man's clothes, he seems to be the one I saw in the kitchen. Since he has arrived, then Yuan Hong should be here soon, right?

Ye Zichen looked back and smiled towards Su Yan when he heard her voice, "I can't let anyone take my woman."

With that, he looked down at the enraged audience and snorted. "If you've got guts and don't agree, then come up. I'll show you whether you're trash or not."

"Heh, I do want to see whether your actual combat ability is as strong as you say," a young man in a blue robe suddenly stood up. However, before he even managed to walk towards the stage...

Pbbbbbbbtttttt.

A revolting stench diffused through the audience. The young man's expression also drastically changed, then he held his stomach and ran towards a solitary place...

"What? Why did you walk halfway, then run? As I thought, trash is trash!" Ye Zichen smiled playfully. However, he understood very well in his heart that, the laxative which he and Yuan Hong had poured into the food should have taken effect.

“Kid, don’t be too full of yourself,” another person stood up amongst the guests. However, he also ran away after taking a few steps towards the stage, just like the blue robed young man before him.

All of a sudden, all of the guests were stunned.

What kind of trick did this brat pull? Why did everyone who challenged him end up running to the toilet? Plenty of people were rather confused, but...

Pbbbbbbbtttttt.

Pbbbbbbbtttttt.

Pbbbbbbbtttttt.

As if the thought triggered a chain reaction, all of the guests began to run away while clutching their stomachs.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen stood on the stage and repeatedly shook his head and snickered, “Just what scared you guys so much? It’s so shameful! Never mind, this little lord won’t bully you guys. If you’re so scared of me, then I’ll give you all one chance. I’ll challenge every single one of you!”

However, none of the guests could even pay attention to what he said. They all hurried towards the Nine Tail Fox Clan’s toilets...

“What happened to them?” Lil’ White couldn’t help but raise his eyebrows.

Yet, at that very moment, Jail King also opened his eyes wide, “F\*ck, someone drugged the food!”

With that, he also held his pants and followed the diarrhea army in search for toilets.

When Ye Zichen saw that most of the audience seats instantly became empty, he shrugged and let out a sigh, then twitched his mouth, “Experts are truly lonely.”

Then, he walked in front of Su Yan and held her hand with a

smile, “I want to ask for your hand in marriage. What do you think?”

“I accept,” Su yan smiled sweetly.

Meanwhile, Su Zhu tried extremely hard to stop herself from laughing, because the entire crowd all getting diarrhea was way too rare, and she was also easily humored.

However, Su Liu’er looked at the empty seats coldly, then squinted her eyes towards Ye Zichen. “Aren’t your actions a bit too despicable?”

“Sis, don’t make outrageous claims. Just how are my actions despicable?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows as if he didn’t know what she was talking about. “I challenged them all by myself, but they didn’t dare to answer to my challenge. What can I do about it? If anything’s to blame, then blame it on my domineering aura, which scared them to the point of them shitting their pants!”

“Ha...” Su Liu’er smiled indifferently, then hooked her fingers towards the guests’ food.

A delicious looking and smelling of perfection flew over. Su Liu’er held the plate in her hands and sniffed it, then allowed it to fly back to its original position.

“There’s no problem with it,” Su Liu’er muttered with a frown.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen was chuckling hard in his heart.

The laxative Yuan Hong gave me cannot be seen or tasted. People wouldn’t even notice after ingesting it, so she naturally can’t smell it.

However, at that moment, one of the few people remaining in the audience seats stood up. He had a single strand of hair standing up on top of his head, which protruded out of his hat. He repeatedly fanned away the stench he smelled, and retorted, “F\*ck, what sort of stench is this!?”

Just as he muttered, he suddenly noticed Su Yan, who stood upon the stage. He instantly reached into his pocket and took out a picture.

Tap, tap, tap.

He quickly ran onto the stage, then grabbed Su Yan's ankle.

“Mom!”

## Chapter 508 – I protect the Fox Yaos

---

Mom.

Mom!

Both Ye Zichen and Su Yan were completely shocked.

Ye Zichen immediately kicked the young man who was sobbing and calling Su Yan “Mom”. “Is there something wrong with you? I don’t have such an old son.”

Su Yan blushed profusely upon hearing that.

The young man also looked up after being kicked, and when he saw Ye Zichen... “Boss Ye.”

“Gou Yuzhan!” Ye Zichen was stunned, but he immediately smacked the back of Gou Yuzhan’s head without greeting him. “What’s wrong with you? Look at her carefully, this is your sis, not your mom!”

“Is she not?” Gou Yuzhan was shocked upon hearing that. Then he took out a portrait from his pocket. “See? Is the person in the portrait is her?”

Ye Zichen received the portrait then examined it carefully. The portrait in the woman indeed looked a bit similar to Su Yan, but she also looked a bit similar to Su Zhu and Su Liu’er...

“Let me take a look,” Su Zhu reached out her hand. Ye Zichen handed it over, then not long later, she called out. “Isn’t this Liu’er-jie?”

“Who is Liu’er-jie!” Gou Yuzhan’s ahoge wobbled as he shouted.

Su Zhu pointed at Su Liu’er, who was standing off to the side with a shocked expression.

“Mom!” Gou Yuzhan immediately leapt over to Su Liu’er’s side, and hugged her ankles in tears. “Mom, you can’t be so heartless as to toss dad and I away. My dad only loves you, how can you not

want us anymore!?”

As he wiped away his tears, he could occasionally open his palm, which was covered in dense text...

It's script notes!

“Mom, the life of my dad and I have been too hard these years. They saw that the Cowherd and the Weaver Girl can meet once a year, but my dad haven't seen you for some ten-odd years. Look, I've already grown up from a baby waiting for milk into an adult. Just think about how long we haven't met.”

“Let go of me,” Su Liu'er shook her leg.

However, Gou Yuzhan held on tightly as if he didn't feel anything, “I'm not letting go!”

“You letting go or not!?” Chilling air instantly radiated out from Su Liu'er's body. Then she laughed coldly. “Yuan Hong, this is your doing, right? If you don't want to stay a few years in a block of ice, then hurry up and take this kid away.”

Whoosh.

Yuan Hong instantly appeared awkwardly in front of everyone, while he held Gou Yuzhan in his hands.

Smack.

Yuan Hong smacked Gou Yuzhan's head, then couldn't help but curse, “Just what were you doing? It was such a great plan, but you ruined it by hugging the wrong person from the very beginning.”

“Why are you blaming me for this? It's not like you don't know I'm short-sighted,” Gou Yuzhan glared back. “Also, your drawing skills are too terrible, would I have hugged the wrong person if you drew the portrait better!?”

“You still dare to argue with laozi?” Yuan Hong raised his hand to slap Gou Yuzhan, but Su Liu'er stopped him.

“Yuan Hong, don't be in such a hurry to shift the blame.

Shouldn't you give me a good explanation for all this?"

As Su Liu'er spoke, Su Zhu also silently started to run away, only to be stopped by the sudden appearance of a wall of ice.

"Lil' Zhu, where do you think you are going?"

"Hehe, I feel a bit uncomfortable, so I want to go to the bathroom," Su Zhu chuckled like an idiot.

Su Liu'er merely nodded her head as she listened, "Oh, I see. But don't go. Even if you go, there probably wouldn't be any space for you to go, so..."

Boom.

An ice house suddenly shot up from the ground.

Su Zhu's face immediately turned stark white upon seeing it.

This was the little room which Su Liu'er had shut her in whenever she was disobedient when she was young.

"If you're feeling uncomfortable, then go in the bathroom in there. Nobody will see you."

"Big sis..." Su Zhu shook Su Liu'er's arm coquettishly and pouted. "I know my wrongs. I just felt like it would be fun, but I didn't expect the amazing scene Yuan Hong talked about to be so low level!"

"Fun. So you sold your older sister out for fun," Su Liu'er frowned, then knocked Su Zhu on the head. "It would've been much better if you told me beforehand. I occasionally felt a strange aura around our Nine Tail Fox Clan. I thought it was someone who held ill intentions towards us."

"Occasionally?" Yuan Hong frowned. "Su Liu'er, when did you notice that aura?"

"It wasn't you all?" Su Liu'er raised her eyebrows. "It's been here the entire time, I felt it starting from when the sun rose up to just now!"

Ye Zichen and Yuan Hong looked at each other in shock. We were at Mount Huaguo just now...

“Su Liu’er, that aura wasn’t mine,” Yuan Hong raised his eyebrows. “I was at Mount Huaguo with Brother Ye just now. We stayed there for at least an hour!”

“Then...” Su Liu’er was stunned as well. This isn’t right, I’ve been feeling that strange aura the entire time.

At that very moment, an explosion reverberated at the back of the Nine Tail Fox Clan’s city.

“Crap!” Yuan Hong was the first to rush out, followed by Ye Zichen, Su Liu’er and the rest.

Xia Keke, who was sitting amongst the audience, raised her eyebrows and turned to Lil’ White and co., “Let’s go and see what’s happened together.”

A huge spatial rift tore at the space surrounding it at the origin of the explosion. Countless slime monsters and huge abyssals crawled out from within the rift.

“All fox yaos with over five hundred years of cultivation, attack!” The head of the fox yao guards gave his orders, while the weaker women, youngsters and elders, all retreated under their protection.

“As expected of a Formation Grandmaster. You could actually open the door to the Three Realms,” a black-skinned man sat on top of the rift and smiled excitedly.

The white robed man merely smiled as he stood beside him, “I’m alright, but I’m not of at the Grandmaster level yet.”

“Yiyun, there is no need for you to be so humble. You are the true number one person in the Demon Realm when it comes to formations. The title of Grandmaster will be yours sooner or later,” the black-skinned man smiled, then pointed towards the abyssals with a shout. “Work harder! The more you guys eat, the

happier the higher ups will be.”

Splash.

At that very moment, all of the advancing abyssals were all frozen into ice sculptures. Then, countless stick images fell down from the sky and smashed them into smithereens.

“The Clan Head is here. Everybody, retreat!” the guard captain immediately gave the signal of retreat.

There was one such tradition in the Nine Tail Fox Clan.

Everybody retreats when Su Liu’er acts!

All of the fox yaos hurriedly left the battleground while covering each other.

Meanwhile, the person sitting on top of the spatial rift squinted his eyes, and wanted to suppress all of those fox yaos...

Yet...

“You still dare to act so outrageously with me here!?”

Su Liu’er frowned, then punched towards the man without any hesitation.

Dong.

The moment her fist connected with the man, he flew back several hundred meters and fell to the ground.

Su Liu’er glared at him, while her body radiated a chilling aura. “I protect the fox yaos, understand?”

# Chapter 509 – Come and Die!

---

All of the fox yaos smiled when they heard that huge sound. They truly believed from the depths of their hearts that their Clan Head could not be defeated by anyone.

Su Liu'er had never disappointed her clansmen either. She looked indifferently towards the man who fell to the ground, and caused dust to scatter through the air, while the cold air around her fingertips became even colder.

"I've met an expert," the man twisted his neck and stood up. It seemed like he didn't take any damage at all. He merely smiled, then walked back to the spatial rift and looked forward.

"Do not challenge my patience. The land of the fox yaos is not a place for you to come. Scram!" Su Liu'er continued to gaze forward indifferently, but the temperature of the surroundings dropped even further.

The black-skinned man smiled. He nodded towards the person standing beside him, then large amounts of purple mist began to flow out from the spatial rift.

The mist diffused outwards, and the moment any fox yaos came into contact with the mist, they immediately fell to the ground.

"Damn it!" Su Liu'er bit her lips and cursed softly. Then she raised her hand in order to freeze the air around her. However, the mist was diffusing too quickly that the space of her freezing was unable to keep up with the rate at which the mist spread.

Ye Zichen, who chased after her, also saw the swirling purple mist and the collapsing fox yaos.

Demons!

From the looks of it, the poisonous effect of the mist has become stronger than before, otherwise, there was no way the yaos would have collapsed in the mist, since they do have a bit of yao spiritual

energy as well.

“Engulf the World!”

At the same time, Gou Yuzhan squinted his eyes and roared, then begun to suck the purple mist into his mouth.

Bang.

The mist did eventually disperse, but Gou Yuzhan sat down heavily on the ground while wearing a terrible expression.

“Gou Yuzhan!” Ye Zichen cried out.

“Don’t mind me, my situation isn’t too bad,” Gou Yuzhan covered his mouth with his right hand, then raised his eyebrows. “They’re the people from back then, right? Boss, hurry over there.”

Ye Zichen nodded, then turned towards Su Zhu, “This purple mist is demonic energy from the Demon Realm. Weaker people would turn into abyssals if they inhale too much demonic energy. Hurry up and get the stronger people of your clan to cover the weaker ones’ retreat. Then at the very least, stop letting the demonic energy spread further.”

With that, he licked his lips, and ran towards the mountain in the back.

“Damn it, damn it!” Su Liu’er continuously cursed. She understood very well that as long as she destroys the spatial rift, she would be able to stop the demonic energy from surging in. However, she could feel a spiritual formation protecting the spatial rift.

Even her and Yuan Hong attacking together was unable to have any effect on it.

Both Yuan Hong and her were already amongst the top brass of fighters in the Endless Beast Region. The ability of the person who set the formation would be at least at the level of a Grandmaster if

they even they were unable to destroy the spiritual formation together.

Since the black-skinned person spewing trash didn't look like a formation master, it was very clear that the hooded man beside him was the formation master.

“Worried?” the dark-skinned man mocked them.

At that very moment...

“Su Yiyun!” A thunderous roar of anger sounded out in the mist-filled rear mountains. Suddenly, a white figure shot towards the spatial rift like a bolt of lightning.

The man under the hood raised his head with a bit of surprise in his eyes.

However, his expression was soon replaced by a mocking smile. He peeled back his hood.

“You're actually here as well. Long time no see,” Su Yiyun's hair had already turned silver. His face that had been that of a twenty-something years old also turned ancient, with wrinkles crawling all over his forehead.

Ye Zichen momentarily paused when he saw Su Yiyun's appearance. However, he soon smiled coldly.

“Hehe, Xuan-Yuan...” Ye Zichen raised his right hand as he dashed over. Xuan-Yuan Sword, which had been getting nurtured in his right arm immediately came out and landed in his hand with a brilliant light.

“Shatter.”

Ye Zichen held the sword with both hands and swung down. Since he had already fought Su Yiyun several times, he naturally knew that there was a spiritual formation in front of him.

Crack.

A small crack appeared on the unperceivable spiritual formation.

Ye Zichen caught the sound with his ear, then straightened his posture and sliced horizontally with Xuan-Yuan Sword.

“Break!”

Bang.

The spiritual turned into glittering light and dispersed.

The dark-skinned person, Su Liu'er and Yuan Hong all raised their eyebrows.

The spiritual formation broke!

Yet, only Su Yiyun smiled, “You’ve grown.”

“All thanks to you,” Ye Zichen replied coldly. Xuan-Yuan Sword suddenly glowed brightly...

“Die!” A blinding light shot out from the sword.

However, Su Yiyun merely raised his hand and flicked the ray of light.

Crack.

The ray of light shattered.

“In the end, you’re still too weak,” Su Yiyun squinted his eyes and looked forward. “I told you to live in anger and hatred, but it seems like it didn’t really do its work on you.”

Creak.

Ye Zichen clenched his fist tightly, then looked up and stared straight at Su Yiyun’s face, which had turned slightly ancient...

“Tell me, where did you hide Yumei!”

“Didn’t she die? Didn’t you see it then?” Su Yiyun snickered.

“Tell me the truth. Where is Xiao Yumei!?” Ye Zichen roared angrily like a madman.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang also took the chance to absorb his anger, causing Xuan-Yuan Sword to emit an eerie feeling.

“How did you know?” Su Yiyun’s expression turned cold as well. Then, a cold laugh surfaced on his face. “She’s in my manor right now. To tell the truth, that woman of yours... really isn’t half bad!”

Before Su Yiyun finished, Ye Zichen waved his sword towards him.

Su Yiyun retreated as fast as he could, but the sword still sliced him across the abdomen and drew blood. He used his hand to quickly stop the bleeding, then looked up and snorted, “Angry?”

“Die!” Ye Zichen hacked at Su Yiyun with Xuan-Yuan Sword once again, but this time, Su Yiyun was ready for it.

Ding.

A spiritual formation instantly covered his entire body.

He also chuckled, “You can’t do anything to me. Ye-zi, you’re too weak.”

Crack.

Yet, at that very moment, the spiritual formation covering Su Yiyun suddenly cracked. He turned around in surprise, and saw the scattered ice crystals on the floor, then saw a person appear beside Ye Zichen.

“I told you already, I protect the fox yaos! Are you ignoring me by acting so out of line on my turf?”

Bang, bang, bang.

At the same time, countless images of sticks fell down from the sky.

Su Yiyun’s pupils contracted, then quickly retreated several tens of meters.

The images fell onto the ground.

A myriad of deep craters appeared on the ground.

At that moment, Yuan Hong had changed into his golden armor, and roared with his huge avatar. “Puny demon scum, come and die!”

# Chapter 510 – Scourge

---

F\*ck!

He's huge!

Ye Zichen looked up at Yuan Hong, who had already transformed into his avatar, then went over and compared himself to the side of his foot...

Mhm, I'm exactly as tall as his foot.

“Don't move around recklessly like that. He can't see a little ant like you after taking the form of his avatar. My little sister's heart will hurt a lot if he steps on you,” Su Liu'er grabbed Ye Zichen by the collar and leaped backwards bringing him along.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, “Who did you call a little ant? Say it again if you dare.”

“So what if I say it a hundred times more? Would you attack me? Don't forget, I'm a woman, and a woman capable fighting at that. More importantly, I'm your older sister-in-law.”

Hearing that, Ye Zichen instantly submitted.

He couldn't retort at all!

After landing at a safe position with Ye Zichen, Su Liu'er looked up at Yuan Hong, “I'll leave it to you.”

“Leave it to me. If I help you deal with this problem, then can I try courting you?”

“Never mind the courting, but I can give you a chance to go on a date with me,” Su Liu'er smiled softly.

“Deal!” Yuan Hong answered with a low voice, but he was beyond happy in his heart.

The price of activating his avatar was quite huge, but it was worth it if he got a chance to go on a date with Su Liu'er in

exchange. Yuan Hong very quickly stopped smiling. This is the best chance to display my manly charm, an opportunity like this doesn't come very often.

“Formation Master, I do want to see just how capable is a Formation Grandmaster!” Yuan Hong roared as he smashed down with the stick in his hands.

At that moment, Su Yiyun's face no longer showed any kind of relaxed expression.

Then, he turned his gaze towards Ye Zichen...

“Actually, I was just kidding. I have no interest in that woman, Xiao Yumei, but her situation in the Demon Realm isn't so good. Ye Zichen, come and snatch her back if you can!”

A spatial rift instantly appeared in front of him, and he snuck into the rift the moment the stick landed at where he had been.

“Su Yiyun, take me with you!” the black-skinned man ran quickly towards the rift.

However, Su Yiyun ignored him and snorted, “Grandpa isn't going to play with you guys anymore!”

Whoosh.

The rift disappeared, and the stick also landed on the ground.

The black-skinned man frantically dodged the attacks of the sticks, but when he finally reached the spatial rift, which Su Yiyun had opened up, he could only watch as the spatial rift disappeared in front of his eyes.

“Su Yiyun!” the man shouted with bloodshot eyes.

The humongous Yuan Hong snorted softly, as if he was very unhappy with Su Yiyun running away. But at least there's still one left.

“Stop shouting, couldn't you tell that he intentionally left and discarded you?” Su Liu'er snickered.

The man bit his lips with his bloodshot eyes, and purple blood begun to flow out from the tear on his lips...

“Let’s die together!”

With that, his body begun to swell.

“Yuan Hong, retreat quickly, he wants to self explode!” Su Liu’er shouted worriedly.

Yuan Hong also understood the demon’s intentions, so he retracted his avatar as quick as possible, but the dark-skinned man laughed maniacally.

“Haha, die, let’s die together!”

His veins popped up, and his skin exploded.

“F\*ck, it’s too late!” Seeing that he was unable to avoid it, Yuan Hong clenched his teeth...

I’m going to gamble!

He dashed to where Su Liu’er was as quick as he could and used his own body to shield her. This way, at the very least, the self explosion wouldn’t hurt Su Liu’er.

However...

Even after a good thirty seconds, there was still no explosion.

They looked back slowly and saw that a daoist elder had suddenly appeared beside the dark skinned man alongside a cocky looking young man.

“We, the Immortal Region, want to take this person away. I wonder if the Master of Fox Yaos and Lord Long Arm Ape can agree to that?” the elder touched his beard and smiled.

Yuan Hong also retracted his avatar with a frown, while Su Liu’er knitted her eyebrows. “You’re from the Immortal Region?”

“Yes!” the elder nodded. “We have been investigating the Demon Realm, we want to take this demon back for interrogation.”

“Geezer, you really do know how to take advantage of things,” Yuan Hong raised his eyebrows and snorted. “Laozi fought so hard, and you actually want to bring him away just like that?”

“Commander Yuan really knows how to joke. You didn’t seem to have done all that much have you? In fact, it was the young man beside you who had an intense fight with the demons’ formation master,” the elder continued to smile softly and pointed towards Ye Zichen.

“He’s my bro, so it’s the same,” Yuan Hong replied shamelessly.

Yet, at that very moment, a pile of spiritual items suddenly appeared on the grassland on the hills.

“This is the compensation for Commander Yuan activating your avatar. I wonder if we can bring him back like this?”

“Ahem...” Yuan Hong was slightly moved after seeing all that. However, he still didn’t feel right being the one to make decision, thus, he could only rub his hands and look towards Ye Zichen and Su Liu’er. “What do you guys think?”

“I have no interests in demons. Since the Immortal Region wants to take him away, then let them,” Su Liu’er continued to reply using the ice-cold tone.

“I don’t mind,” Ye Zichen also replied softly.

“Heh, scourge,” as Ye Zichen spoke, the cocky young man who arrived with the elder suddenly twitched his mouth and snorted.

Ye Zichen’s gaze instantly turned dark.

The elder also smacked the young man on the back of his head, “Stop talking, go and apologize.”

“I refuse,” the young man snorted stubbornly. “Was I wrong? He is the scourge, if it wasn’t for him...”

“Shut up. You’re being locked up for half a year after we return!” the elder raised his eyebrows and scolded angrily. Then, he

immediately smiled apologetically. “My disciple is rather young, and doesn’t quite know how to speak. I hope you take no offense to that. This old man will be bringing the demon back now. See you.”

Thus, the elder and the cocky young man disappeared with a leap.

Yuan Hong frowned at the place they left from and said coldly, “That grandson was insulting my bro just now? F\*ck, if he didn’t run so quickly, laozi would’ve given him the stick.”

“You? Don’t kid me!” Su Liu’er snorted in disdain. “Couldn’t you tell how strong the elder was? If it was your big bro, then he might have been able to fight him.”

“Hehehe...” Yuan Hong scratched his head with a coy smile. However, that was merely because it came from Su Liu’er, he would have just smashed anyone else who said that.

“But it is strange. Didn’t the Demon Realm get demolished a long time ago? Why are there still demons? What’s more, this spatial gate was opened in the land of us fox yaos. It seems like I’ll have to check all of the surrounding seals.”

“Then our date...”

“The date’s going to be reinforcing the fox yaos’ seals. You got a problem with that?” Su Liu’er raised her eyebrows coldly.

Yuan Hong was naturally unwilling. In the date of his dreams, there was definitely a bit of romance, and a bit of adult actions.

However, he didn’t dare to say anything.

“No problem, no problem,” Yuan Hong forced a smile.

Only then did Su Liu’er nod in satisfaction.

Yet, Ye Zichen continued to stand on the spot with a pondering look...

Scourge?

Was he talking about me?

## Chapter 511 – Su Yiyun and Gu Li

---

A spatial rift appeared in an area filled with dense demonic energy, then Su Yiyun walked out of the spatial crack with a tired expression.

“Lord Su, you’ve returned,” the patrolling captain ran over with a flattering smile.

His humanoid figure, dark skin and black eyes without any sclera were absolute proof that he was of pure demonic heritage.

“Mhmm,” Su Yiyun nodded.

The patrol captain took a glance behind Su Yiyun, “Didn’t Lord Balor go with you? Why didn’t I see him return with you?”

“Don’t ask about what you shouldn’t,” Su Yiyun’s expression turned serious.

The patrol captain immediately gulped, then smiled coyly, “I understand, this puny one will not ask anymore! Lord Black Dragon is waiting for you in the hall, do you need this puny one to take you...”

“No need,” Su Yiyun interrupted the patrol captain’s words coldly, then walked forward.

When he had finally left the sight of the patrol members, one of them twitched his mouth and snorted, “Isn’t he just a human? What’s he acting so full of himself for?”

Smack.

The guard captain smacked his subordinate’s head, then put his finger on his lips and said vigilantly, “Don’t just spout things. Lord Su isn’t just any common person.”

“I know that, but isn’t he just a Formation Grandmaster? Yet he’s way too proud. No matter what, I don’t like him,” the team member muttered unhappily.

“Do you think that you’re the only one who doesn’t like him? Plenty of people don’t like him, but just who would actually dare to do anything to him? Don’t think about it so much, let’s patrol properly. Those high up existences are not people we can chitchat about,” with that, the patrol captain begun to walk forward once again.

...

The dark palace appeared rather sinister. Yet, the moment Su Yiyun stepped into the hall, the fires around the palace begun to burn, completely illuminating the previously pitch-dark palace.

“Lord Black Dragon, this subordinate has returned.”

“You’ve came back so quickly? I thought I would have to wait a bit longer,” a black robed man suddenly appeared on the throne in the empty palace. He looked around Su Yiyun for a moment, then raised his eyebrows. “Why didn’t Balor come back as well?”

“Balor died in a fight,” Su Yiyun replied indifferently.

“Fight? Balor is one of the commanders of the Swirling Gates, he had strength which is equivalent to the Twelve Demon Sovereigns. He actually... died in the fight?” the man on the throne squinted his eyes, then asked in a judging manner. “Master Su, shouldn’t you give this king a good explanation?”

“I already felt very tired while forcefully opening the spatial gate. Unfortunately, there were a few peak powerhouses where we landed. Since we were unable to match them, we could only retreat... Balor... died while fighting to protect me!” Su Yiyun revealed the wound on his chest as he spoke.

Lord Black Dragon glanced at the wound, then raised his eyebrows as he nodded. “Mm, since that was the case, then Balor did contribute to our Demon Realm trampling the Three Realms. I will go and comfort Balor’s tribesmen in person later.”

“This subordinate graciously thanks Lord Black Dragon on the

behalf of Balor,” Su Yiyun cupped his hands. “According to what we detected, the Three Realms cannot be compared to the Modern Realm. Forcefully opening the gate causes too much damage to me. I fear that I am unable to activate any spatial gates in coming times.

“No worries, Master Su’s health is more important,” Lord Black Dragon waved his hands with a frown. Then, a pile of spiritual items appeared in front of Su Yiyun. “This king has noticed that Master Su’s lifeforce has been draining at a very fast pace. You must be doing your best in order to come up with new formations. Here are some spiritual items to show my goodwill.”

“Thank you for your care, Your Highness,” Su Yiyun picked up all the spiritual items calmly. “This subordinate is a bit tired, so I wish to ask for my leave.”

“Take care, Master Su,” Lord Black Dragon smiled.

Su Yiyun only looked more and more tired when he left the palace. Yet, at the very moment he walked out of the palace doors, a sinister chuckle sounded out beside him, “You’re finally going to reveal your true self?”

Su Yiyun looked back and saw Gu Li looking at him with a mocking expression, while he held a strand of crested dog’s-tail in his mouth.

“I don’t understand what you’re talking about.”

“Stop pretending. Do you think you did it perfectly?” Gu Li stretched lazily. “You definitely did not pledge your allegiance sincerely, and that can be seen from your actions ever since you arrived in the Demon Realm.”

“Oh?” Su Yiyun raised his eyebrows.

“You have achieved plenty for the Demon Realm, but you’ve never gotten any real results. What’s more, it’s not like you don’t know about the grudge between the Demon Realm and the Yellow

Emperor. There were several times when you opened the gate that you could have killed the Yellow Emperor or brought him back to the Demon Realm, but you didn't. Even though you're acting like the bad guy, you're acting training him, aren't you?"

"That is merely your assumption," Su Yiyun smiled, then turned around to leave.

However, Gu Li leaped in front of him, "Even if those are merely my assumptions, then what do you have to say about that woman?"

...

"A few days ago, I saw Ye Zichen's woman appear in your manor by chance, but the manor lacks any demon guards or attendants. You are also going to your manor more and more frequently. How are you going to explain yourself?"

"You're keeping tabs on me," Su Yiyun's expression darkened upon hearing that.

Gu Li quickly took a step back with a smile, "Master Su, don't get angry. I wouldn't dare to keep tabs on you. I merely saw her by chance."

"What exactly are you trying to say..."

"Lord Su, don't be so nervous, I actually just wanted to remind you that since a small fry like me noticed it, do you really think that Lord Black Dragon doesn't know? Don't pick up a rock and hit yourself on the foot. I will feel pity if Lord Black Dragon were to execute you. No matter what, we're both from the Modern Realm," Gu Li's smiled in an even more sinister manner.

However, Su Yiyun merely smiled softly, "There's no need for you to worry about that, but since you were so nice as to remind me, let me also remind you about something."

"Lord Su, please speak," Gu Li smiled and acted as if he was truly waiting intently for Su Yiyun to enlighten him.

“The idea of absorbing demonic energy from abyssals isn’t that bad, but it will cause your spiritual energy to become impure. What’s more, it is something strictly forbidden within the demon race. Be careful, don’t let yourself get caught!”

“Ha...” Gu Li’s expression clearly turned for the worse when he heard the words. However, he forced himself to nod calmly and smiled in a self-mocking manner. “It seems like Lord Su was smarter in the end.”

“We’re about the same. Who doesn’t have any hidden cards when you want to survive in a place like this?” Su Yiyun smiled. “I’m a bit tired, I wonder if Lord Gu can allow me to leave?”

“Please,” Gu Li immediately made way.

Su Yiyun snorted, then walked off at a distance.

“Su Yiyun, let’s see how long you can hide it for,” Gu Li smiled in a mocking manner, then disappeared from his spot as well.

# Chapter 512 – Ill-fated Relationship

---

Ye Zichen repeated the words of the cocky young man over and over in his head after the two people from the Immortal Region had left.

Scourge!

That grandson actually called me a scourge!

I'll admit it. Problems arise wherever I go. I'm just like Conan from that one anime, and how someone will always die wherever he goes.

But I can't exactly control where the demons opens their gate in the Three Realms, right!?

It's merely a coincidence that I bumped into every single one of their attacks. What's more, aren't I always trying to think of a solution to all this?

That little bastard...

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in his annoyance, but thought about something more important that Su Yiyun had mentioned.

Yumei is in the Demon Realm.

"Liu'er-jie, are you guys alright?" Su Zhu hurried over with the fox yao experts.

"What problem can possibly arise with your brother-in-law-to-be here?" Yuan Hong chuckled.

Su Liu'er looked up with a glare, "If you bullshit anymore, then we have no need to meet anymore."

"Just look at my shitty mouth," Yuan Hong slapped himself on the face.

Su Liu'er merely snorted, and ignored him, before walking over to her tribesmen to give orders.

Ye Zichen then walked over to Su Yan...

“That was my older brother just now, right?”

“You saw him?” Ye Zichen, who didn’t want to mention it, was startled.

Su Yan nodded, then smiled, “But even now, I still don’t believe that he’s a bad guy.”

Ye Zichen felt a slight ache in his heart when he heard her thoughts.

It’s not like I want to believe Su Yiyun is truly on the demon’s side. However, the situation does not allow me to be even a little bit careless.

Thus, even though he was unwilling to say what he was about to say, he still forced himself to say it with a straight face. “You better not have those sort of thoughts in the future. He will only be our enemy in the future. When that happens, don’t be merciful. He... is no longer the same as he was in the past.”

Su Yan’s body stiffened, then smiled wryly, “I understand.”

Yet, at that very moment, the elites from the various yao clans who had come to the party also settled their own situations of being drugged by Ye Zichen and Yuan Hong properly after a few bathroom breaks.

The first thing they did after that was...

To teach the brat who challenged them a lesson.

“That brat is still here. Brothers, bring your weapons!” The elites all yammered as they ran forward.

Due to the attack of the demons on the back mountains being dealt with in a short amount of time, the elites who had been swarming the toilets did not know that such a huge battle had occurred.

However, when they got closer, they all saw the bottomless

craters, and the gathering of the fox yaos' peak fighting forces.

“What’s going on?” One of them asked, while the others all looked forward in confusion.

“Who cares what’s going on. I found the grandson!” One of the young man with a rather keen eyesight saw Ye Zichen beside Su Yan, and leaped over to slap Ye Zichen with his right arm that he had transformed into that of a bear’s.

Crack.

Just when it reached into the air, the bear-armed young man turned into an ice sculpture and fell onto the ground.

Su Liu’er also stepped forward and scolded coldly, “Do you want to cause trouble in the territory of the fox yaos?”

Gulp.

All of the elites took a step back when they saw the ice sculpture. Then very quickly, someone shouted “Run” amongst them, causing them to scatter like frightened does.

“No need to thank me. It is all due to lil’ sis. However, us fox yaos do not welcome you. Please leave!” Su Liu’er’s cold attitude startled Ye Zichen, while Su Yan also looked up in confusion.

“Big sis...”

“Lil’ sis, it’s time for you medicine bath.”

Su Liu’er grabbed Su Yan’s arm, then turned around indifferently. Meanwhile, she set her remaining attention onto Xuan-Yuan Sword, which Ye Zichen grasped in his hand...

Ye Zichen’s face was filled with confusion as he watched Su Liu’er and Su Yan float away.

Why the sudden change in attitude? Is she on her period?

Even if that’s the case, it’s too sudden!

“Please!” Su Zhu looked at Xuan-Yuan Sword meaningfully, then

sighed softly before pointing towards the gate.

“Lil’ Zhu-jie, about this...”

“Don’t try and get anything from me, I don’t know anything,” Su Zhu smiled with a shrug. “Hurry up and leave. Otherwise, if big sister really gets angry, you might not be able to leave even if you wanted to.”

...

After Su Liu’er dragged Su Yan back to her room, she reached into Su Yan’s waistband and took out Su Yan’s phone.

“Sis, what are you doing?”

“I don’t allow you to have anymore contact with that person,” with that, she backed out of the room and shut the door tightly. Then, she looked at the nearby attendant. “From now on, Third Young Lady cannot come into contact with anyone else, including the young lady of the dragon clan and the Clan Head of the Deers. Also, without my permission, third young lady is not allowed even a single step out of her room.”

“Big sis, why....” Su Yan hammered the door within the room and yelled. However, Su Liu’er merely acted like she didn’t hear anything before turning around to walk out of the courtyard.

“Liu’er-jie, do you think shutting lil’ sis like this will truly be of use?” Su Zhu leaned on a nearby wall and squished a green leaf.

“Do you feel like my actions are too much?” Su Liu’er’s expression radiated coldness.

Su Zhu smiled and shook her head, “I know very well that that guy should be Yellow Emperor Xuan-Yuan from back then. Big sis naturally has her own reasons for doing this. But, do you really think that it’ll be of any use?”

“I have to try, no matter what,” Su Liu’er bit her lips with a dark gaze. “I cannot let him harm her again. Absolutely not...”

Su Liu'er punched a nearby wall, causing it to crack.

Then, she also began to walk forward silently.

I cannot possibly watch her leave with you, Yellow Emperor Xuan-Yuan!

"Second young lady..." the attendant looked at the collapsing wall in fear.

Su Zhu squinted her eyes and smiled, "Just repair the wall. You can claim the costs from me."

Then, she nodded towards the attendant then left, while smiling wryly...

Is this an ill-fated relationship?

...

After Ye Zichen was forcefully kicked out of the fox yao's city, Ye Zichen looked at the guards in front of him with a frown.

"Just how did I piss them off?"

"Zichen-ge, what happened?" Xia Keke blinked. She had wanted to go to Su Yan, but was kicked out as well.

"How would I know?" Ye Zichen shrugged speechlessly.

Yet, as he sighed, a familiar face flashed across his eyes.

Why is she here!? Ye Zichen muttered in his heart, then began chasing after the figure before anyone could react.

# Chapter 513 – Hundred Years Peach of Immortality

---

Sa, sa, sa...

Ye Zichen chased after the figure for several minutes, before the figure finally managed to lose Ye Zichen using the cover of the woods.

“Why is she avoiding me?”

Ye Zichen knitted his eyebrows after he lost his target.

Then, not long later, Xia Keke and the rest also hurried over.

When Ye Zichen had sprinted towards the woods so suddenly, Xia Keke had thought that Su Liu'er kicking him out had caused him to break down so much that he wanted to feed himself to the wild animals in the woods!

That was definitely something she would not allow to happen, since Zichen-ge was extremely important to her.

Thus, Xia Keke chased after him along with everyone else.

“Zichen-ge, why did you run over here for? The woods in the Beast Region are very dangerous!” Xia Keke glared with a pout, while she released a faint draconic aura, causing the hidden beasts to all flee.

All of a sudden, the only sound that could be heard was the sounds of beasts scrambling away.

“I think I saw Sun Yige just now!” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and replied.

“Yige?” Xia Keke blinked. “Zichen-ge, can you not joke around? This is the Three Realms, so how could Yige have come? What's more, we're in the Endless Beast Region. Even if she ascends, she would have landed in the Immortal Region!”

“Alright, I made a mistake,” Ye Zichen also realized how idiotic he sounded. But that person truly looked very similar to Sun Yige.

“Sun Yige, another woman?” Zuo Mo raised her eyebrows.

“Yeah, another woman,” Xia Keke lifted her chin, then pouted. “I’m telling you, you came way too late. If we’re really going in order, then you’re the teeny tiny eeny meeny miney moley smallest, most insignificant concubine after the sixth, fifth, fourth, third, second and main wife at best!”

“Keke, don’t just say things, Zuo Mo and I are just normal friends.”

Sigh, Keke’s always like this. She said something similar back when Lu Lu arrived in the Modern Realm.

It was one thing before, but I really don’t want to have any emotional debts anymore. I don’t want Keke’s words to cause unnecessary misunderstandings.

“Hmmpf, you heard that? Just normal friends,” Xia Keke couldn’t help but repeat. Yet, when she saw Ye Zichen’s frown, she immediately stopped attacking Zuo Mo, “Alright, I’ll stop making her sad. But Zichen-ge, since you came to the Beast Region, then how about coming over to my place to play?”

Dragon clan.

Ye Zichen subconsciously touched the bone ring on his finger.

I already promised to take the Old Dragon God back to the dragon race when I was in the Modern Realm, but due to the various situations, I ended up delaying it over and over again.

Now that I’m in the Beast Region, it is clearly the best chance to return the ring.

But... I don’t want to let go yet.

I haven’t learnt the entirety of the dragon race’s secret manual. What’s more, the flow of time within the old Dragon God’s sub

dimension is different from the outside world, which is very beneficial for my cultivation...

Ye Zichen underwent a turmoil in his heart before he finally let out a soft sigh after a long time, "Alright, let's go and stay at your place for a while."

"Hey, are you not going to care about the Spiritual Breeze Villagers? We've already stayed in the Beast Region for quite a while," Zuo Mo couldn't help but speak up.

"Why do you have so much to say? No one's stopping you from returning on your own," Xia Keke twitched her mouth and snorted unhappily.

"Heh, I'm going if he is!" Zuo Mo raised her chin and did not back down.

"Boss, since you guys are going over to the Dragon Clan, then I won't stay with you," Lil' White also voiced his decision. "I'll go back to the Tiangou Clan directly. Then, I'll go over to find you in the Immortal Region when I have time."

"Sure," Ye Zichen nodded with a smile, then watched Lil' White and his people leave.

After they left, Xia Keke held Ye Zichen's arm and smiled, "C'mon, come with me to my home to play."

On the way to the Dragon Clan's land, Xia Keke blabbered on about everything that had happened after she had arrived in the Three Realms.

Zuo Mo could occasionally interrupt, with the intention of attacking Xia Keke instead of actually joining in the conversation.

Xia Keke naturally did not back down, and thus begun to argue once again.

Ye Zichen didn't want to mind the situation, nor could he do anything about it. Thus, he intentionally gave up as much space as

he could for the other two in the carriage, while he took out his phone in the corner.

When he clicked on WeChat, he noticed just how unusually active his Red Packet Server was.

Immortality Peach Fairy: Crap, I feel like I'm going to get my salary deducted.

Canopy Marshal: Monkey Bro, can you send me another private packet? You understand just what Old Pig's stomach is like.

Monkey King: Idiot, can't you learn how to eat slower?"

Erlang Shen: Ignoring about the monkey's other abilities, his peach stealing abilities are definitely top notch.

Monkey King: Don't kiss ass. Even if you call me, Old Sun, grandpa, I, Old Sun, won't give you an extra one.

Erlang Shen: Monkey, you're seeking death. Fight meh.

Monkey King: Do you think I, Old Sun, is scared of you? I heard that you broke through into the Sky Immortal level a few days earlier? But you seemed to have used roids? Heh, my son, you really feel itchy all over since I didn't beat you recently.

God of Fortune: Great deity, calm down... Great Sage, thank you for your friendly generosity.

God of Thunder: Great Sage, you pretty much picked all of the peaches in the Immortality Peach Garden, right?

Immortality Peach Fairy: Sob, sob...

Ye Zichen watched the scrolling chat, then raised his eyebrows. It seems like everyone in the group received the Great Sage's red packet which contained a Peach of Immortality!

It seems like the Great Sage did it again!

Ye Zichen licked his lips and scrolled through the chat history, and like he expected, the most recent red packet was from the

Monkey King.

Tap.

Dingdong.

You received Monkey King's red packet.

Hundred Year Immortality Peach x1.

There's actually more left.

Ye Zichen was completely shocked when he saw the message. Normally speaking, there shouldn't be any packets left since I clicked so late...

Especially since it's a treasure like a Peach of Immortality.

But then again, the age of this Peach of Immortality seems to be a bit young...

Ye Zichen took a look at how many red packets the Great Sage sent in curiosity...

Ugh.

Ye Zichen was completely dumbfounded.

666.

He sent a total of 666 red packets. No wonder, there are still packets remaining when I clicked! No wonder the age of the Peach of Immortality is so young. If the Great Sage keeps on stealing like this, then could the next Immortality Peach Feast have any Peaches of Immortality above fifty years of age?

But no matter what, it is still a Peach of Immortality.

Ye Zichen also took the opportunity of the active group to speak out in it.

"Great Sage, thank you for your Peach of Immortality. It would be even more perfect if you give me a private packet as well!"

Dingdong.

His phone vibrated the moment he sent the message.

Private packet?

Ye Zichen's eyes lit up. He quickly left the group, and just as he wanted to claim the private packet from the Great Sage, he noticed that the message wasn't from the Great Sage at all.

It was from Taibai Jinxing.

Ye Zichen sighed slightly regrettably, then clicked into the chat...

"Stop the carriage," Ye Zichen immediately lifted his hand and signaled the carriage to stop.

Zuo Mo and Xia Keke, who were in a heated argument also stopped and looked at him in confusion.

"Keke, Zichen-ge can't go to the Dragon Clan's place with you. Can you get someone to send me back to the Immortal Region?"

# Chapter 514 – Robbing Spiritual Treasures

---

“What happened?” Xia Keke pouted upon hearing that Ye Zichen wanted to leave. They were just about to reach the Dragon Clan’s territory, but Ye Zichen suddenly said that he didn’t want to go there anymore.

They haven’t met for such a long time, so she wanted to stay with Ye Zichen as long as possible.

“Sorry, there is an urgent situation over at the Immortal Region,” Ye Zichen replied, while smiling apologetically.

Xia Keke sighed helplessly, “Alright. Ai... Do you want me to go to the Immortal Region with you?”

“Third Young Lady, you can’t go there,” the carriage driver suddenly turned around. “This subordinate can send your friends back to the Immortal Region if they need me to, but you must stay in the Beast Region.”

“You’re terrible!” Xia Keke pouted unhappily. However, when she saw that the carriage driver was not backing down, she could only give in. “Alright, alright. I won’t go. Hurry up and send Zichen-ge back. Don’t delay his matters.”

“Keke. I’m so sorry. I’ll definitely go over to the Dragon Clan and find you when I can,” Ye Zichen continued to smile apologetically after getting off the carriage.

Xia Keke smiled, then stuck out her right pinky, “Promise.”

“Promise!”

After Ye Zichen moved his hand away from Xia Keke’s, the carriage driver also took out several white gems and placed them onto the floor, causing a spatial rift to open in front of the carriage.

The carriage driver pointed at the rift, “Please.”

Ye Zichen nodded, then entered the spatial rift.

Right after entering, Zuo Mo suddenly giggled, and raised her eyebrows, “Girlie, it seems like big sis won this time.”

Whoosh.

Xia Keke bit her lips angrily as the rift disappeared, while Zuo Mo’s expression surfaced in her mind.

“She’s pissing me off.”

Xia Keke smacked the carriage’s seat, then took out her phone, only to find that there were no new messages at all.

“What’s going on with Susu? She still hasn’t replied!”

...

“Zhou Zhenhe, your Zhou family is seriously relentless. We already let you have the lode, and you still came after us. Do you really think we Spiritual Breeze Villagers are easy to bully?” Xue Qi frowned, while the male villagers of the Spiritual Breeze Village stared at the Zhou family members in plain clothes.

“Village Chief Xue is funny. Look at your living environment right now. How would we dare to bully you?” Zhou Zhenhe smiled, revealing that he was still missing his two front teeth, which Ye Zichen had knocked out.

“Then f\*ck off,” Xue Qi scolded, then shouted towards the courtyard. “Master Li, someone is causing trouble!”

Whoosh.

A white-robed middle-aged man appeared in front of everyone. His faint aura of a Human Immortal caused the breathing of the Zhou family members to quicken.

“This isn’t a place for you guys to act outrageously. If you don’t want to die... Scram!”

“So cocky,” brash laughter rang out in the air above them.

When everybody looked up, they saw a white-haired elder, and

Meng Da, who had a gloomy expression descend from the sky.

“Brother-in-law!” Zhou Zhenhe exclaimed.

“Early stage Human Immortal, heh...” the elder snorted softly.

The expression of the Human Immortal expert Zuo Mo had left with the villagers changed drastically.

Mid stage Human Immortal.

At the Human Immortal level, every single stage was significantly more powerful than the previous. Thus, although they were both Human Immortals, Master Li did not think that he could match up to the elder at all.

“Then puny Spiritual Breeze Village could actually hire a Human Immortal to protect them. And these spiritual items... Meng Da, you truly did not lie to your master,” the elder raised his eyebrows softly.

Meng Da quickly forced a smile, “Esteemed Master, how could your disciple dare to lie to you? The rise of the Spiritual Breeze Village was all thanks to them harvesting the black crystal ore at the lode...”

“Black crystal ores? Meng Da, don’t tell me they managed to rise using the black crystal ore...” the elder raised his eyebrows, but didn’t put on an expression that seemed to mind it too much.

Black crystal ore were no longer that important at his level.

The reason he arrived was for a treasure that truly interested him.

“Esteemed Master, don’t be in such a hurry, this disciple didn’t finish yet,” Meng Da smiled flatteringly. “You definitely know how to mine black crystal ore.”

“Naturally.”

“One would have to be at least a Human Immortal to mine it, and that is with earth-grade spiritual treasures. However, the strongest

person in the Spiritual Breeze Village back then was of the Spiritual Body level. They didn't have any Human Immortal level experts. Since that's the case, then they definitely used spiritual treasures to harvest it, right? How they managed to mine black crystal ore is definitely intriguing!" Zhou Zhenhe added on the side.

"Also, they mined the black crystal ore for only one day. A single day of mining actually allowed such a nameless village to develop this much. It is clear that they mined out a lot of black crystal ore. When thinking about this efficiency, then that treasure..." Meng Da smiled meaningfully, while the elder's blurry eyes also lit up.

Spiritual Treasure!

It definitely is a spiritual treasure!

It is extremely difficult to mine black crystal ore. The Spiritual Breeze Village only had Spiritual Body level experts, but were still actually able to mine it.

The elder made a rough estimate. All the spiritual items in the courtyard are worth more than twenty million celeste.

This manor itself is also worth a several million celeste.

According to the pricing of black crystal ore on the black market... It means that they actually mined out more than five hundred pieces of black crystal ore in a single day...

Spiritual treasure.

It definitely is a top grade spiritual treasure.

Their spiritual treasure might be a top earth-grade one, or even a sky grade one!

Although the elder was a guest chamberlain of the Fire Cloud Gate, he only has several tens of thousand celeste per month as salary. Thus, it would take him several tens of years to just buy an earth-grade spiritual treasure. If he wanted a sky-grade one...

The flames in the elder's eyes heated up, and his breathing quickened.

He took a step forward, and caused his mid stage Human Immortal spiritual pressure to fill the entirety of the manor. "Hand over the spiritual treasure, and I will let you live!"

"What spiritual treasure? We don't have any spiritual treasures," Xue Qi bit his lips tightly and retorted.

"No, then are you telling me that my disciple is lying to this old man?" the elder squinted his eyes.

"You're just accusing us of any random thing! The rise of our Spiritual Village is related to black crystal ore, but it isn't a direct relationship. Also, our village has an ascended expert, so don't be too outrageous!" Xue Qi knitted his eyebrows and argued.

The elder's expression darkened when he heard those words, "You're threatening this old man? Heh, what a smart mouth. It seems like you aren't going to submit until you die. Good, since you're the village chief, then this old man will make an example out of you!"

"You dare!?" Master Li immediately met the elder when he attacked.

"Heh, puny early stage Human Immortal. Scram!" the elder forcefully beat Master Li onto the ground, causing the latter to cough up blood. The elder was dead set on getting the spiritual treasure, and he did not care if he had to kill to do so.

"Die!" the elder reached towards Xue Qi's neck. All of the Spiritual Breeze Villagers were completely stunned.

At that very moment, a wind slash sliced through the air and toward the elder's hand.

"Shitty geezer, do you want to die by attacking someone I'm protecting!?"

# Chapter 515 – Since you want it, then I'll give it to you

---

Sword Immortal?

The elder quickly retracted his arm, then looked backwards and saw Ye Zichen speeding towards him.

“Ye Zichen,” Xue Qi, Stone and co. all revealed joyous expression. Since a certain time, Ye Zichen had already become the person they placed their faith in.

“Zichen-ge!” Xue Lan ran over with a sob. “This old man wanted to kill big brother. They also wanted to rob our village of a spiritual treasure!”

“Spiritual treasure? What spiritual treasure?” Ye Zichen raised his hand and rubbed Xue Lan's hair and raised his eyebrows.

Spiritual treasure?

Why have I never heard of that before?

“Youngster, just who is your master?” The elder could feel from Ye Zichen's aura that he was merely an early stage Human Immortal. But he only looks a bit more than twenty, being able to reach his level at his age means that he most likely has some faction supporting him.

He himself was merely a guest chamberlain of the Fire Cloud Gate. When he faced peak forces...

He didn't dare to offend them at all.

“Don't have one. There's no need for you to guess this or that. I merely trained myself without the support of any faction,” Ye Zichen smiled indifferently.

The elder stared at Ye Zichen for a while.

He's not lying.

So foolish. The elder then snorted and put on a high and mighty look, “Youngster, hand the spiritual treasure over.”

“I have too many spiritual treasures. I wonder which one you want?” Ye Zichen smiled meaningfully.

The elder squinted his eyes, while greed swelled up in his heart, “Hand all of them over.”

“You really are greedy. Are you not afraid of being overly so!?” Ye Zichen snickered. “I don’t like trouble, so hurry up and tell me which spiritual treasure you want. I’ll give it to you, and you leave with those people. How about that? If you are too greedy, then I don’t mind fighting you. We do have two Human Immortals on our side.”

The elder looked towards Ye Zichen a bit more with his blurry eyes. For some reason, he suddenly felt that he couldn’t tell what the kid was thinking.

But his words are right. He does have two Human Immortals on his side, and it would cost me a lot of trouble even if I managed to deal with them.

I only came here for that sky grade spiritual treasure. As long as I can get that, then the rest of the spiritual treasures weren’t of any real value for me.

“What this old man wants is very simple. Hand the spiritual treasure you used while harvesting black crystal ore over. Don’t think about fooling me with rubbish spiritual treasure, got it?”

Ye Zichen instantly understood.

So they actually came here for that.

I used explosives while harvesting, but from the looks of it, it doesn’t seem like they know of the existence of explosives.

“But that’s an extremely valuable spiritual treasure. Can you say a different one?” Ye Zichen acted like he didn’t want to give that

one away.

However, the elder only felt more certain that it was a sky grade spiritual treasure, “Stop bullshitting around. If you aren’t handing it over, then all of you can die here!”

“Don’t be so scary, I get scared extremely easily,” Ye Zichen sighed dejectedly. “Alright, I guess people have to bow when the situation is not in their favor, so I’ll just hand it over to you. But you have to promise that you can’t hurt us.”

“Of course!” the elder was overjoyed. Dumb kid, if he truly fought me with the sky grade spiritual treasure, I might not even be able to beat him.

It seems like he’s a wimp, and got scared senseless just like that.

I seriously don’t understand how he managed to cultivate to the Human Immortal level at such a young age. It seems like he definitely got a lot of ridiculous luck along the way.

But then again, that makes sense. If he didn’t have luck, then he wouldn’t even have gotten the sky grade spiritual treasure.

“Wait a moment. Since this spiritual treasure is way too valuable, I’ll go and grab it for you personally,” with that, Ye Zichen begun to walk towards the backyard.

The elder knitted his eyebrows and snorted, “You can’t be thinking of running away, right?”

“So many of my fellow villagers are here, how could I run? What’s more, I can’t run with you watching me,” Ye Zichen shrugged helplessly.

“Heh, I doubt you’d dare. Hurry up,” the elder snorted coldly with a proud expression.

Ye Zichen turned around with a smile.

“Ye Zichen,” just as Ye Zichen was about to leave, Xue Qi also gave him a cue.

It was as if he was telling Ye Zichen to take the spiritual treasure and run without caring about the rest of the villagers.

Ye Zichen gave him a look that told him to calm down, before walking to an isolated location in the backyard and spammed his chat with Yue Lao using his phone.

“Sky Sovereign, what is it?”

“Send me a few bombs, I have urgent use for it,” Ye Zichen quickly tapped on his phone.

“One moment, I’ll go and get it for you right now.”

Approximately several minutes later, Yue Lao sent a red packet over.

Dingdong.

You received Yue Lao’s red packet.

Bomb x5

“Sky Sovereign, you seem to be needing quite a few bombs recently. Do you need us to make some more?”

“That’ll be great, save it for emergencies.

After Ye Zichen sent Yue Lao the message, he opened up the Treasure Chest and withdrew a single bomb.

Heh, you want the treasure...

I’ll make that shitty geezer explode!

Ye Zichen held the bomb in his hand and returned to the front yard with a smile. During the entire period of time, the elder had locked onto Ye Zichen’s position with his spiritual consciousness in fear of Ye Zichen actually running away.

When he saw Ye Zichen return with a black metal ball, which he could not sense any spirituality from...

“Youngster!”

“Senior, this is the spiritual treasure we used to mine black crystal ores,” Ye Zichen walked over with a smile.

Both Stone and Xue Qi were stunned...

He really brought it over.

They remember very clearly that the metal ball was what Ye Zichen had used during the mining.

“You sure?” the elder frowned. Why can’t I sense any spiritual energy from it?

The elder looked around at the expression of the surrounding villagers, which only caused him to frown even more.

He was rather capable in deducing the situation from the expressions of people after living for such a long time. From the expressions of the Spiritual Breeze Villagers, the metal ball was indeed what he was looking for.

Then why...

Could it be that this sky grade spiritual treasure has reached a natural state, and that’s why I can’t sense the fluctuate of spiritual energy from it?

Then this youngsters luck is truly absurd. He actually managed to find it!

“Give it to me,” the elder scolded.

Ye Zichen’s face was covered in an unwilling expression which was worthy of an Oscar.

“Hurry up, do you want to die?”

“Here, here, here,” Ye Zichen chuckled the metal ball over like he was throwing a tantrum.

The elder quickly caught it.

So heavy.

That was the first feeling that he got when he held the metal ball.

Then he tried to activate the metal ball using his spiritual energy, but no matter what he did, he wasn't able to activate it.

“Youngster, did you have it recognize you as its master?”

“No.”

“Then why isn't it reacting?” the elder frown.

Only then did Ye Zichen acted as he suddenly recalled something, “I nearly forgot...”

With that, he took out a lighter from his pocket and handed it over with a smile, “This is to be used in combination with the spiritual treasure. When you want to use it, just use this treasure to ignite the white string on the spiritual pressure... And voila!”

# Chapter 516 – Ability of the Bomb

---

The elder was rather confused as he held the lighter in his left hand and black bomb in his right.

It truly is a high level spiritual treasure, it actually needs to be used as a set.

However, the elder did not completely believe Ye Zichen's words. He looked towards him and couldn't help but frown. "Youngster, are you sure that you aren't lying to this old man?"

"Senior, just what are you saying? I merely gave you the spiritual treasure to ensure our safety. If I am lying, then why am I still standing here? Wouldn't it be much better for me to just run?" Ye Zichen spoke with utter sincerity.

The elder checked him out, then snorted, "Heh, you better not lie to this old man. You know what would happen if you do."

With that, he pressed down on the lighter, causing a small flame to light up...

The elder raised his eyebrows when he saw the fire. This really is a treasure. He couldn't help but to believe Ye Zichen's words even more, and was greatly looking forward to the power of the black metal ball.

"I need to light it?"

"Light it. This spiritual treasure is pretty powerful. The Spiritual Breeze Villagers aren't too strong, so can you allow us to retreat five meters?"

"What kind of tricks do you want to play?" The elder squinted his eyes.

God, this elder sure is wary.

"Senior, don't think too much. This youngster has already said it, the spiritual treasure is very powerful, we are merely retreating by

five meters,” Ye Zichen smiled coyly.

The elder stared at him for a moment, “Fine, if you want to take the chance to run, then... Heh...”

“I don’t dare!”

Ye Zichen retreated a few steps with a forced smile, while the Spiritual Breeze Villagers also did the same.

The elder’s expression also turned more serious. He lifted the lighter towards the bomb’s fuse...

Zzz...

“This is strange.”

Even though I lit it, I still don’t feel any fluctuation of spiritual energy.

The elder stared straight at the bomb and the fuse, which was quickly burning.

Ye Zichen also put up a barrier of spiritual energy in front of him and the villagers.

Crap.

At that very moment, the elder felt a chill down his spine.

He raised his hand to throw the bomb out, but it was already too late.

BOOM!

The bomb exploded in the elder’s hand with a huge noise. Everything in a ten meter radius was in the radius of the explosion. Zhou Zhenhe, and the Zhou family members were all confused by the explosion alongside Meng Da.

Some weaker people couldn’t even react or scream before they died.

“Youngster, you tricked this old man!” A sinister voice cried out from the flames.

The Fire Cloud Gate elder slowly walked out. His right arm was already destroyed by the explosion, and his entire body was covered in wounds...

“You really know how to kid. I did give you the treasure used to mine black crystal ores. I can even swear by my heart demon that it is the truth. However, there was something I did trick you about. This isn’t a spiritual treasure.”

Ye Zichen smiled calmly as he stood in front of the elder. However, he was still a bit shocked.

I didn’t expect the bomb to be so powerful. The elder had already put up defenses as quick as he could, but the explosion still affected him so much.

“Youngster, I’m going to kill you!” the elder endured the his body’s sufferings and stepped forward.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen’s expression darkened, while spiritual energy swirled around his body...

“Let this junior send you off. You already lived for so long. I... am still young!”

Ye Zichen smirked, revealing his glistening white teeth and his dark gaze, then transferred all of his spiritual energy into his right arm.

Xuan-Yuan Sword also appeared in his hand by his call, while the sword itself shimmered with golden light.

“Slash!”

A powerful slash flew towards the elder. Then, all of a sudden, a huge hand appeared out of nowhere and shattered the conjured wind blade.

“Youngster, how dare you!? You actually dared to attack a guest chamberlain of our Fire Cloud Gate. You are seeking death!”

A huge bang sounded out in the sky, and another hand reached

down from the sky towards Ye Zichen.

“Heh, laozi’s in charge on laozi’s turf. Just what the heck are you!” Ye Zichen raised Xuan-Yuan Sword and instantly shattered the huge hand. Then, he sliced the sword horizontally towards the elder.

“This... is the spiritual treasure I want,” the elder looked at Xuan-Yuan Sword in Ye Zichen’s hand in a mesmerized manner. Then his eyes suddenly bulged as he roared angrily. “Youngster, you tricked this old man! I won’t let you off after I become a ghost.”

“You really can’t do anything if you end up in the Underworld. Go, there isn’t anything for you here anymore.”

Slash.

Blood scattered across the courtyard. The Fire Cloud Gate guest chamberlain also stared at Ye Zichen, then fell to the ground unwillingly.

“Youngster!”

“Stop yammering up there. Come down if you can!” Ye Zichen kicked the corpse of the elder to the side, then looked up into the sky.

“Youngster, we, the Fire Cloud Gate, will remember this grudge!” The purple clouds in the sky dispersed.

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in disdain, and wiped away the blood on Xuan-Yuan Sword, then stowed it away into his arm.

He looked towards the surrounding people and saw that Meng Da and the Zhou clansfolk had all died in the explosion.

“Please deal with them,” Ye Zichen said plainly.

Zuo Mo, who was watching the situation unfold at the entrance, ran over with glistening eyes, “Ye Zichen, what did you give that old man just now?”

“A bomb,” Ye Zichen replied.

“Bomb?” Zuo Mo raised her eyebrows. “Can you mass produce that treasure?”

As one of the Treasure Tower’s leaders, she had already managed to see just how amazing the bomb was.

Even though it was a single-use item, it had to be truly very powerful to hurt a mid-stage Human Immortal so.

If I could get a stockpile for the clan, or get the elites of the clan to carry a few each...

Then even Spiritual Body leveled people wouldn’t be afraid of Human Immortal level experts!

“Mass production is possible. Do you want to stock up on it?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. “However, I need to supply enough for our Spiritual Breeze Village first before I can supply you with them.”

Ye Zichen also realized just how useful a bomb would be from the situation.

Even though the storage of bombs was dangerous, nothing would happen as long as they were a bit more careful. If even that doesn’t work, then he could just buy a few spatial artifacts for them.

The most important thing is just how strong the bombs are. I can’t stay in the village forever. If anyone else causes trouble here, then I’ll throw him a bomb to show how friendly I am... More importantly, the person just now should be a high-ranking person in the Fire Cloud Gate.

Since we have a grudge now, I do have to leave the villagers a way to protect themselves.

“No problem, if you lack materials or manpower, you can come to me any time,” Zuo Mo nodded without any hesitation...

“We’ll see!” Ye Zichen smiled.

Then he took out his phone and sent a message to Yue Lao. “Mass

produce bombs. Produce as many as you can!”

## Chapter 517 – Zuo Qingcheng

---

“Here are the spatial artifacts you wanted,” Zuo Mo, who was dressed in a plain colored robe, chuckled Ye Zichen, who was sitting in the pavilion, a bracelet. The bracelet itself was pure black and seemed very insignificant.

Nobody could even imagine that the bracelet was actually a spatial artifact with a hundred meters squared capacity within.

“Thanks, how much was it?” Ye Zichen handed the bracelet over to a villager beside him and told him to give it to Xue Qi, before taking out his phone and getting ready to pay.

“Why so courteous? It’s a gift.”

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but shake his head and smile wryly. Only a rich woman like her could act so casually when giving away a spatial artifact like this in this around just outside the Immortal Region.

“Oh yeah, I already tested the second shipping of bombs you gave me. The effects are a bit worse than the first shipping,” Zuo Mo sat opposite Ye Zichen and raised his eyebrows.

It has already been half a month since the Fire Cloud Gate elder had caused trouble for them.

During so, Ye Zichen managed to get some bomb materials from Zuo Mo, which he handed over to Yue Lao to manufacture.

However, Zuo Mo’s answer validated Ye Zichen’s predictions. Part of the reason why the bombs Yue Lao and co. manufactured were so strong was due to the materials from the Heavenly Court being used. Using materials from around the Immortal Region produced slightly worse effects.

“How was it?”

“Earth Immortal experts could find it hard to defend against, but

it'll have very little effect against Human Immortal leveled experts," Zuo Mo smiled.

"How did you conduct your experiments?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows in curiosity.

However, Zuo Mo replied with smile which did not match her chilling words, "Of course we used people. The Treasure Tower has plenty of enemies, we can pretty much catch a few people wishing to do us harm every single day."

...

Ye Zichen couldn't help but gulp when he saw her smile.

Zuo Mo also smirked devilishly when she noticed his gaze, "Feel fortunate that you're my ally. Otherwise... Heh!"

Ye Zichen nodded with a tremble.

Seeing him like that, Zuo Mo giggled, "I'm just kidding. The Treasure Tower has equipment that allows us to detect energy. Do you think I'm so cold blooded that I would experiment using living people?" Zuo Mo rolled her eyes, then stood up from her chair with a shrug. "I have to organize an auction later, so I won't keep blabbering here. It doesn't look like you want me to stay here anyways."

"How could I think that? I can't be happier to have a beauty accompanying me," Ye Zichen smiled.

Zuo Mo twitched her mouth, "Do you even lack beauties? All of the ones I saw that day were all unparalleled beauties in their own right."

"Ahem... Since you're organizing the auction, then you would know. Are there any good treasures there?" Ye Zichen intentionally changed the topic. He had no interest in chatting with that woman about those sorts of matters.

Zuo Mo wrinkled her nose and snorted, "Go and see for

yourself.”

...

In the backstage of the Treasure Tower’s auction house in Maple City...

Zuo Liang called out at the staff to double check all the products.

Ye Zichen made a rough estimate and saw that there was at least fifteen experts of at least the Human Immortal level who were keeping watch.

What’s more, there was even a white-haired old man sitting on a nearby vine chair who looked to be a Sky Immortal level expert.

I guess Shi Qian’s robbery of the auction caused the Treasure Tower’s people to be a lot more careful.

“Lil’ Liang, how are the preparations going?” Zuo Mo raised her eyebrows.

Zuo Liang, who buried in work, turned around smiled when he saw the two of them. “Sis, Zichen-ge, you guys came as well. We more or less checked up on all of the products and already set the prices. All there is to do now is to wait for the auction to start.”

“Mmm, not bad,” Zuo Mo nodded.

At that very moment, the elder on the vine chair shot up, “Young Lady, when did you return?”

“Why are you so surprised?” Zuo Mo smiled meaningfully, then turned towards Ye Zichen and pointed at the plethora of items. “These are the auctioned items for this auction. Take a look at which ones you like and tell me directly. I’ll gift them to you.”

Just look at how she’s speaking. Rich people truly do whatever they want!

Ye Zichen smiled. He naturally would not ask her for the items since he has already been under her care a lot recently.

“Young Lady, you can’t just casually give these items away,” the elder knitted his eyebrows. “These are treasures that our Treasure Tower acquired either by a high price or risking our people’s lives. Just casually giving them away... Also, this is the backstage, aren’t you worried about bringing an outsider with ill intentions in?”

“Is Elder Lin scolding me?” Zuo Mo’s expression also darkened.

“No, this old man is merely stating the truth. If you want to gift your own treasures away, then this old man naturally will not say such things, but right now...”

“The entirety of the Treasure Tower is mine. What right do you have to say that these treasures are not?” With that, Zuo Mo snorted at the elder. “Elder Lin, aren’t you being too bossy?”

“Why is Big Sister Mo getting so angry? But you just said that the Treasure Tower is yours. I, the little sister, can’t really accept that,” at that moment, a beautiful lady walked in from the door.

Zuo Liang couldn’t help but raise his eyebrows when he saw her.

“Why did you come!?” Zuo Mo squinted her eyes.

The girl touched her chin with a smile. “I wouldn’t be able to hear big sister’s outrageous words if I didn’t come. Can you explain to little sister about who the Treasure Tower belongs to?”

“Zuo Qingcheng, hurry up and stop smiling in such a foxy manner. Speak properly when you are talking to your older sister. I seem to have heard doubts in your words?” Zuo Mo raised her eyebrows slightly.

Zuo Qingcheng pursed her lips and smiled, “Little sister doesn’t dare.”

“If you don’t dare, then disappear from my sight before I get angry,” a cold light flashed across Zuo Mo’s eyes.

“Yes, little sister will take her leave,” Zuo Qingcheng maintained her foxy smile, and left the room while twisting her waist. What’s

more, she also intentionally looked towards Ye Zichen flirtatiously right before exiting out of the door.

Even a long time after Zuo Qingcheng left, nobody in the room dared to even breathe.

“Who can explain to me why Zuo Qingcheng was here,” Zuo Mo swept her gaze over the other people in the room. Everyone she looked at lowered their heads.

“You aren’t speaking? Very well! It seems like all of you are very loyal towards the Treasure Tower, but aren’t loyal to me!” Zuo Mo nodded with a smile, then snorted. “I know my second uncle’s people are amongst you. Let me give you kind reminder. Don’t let me find you.”

## Chapter 518 – Jade Emperor has sent a friend request

---

“Who can explain to me just why that woman was there?” Zuo Qingcheng knitted her eyebrows and looked at the people around her coldly after leaving the auction house.

“Didn’t you all say that she was in the Endless Beast Region? Why was she at the auction house when I came over just now!? Who can give me an explanation?”

Smash.

Zuo Qingcheng smacked the peach wood table into smithereens, but everyone in the room continued to stay silent.

After a long time, a young man answered with a trembled, “Master told us that First Young Lady was in the Endless Beast Region. We didn’t say it!”

“Hmm?” Zuo Qingcheng squinted her eyes and looked at the young man before raising her eyebrows, “Why have I never seen you before?”

“I’ve only just joined Treasure Tower...” the young man lowered his head as he replied.

“Since you are new, then you already dare to argue?” Zuo Qingcheng’s expression darkened even more.

Then suddenly, the young man tore at the area around his throat as if an invisible hand was choking him.

Everyone else in the room all lowered their heads and did not dare to say anything. Not long later, the young man levitated off the ground.

He kicked out, while his eyeballs bulged.

A good five minutes later, the young man’s struggle gradually

began to weaken until he finally stopped struggling and was dropped onto the ground.

“Deal with him,” Zuo Qingcheng looked indifferently at the lifeless young man. When two people dragged him out, she spoke up once again. “Go and contact someone to destroy Zuo Mo’s auction regardless of the cost. Understood!?”

“Understood!” the people in the room nodded.

Zuo Qingcheng snorted, then smiled in satisfaction before the foxy smile surfaced on her face once again as she left the room.

...

“Zichen-ge, this is the room my sister arranged for you.”

Zuo Liang led Ye Zichen to a room on the eighth floor of the auction house with a smile.

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but shake his head with a soft sigh after seeing the arrangement of the room.

So luxurious.

There were plenty of expensive spiritual items within, and just stepping into it caused everyone to feel like their pores opened up.

“If you need anything, just press the bell by the window over here. There will be an attendant waiting outside to tend to your needs.”

“Okay,” Ye Zichen nodded with a smile. “Oh yeah, who was that woman just now?”

“Her? She’s our second uncle’s child,” Zuo Liang raised her eyebrows.

“It seems like Zuo Mo isn’t on particularly good terms with her?” Ye Zichen asked.

“It isn’t just now. They’re on extremely bad terms. They’ve always been like oil and water. What’s more, the Treasure Tower

is planning to elect a new Tower Head. Both my sister and Zuo Qingcheng are good candidates, so their relationship naturally worsened.”

“You don’t seem so hostile towards Zuo Qingcheng?” Ye Zichen raised her eyebrows.

“I’m different from them. My father actually died before I was born, and Zuo Mo-jie’s father adopted me in good will. I have no ambitions to become the Tower Head, so I naturally wouldn’t act like them,” Zuo Mo chuckled. “I’m leaving now since I still need to warm the audience up when the auction begins. If you need anything, just ask the attendant outside.”

“Alright, then go and busy yourself. Don’t mind me,” Ye Zichen nodded.

After Zuo Mo walked out of the room, Ye Zichen sat down by the window, which allowed him to see how the auction was going.

Ye Zichen chose to take out his phone using the time before the auction.

He clicked on Red Packet Server, and saw that the deities in the group were having a flame war once again.

Erlang Shen: Do you know just how long laozi endured you for? You’re blabbering on and on in the group with your alt. Do you dare to use your main!?

God of Thunder: Yeah. I have to watch you blabber every single day. Why are you so annoying?

Canopy Marshal: Dude, the Jade Emperor isn’t here, so even if you kiss ass here, he won’t be able to see!

God of Fortune: What a retard.

Taibai Jinxing used to be the peacemaker in the Heavenly Court’s chat group, but ever since he left the Heavenly Court, the task was left to Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li.

Since he saw that the deities in the group were about to fight, he couldn't help but try to calm them down.

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li: Everyone, just take a step back and leave it.

Little Prince: Old Li, don't mind me.

Little Prince: Yang Jian, Zhao Gaoming, Old Pig and Lei Zhenzi, you guys are seeking death. You actually dared to challenge Heavenly authority.

Erlang Shen: Don't bullshit if you can fight. Use your main account if you dare. See if laozi beats the shit out of you.

It seems like they are arguing with Little Prince.

To be honest, Ye Zichen didn't have any good impression of Little Prince. He had been speaking to the others like the big boss of the Heavenly Court from the get go. Since everyone in the group were real major deities, nobody could accept a suspicious person like him.

Little Prince: Hehe...

Erlang Shen: Oh wow, you dare to hehe? Grandson, you are truly sick of living aren't you. Speaking anymore is pointless. Fight me!

Little Prince: Hehe...

Bang.

Ye Zichen kicked Little Prince out of the group the moment the message was sent.

This brat has been destroying the serenity of the group from the very beginning. I can't allow such actions to proceed further.

Erlang Shen: Grandson, stop going hehe with laozi. Fight me.

"Alright, I already kicked him out of the group," Ye Zichen spoke up.

God of Thunder: Sky Sovereign is finally here. You should have

kicked him out from the start. He's been blabbering on and on and on these few days. He's got a problem with us playing cards, with us chatting etc. So damn annoying!

God of Fortune: Yeah: He's lucky that laozi doesn't know who he is. If I know, then... Hmph...

God of Fortune's meaning was obvious. If he knew who the kid was, he definitely would have dispersed all of the brat's fortune.

Erlang Shen: Bro, you finally came. That brat was truly lucky, otherwise, I would have broken his leg.

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li: Alright, calm down. He's already out of the group.

Erlang Shen: Hmmp, never mind. I don't want to care about that brat. Oh yeah, bro, since I'm not on duty today, how about I come down to play with you?

Canopy Marshal: Take Old Pig with you.

God of Thunder: Are you guys going to find Sky Sovereign? He's returned to the Heavenly Court?

Immortality Peach Fairy: I want to go as well.

Erlang Shen: Little girl, don't go. Watch your Immortality Peach Garden properly. Did the Queen Mother not punish you for the monkey stealing peaches? You really are forgetful.

Erlang Shen: My bro isn't in the Heavenly Court, he's over in the Immortal Region. You want to come?

God of Thunder: Immortal Region? Then never mind. I'm on duty today.

God of Fortune: I actually want to go quite a bit, but I can't leave. If Sky Sovereign comes to the Heavenly Court, then let's find a time and get together.

Erlang Shen: So only Old Pig and I will go. @Only Idealism, bro you free or not?

While the people in the group chatted about descending to go and find him, Ye Zichen felt his brain explode as he stared at a friend request.

Jade Emperor sent a friend request.

# Chapter 519 – The Jade Emperor’s alt account

---

Ye Zichen was extremely hesitant about what he should do when he saw the friend request.

The fact that the Jade Emperor sending him a friend request most definitely caught him off guard. He took a look at the method at which the Jade Emperor had found him, and saw that it was actually by a search.

Just how did the Jade Emperor find me?

There is definitely some sort of secret.

Ye Zichen bit his lips, then after hesitating for thirty seconds or so, he finally chose to accept it.

He naturally checked out their intimacy level the moment the he accepted the friend request.

O.

Cold.

Their intimacy level naturally showed just how they would chat later. Just as Ye Zichen was considering whether he should send the Heavenly Court Big Boss a message...

“Only Idealism.”

Jade Emperor proactively sent him a message.

Although Ye Zichen could not feel the Jade Emperor’s tone from the ice-cold words on the screen, he imagined that it was not very friendly.

“Big Boss Jade Emperor, what business do you have with this little one?”

“Hehe...”

That was the Jade Emperor's only reply.

Could he be laughing?

No, that's impossible. It definitely wasn't as simple as that.

"I wonder why Big Boss Jade Emperor is laughing?" Ye Zichen asked in a testing manner.

"Heh, is the fact that Sky Sovereign Nameless calling himself little one not worthy of this Emperor's chuckle? Sky Sovereign, there are only so few people who could call themselves as a Sky Sovereign out of the vast number of deities in the Heavenly Court."

Ye Zichen felt rather guilty when he saw Jade Emperor's reply.

The reason he was able to call himself Sky Sovereign was because the ex-butler of the Heavenly Court, Taibai Jinxing, had gotten him that position previously. Now that Taibai Jinxing had departed from the Heavenly Court, Ye Zichen naturally felt rather guilty when he came into contact with the Jade Emperor, the big boss of the Heavenly Court.

"Hahaha..."

Ye Zichen chuckled a bit. He didn't want to discuss about the topic, since he would definitely get found out sooner or later if he continued.

"Keep laughing. This Emperor has already checked. There are a total of twelve Sky Sovereigns in the Heavenly Court, and there isn't a position of Sky Sovereign Nameless."

...

Ye Zichen was worried. What is the Jade Emperor talking to me for? It feels like he wants to punish me.

"I wonder what exactly did Jade Emperor come to me for?"

"You still dare to ask this emperor? If it wasn't because you kicked this emperor's alt, would this emperor need to add you with

my main?”

Alt!

Stop kidding me. I wouldn't dare to kick your alt no matter what.

Wait, no, I really did seem to have just kicked an alt.

The Little Prince was destroying the serenity within the group. I kicked him, could it be that he...

“You are Little Prince?”

“Of course, this emperor was the prince of a certain kingdom before becoming a deity. Originally, this emperor was lurking rather well in the group. You are truly daring for kicking this emperor out of the group.

Is there something wrong with him!?

That was what Ye Zichen thought in his heart. He kept on arguing with the deities in the group without telling them who he is.

As the admin, I have to kick out people like that. Otherwise, my group will never grow.

But I can't tell him this. Jade Emperor is the Big Boss of the Heavenly Court. Although I'm not in the Heavenly Court, I'm still within the Three Realms. I definitely wouldn't have a good life if I piss him off.

“Jade Emperor, then what do you want to do?”

“I want to re-enter the group. After that, you are forbidden to tell others of this emperor's identity. This emperor is going to lurk in the group and see what those guys are doing every day!”

“No problem.”

The Jade Emperor stopped replying after Ye Zichen's response with a coy smile.

Back in the Red Packet Server, Yang Jian kept on talking about

descending, and had continuously mentioned Ye Zichen...

“I don’t really have much to do recently. If you guys want to come down, then do so!”

Erlang Shen: I waited for you for so long. Alright, since you said that, then Old Pig and I will go down now.

Canopy Marshal: Sky Sovereign, wait for me.

Immortality Peach Fairy: I want to see Big Brother a lot too...

God of Thunder: Sky Sovereign, come back to the Heaven Court and see us when you have time. I’m busy recently, so I can’t go down.

Chang’e: Can I come down as well?

Everyone else instantly stopped speaking when Chang’e spoke up. All of them knew about her relationship with Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen, who sat in the room, rubbed his nose. Should I let her come down or not?

Just as he was hesitating...

Little Prince entered the group through scanning the QR code.

God of Thunder: F\*ck this...

God of Fortune: How did this grandson come back in again?

Canopy Marshal: ...

Immortality Peach Fairy: Why do I have a foreboding feeling that a war is about to be triggered?

Yue Lao: Selling melon seeds, peanuts and water in the front line!

Little Prince: I truly feel hurt that you actually became like this as well.

God of Thunder: Can you stop blabbering? Sky Sovereign, hurry up and kick this brat.

Ye Zichen felt extremely troubled when he saw all the messages

mentioning him in the chat. The ignorant are fearless. That is definitely the truth.

They merely think that Little Prince is a retard. I wonder if they'll end up crying if they find out that the person they have been mocking all along is the Jade Emperor...

“Don't come to this sovereign for any matters related to Little Prince from now on. Ahem... But group members, try to argue less. We need harmony in the group. Alright, that's that.”

With that, Ye Zichen directly left the group. However...

God of Thunder: Heh, since Sky Sovereign isn't going to care, then Little Prince, speak less from now on so you don't piss everyone off.

God of Fortune: Don't let laozi find out who you are, otherwise I'll break your leg.

Canopy Marshal: Keeping doing what you're doing. Old Pig is going to go and find Sky Sovereign with Yang Jian.

God of Thunder: Go.

Little Prince: You guys are descending? Who allowed you to do that?

Erlang Shen: Retard.

While gunpowder filled the chat group, Ye Zichen put his phone aside, and grabbed a spiritual fruit he stole from Monkey Bro.

They really would weep out tears of despair if they end up finding out Little Prince's real identity.

Wait a sec, the preparation for the auction this time really is a bit too long. I've been waiting here for half an hour, and all the seats below have been filled. Why haven't the auction started yet?

“Did something bad happen?” Ye Zichen couldn't help but raise his eyebrows, while he couldn't help but think in that direction due to what had occurred in the prior auction.

At that very moment, someone knocked lightly on his door.

He glanced over, then put away his phone, which he had placed onto the table, then stood up and walked to the door.

When he opened the door, he saw a young man, who was obviously a rich person from first glance, around his age, smile at him.

“I wonder if I can come and sit in your room?”

## Chapter 520 – Mount Supreme

---

Ye Zichen was very certain that he had never met the young man standing in front of him before.

Since one shouldn't hit the smiling person, and the other person did had given Ye Zichen a chance to refuse through his tone or his expression, Ye Zichen nodded, then made way for the young man to enter.

“Brother, you really know how to enjoy yourself,” the young man said, mentioning the arrangement of the room.

Ye Zichen smiled, “It's the arrangement set up by the auction house. It has nothing to do with me.”

“I see. I had assumed it was your own arrangement,” the young man smiled. “I also have a room on the eighth floor, but I don't have such an arrangement. It seems like your relationships with the auction house people are quite good.”

“It's okay!” Ye Zichen remained vigilant before figuring out the intention of the person. “Brother, I wonder what you came here for?”

Hearing those words, the young man smiled, then brushed his hair back, “Bai Hai.”

“This one is [Ye Liangchen](#)!” Ye Zichen cupped his hands.

God knows whether this brat is using a false name or not. Since I'm not familiar with him, there's nothing wrong with me giving him a wrong name.

“So it's Brother Liangchen,” Bai Hai nodded without any visible suspicions. “As for the reason I came here, it is very simple. Brother should be able to guess it, right?”

“I seriously can't,” Ye Zichen laughed.

“We're both key possessors, there's no need to play dumb,

right?” Bai Hai chuckled.

Ye Zichen was momentarily stunned when he heard those words. Key.

He touched the token in his pocket, which had been given to him by Ruan Qingtian. Could Bai Hai be talking about this?

“See? Brother Liangchen’s actions have already sold yourself out,” Bai Hai continued to smile faintly. “I saw my key light up when I came into the auction house, so I knew that there definitely were other key holders around. Although I do feel like it is a bit sudden, I still couldn’t help but disturb you.”

“Then what did you come here for? To say hi, or perhaps, you want to snatch it off me?” Ye Zichen’s gaze became sharp as he spoke. Although he didn’t care much about the key, he wasn’t going to let random people just take something of his away.

“Brother Liangchen, this is a misunderstanding,” Bai Hai quickly waved his hands. “How would I dare to snatch it from someone related to such a huge auction house. Even if I was really going to do that, I would at least find a place devoid of people, right?”

“You are pretty blunt!”

“I’m just telling the truth,” Bai Hai smiled. “I only came here to see Brother Liangchen, and see if there might be a chance for us to get on good terms. That way, when Mount Supreme opens up, we’ll be able to help each other if we end up bumping into one another. Even if I can’t... then at least, I can try to avoid becoming enemies.”

“Mount Supreme?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“Does Brother Liangchen not know?” Bai Hai was shocked, then smiled meaningfully. “Like it’s name suggests, Mount Supreme is a divine mountain that can give birth to supremes. Brother, you should know that although an Immortal King is extremely strong in the Lower Three Realms, they are merely ants in the Upper

Three Realms.”

Ye Zichen could sense the disdain Bai Hai had towards the Immortal Kings of the Lower Three Realms from his words.

It was as if he didn't think much of the entire Lower Three Realms. Could this Bai Hai be someone from the Upper Three Realms?”

“Brother Liangchen, no need to think so much. Mount Supreme is about to open up. I hope you will be merciful when we have to fight each other then.” With that, Bai Hai left the room.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen sat on the sofa in shock as Bai Hai's words echoed through his mind.

Mount Supreme.

So a supreme lies above the Immortal Kings!

However, self-mockery quickly surfaced on his face. What Supreme? I'm merely a small fry who has only just reached the Human Immortal level. Supreme...

It is still unknown whether I can even become an Immortal King.

At that very moment, a sudden cheer rose up from the seventh floor. Ye Zichen looked out the window, and as he expected, Zuo Mo had appeared.

Ye Zichen used his spiritual energy to search around the auction house, and while he did so, he felt a few extremely sharp auras also sweep his way.

It seems like Zuo Mo has been setting up defensive measures for the auctions. Shi Qian destroying the auction last time affected both her and the Treasure Tower greatly. She could not tolerate a similar situation to happen once again.

What's more, Ye Zichen also detected a spiritual formation on the roof, which should be used to prevent someone from entering through there.

“Everyone, you have waited for a long time. I am very thankful for you all attending this auction of the Treasure Tower. As everyone knows, normally, we hold an auction every half a year, but the main reason we are hosting another one is because of the fiasco last time.”

“Everyone, thank you for supporting us. Later on, our auctioneers will come onto the stage one by one, I hope everyone...” Zuo Mo, who was in plain clothes, smiled as she spoke on the stage. However, before she finished...

Dong dong dong.

Urgent footsteps were heard from the backstage. Not long later, Zuo Liang shouted out anxiously, “Sis, someone came to rob us.”

“What!?” Zuo Mo raised her eyebrows. She looked towards every single place where she had situated some guards.

All of the experts were confused. Nobody broke through from here.

What’s more, no strange people had appeared. Just how is the auction being robbed?

Bang.

Before anyone could react, a loud commotion sounded out in the back stage. The plank shattered, and a thin man with a red cloth tied around his face climbed onto the auction stage with a large cloth bag in his hand.

“People should climb up wherever they fell down. Grandpa was stopped last time, but try and catch grandpa this time!”

Shi Qian!

Ye Zichen instantly guessed who robbed the auction, while Zuo Mo was also shocked.

However, more than that, she was furious...

Shi Qian had tried to rob her once before already, and this time,

he directly shouted cockily to her face. She... couldn't endure it anymore!

“Stop him!” Zuo Mo pointed towards him and yelled.

All of the experts in the auction house except the Sky Immortal leveled elder made their move.

“Ha, didn't grandpa say it before? Puny Human Immortals actually want to catch laozi? Stop dreaming!”

Shi Qian's escaping skills was top tier, and even though there was ten-odd Human Immortal experts attacking him together, he still had a calm expression on his face.

In mere moments, Shi Qian already broke through to a window of the auction hall...

If nothing happened, then he should be able to escape.

Creak.

Zuo Mo clenched her teeth and fists with great reluctance. Yet, to everybody's surprise, Shi Qian, who was originally able to escape, actually stopped.

“Dude, why did you come again!?”

Ye Liangchen (叶良辰) is a Chinese internet celebrity who quickly rose to fame when a screenshot of his extremely cocky words used in a conversation was exposed to the public.

## Chapter 521 – Pitiful Shi Qian

---

Shi Qian, who was standing at the window, was about to cry. He grabbed his huge cloth sack tightly while looking at the tall man standing in front of him.

His wry smile caused the man in front of him to be confused...

“Have we met before?”

“?” This time, it was Shi Qian’s turn to be shocked. He looked at the man in front of him dumbly and raised his eyebrows. “Dude, you don’t recognize me?”

“Should we know each other?” The man was also confused.

Shi Qian’s crying face instantly revealed a joyous expression when he heard the man’s confused reply.

“F\*ck, you scared laozi to death. Big bro, since we don’t know each other, can you let little bro have this window position? Little bro has to run away,” Shi Qian said in a hurry. The Human Immortal experts were chasing after him like mad dogs. He didn’t have much time to waste at all.

The man subconsciously made way for Shi Qian, allowing Shi Qian to climb out of the window...

“Wait a moment,” yet, the man stopped Shi Qian before he could even run far.

Shi Qian’s expression drastically changed. He gulped, then turned back to see the man grab him, “Big bro, don’t we not know each other?”

Shi Qian inwardly sobbed. So this guy was just messing with me?

He was truly speechless. I’ve only acted twice, and was stopped by this guy both times. Should I say that it is fate? Or am I just unlucky...

“I really can’t recall who you are, but my bro has told me to

capture you,” the man shrugged helplessly, then climbed in through the window. At that moment, Ye Zichen had already ran over to the seventh floor’s auction stage.

The man who captured Shi Qian waved towards Ye Zichen and walked over.

Bang.

The man dropped Shi Qian onto the floor.

Zuo Mo took about three seconds to react to what was going on before knitting her eyebrows and shouting out, “Suppress him!”

The surrounding Human Immortal experts all rushed over.

Just as Zuo Mo wanted to thank the man, she saw the man walk in front of Ye Zichen.

“Bro!”

“Yang Jian, you truly came on time,” Ye Zichen smiled and patted his shoulders, then raised his eyebrows. “Why isn’t Old Pig with you?”

“Old Pig...”

“I’m here, I’m here!”

Bang.

The wall of the seventh floor of the auction house shattered, and a muscular man with an oily face, and dressed in a faint purple robe, walked in. He looked very much like a person who often took hyaluronic acid injections.

“Who!? An associate!?” the auction house people put up their guards.

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but facepalm and smile wryly when he saw this. Does [Zhu Ganglie](#) not know how to walk in through the door?

Then he glanced towards the various Treasure Tower people and

waved towards Zuo Mo, “Tell your people that that person is my friend, so there’s no need for them to be so nervous.”

“Alright,” Zuo Mo’s eyes shone with an interested light as she scanned Ye Zichen, Yang Jie and Zhu Ganglie in turn.

Then she turned around to comfort her Treasure Tower people.

At the same time, Ye Zichen also walked over, “Don’t you know how to walk through the door?”

“You’re Sky Sovereign? That shitty brat Yang Jian is a true piece of work. He left while I was buying stuff to eat. Since I don’t have the money for over here, I had to give the shopkeeper a spiritual pearl. Ahh, I, Old Pig, lost so much,” Zhu Ganglie said as he twitched his mouth towards Yang Jian.

“You only know how to eat. Are you a pig!?” Yang Jian scolded.

“Oh, you really are right. I am a pig,” Zhu Ganglie glared and snorted.

Ye Zichen couldn’t be more speechless when he heard the response. But I suppose only Zhu Ganglie is capable of calling himself a pig with such confidence.

There’s nothing wrong with what he said at all. He is a pig after all.

“Say, can you guys care about me a little. It feels rather terrible to lie on the floor,” Shi Qian, who was left off to the side, couldn’t help but speak up.

The Treasure Tower guest chamberlain suppressing him smacked his head, “Stay put.”

“Seriously, laozi is the Divine Thief Shi Qian. Even if you guys did capture me, you should let laozi retain a bit more dignity, right? Otherwise, just how is laozi supposed to raise my head in front of people when I return?” Shi Qian complained as he was on the floor.

Ye Zichen squatted down and smiled, “You still want to return?”

“Who’re you?” Shi Qian looked up and snorted. “I’m telling you. Just keep holding me like this if you dare. Otherwise, even if you lock me up, laozi can still run out. If I didn’t bump into that guy, do you think you guys could have captured me?”

“It seems like you are very confident in your escaping skills?”

“Not very confident. It’s extremely confident,” Shi Qian snorted, then struggled. “Hurry up and let laozi stand up. This floor is so damn cold. Can you guys afford to make me catch a cold?”

“Let him stand up,” Ye Zichen smiled.

The guest chamberlains suppressing him all looked towards Zuo Mo.

“Do as he said. From now on, his words are equivalent to my words,” Zuo Mo replied.

The guest chamberlains quickly let Shi Qian go.

Shi Qian, who managed to get free, patted away the dust on his body and snorted, “That’s more like it.”

Slap.

Just as Shi Qian was acting cockily, someone smacked the back of his head.

“Which grandson... Big Bro, how did this little one piss you off now?” Shi Qian instantly gave up when he saw that it was actually Yang Jian who smacked him.

“Laozi remembers who you are now. You’re that brat I caught last time, right? I’m telling you, be more polite when you speak with my bro, otherwise, laozi will beat you up,” Yang Jian raised his hands to scare Shi Qian as he spoke.

Shi Qian instantly shrank his neck and twitched his mouth bitterly.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but chuckle, "Say, your luck is seriously terrible. You actually bumped into me both times when you came to rob this place."

"Hmmpf..." Shi Qian snorted. However, the moment he saw Yang Jian frown, he instantly changed his expression. "Yes, yes, yes, I'm unlucky! Say it, just what do you want me to do? Do you want me to steal for you or what? Didn't I just rob you a few times, it's not like I succeeded, so why get so worked up?"

Ye Zichen continued to smile when he saw how Shi Qian acted.

This Divine Thief is rather funny!

"I don't want you to help me steal anything, I just want to ask you a question. If you answer truthfully, then I can let you go."

"You sure?" Shi Qian's eyes brightened. Then he glanced at the people around the room, who were glaring at him. "Are your words of any use?"

"Yes," Zuo Mo replied. "If he says to let you go, nobody will stop you."

"Girlie, and just who are you supposed to be!?" Shi Qian rolled his eyes.

The guest chamberlains of the Treasure Tower instantly roared with a scowl, "This is the young lady of our Treasure Tower. Be more courteous when you are in front of her."

"What are you getting mean for? Do you think you're my big bro?" Shi Qian rolled his eyes, then shrugged towards Ye Zichen. "Ask away. I'll answer whatever you ask!"

Zhu Ganglie (猪刚鬣) is Zhu Bajie's original name.

## Chapter 522 – Trouble

---

The auction naturally was unable to continue with such a fiasco occurring again.

Zuo Mo sent the audience apologetically, while Ye Zichen brought over a chair from the backstage and sat down to look at Shi Qian.

“Why did you become a robber?”

“Don’t put it so terribly, alright? I’m a thief!” Shi Qian replied in annoyance. “Honor amongst thieves, have you never heard of that?”

“Hmmph, fine! Then why did you come to rob, no, steal... Why did you repeatedly come to steal from the Treasure Tower?”

“The Treasure Tower is rich,” Shi Qian licked his lips. “Laozi doesn’t use whatever I steal. Laozi is a gentleman thief. Laozi gives all the treasures I steal to those civilians who can’t even afford to pay for their daily necessities.”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows when he heard that.

Then, Shi Qian continued, “The first time I came, it was because I didn’t understand the situation well. I thought the Treasure Tower ripped civilians off. After returning, I went to research a bit and found out that the Treasure Tower would often give food to the poor. That’s why I decided not to steal from them anymore.”

“But you still came again,” Ye Zichen smiled.

“The situation this time is different,” Shi Qian waved. “Someone contacted me this time and told me to destroy this auction. I wanted to refuse, but the offer was too alluring. Thus, I decided to go against my morals and do it. I never expected to bump into this big bro once again!”

Shi Qian looked over at Yang Jian with a tearful expression, then

raised his eyebrows. “Oh yeah, if we’re talking about robbery, this big bro is the real robber. He robbed me of the stuff laozi stole last time. Why aren’t you guys capturing him?”

“That’s my bro. He returned the stuff he got from you back to the Treasure Tower,” Ye Zichen replied calmly.

Zuo Mo, who stood on the side, smiled, “No wonder this savior didn’t want anything except the Barrier Breaking Grass. That was your decision, wasn’t it? I was wondering where you got the ingredients from when you gave me the Barrier Breaking Pills.”

“Ahem...” Ye Zichen coughed, then quickly changed the topic by turning towards Shi Qian. “You said just now that someone told you to destroy this auction?”

“Yes!” Shi Qian answered resolutely.

“Who?” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes.

Zuo Mo’s expression also darkened upon hearing that.

In her perspective, the people who would want to destroy the auction were limited. Currently, the Tower Head was going to be elected once again, so the other party was definitely going to make things difficult for her.

As long as they could ruin the elders’ impression of her, then those other people might be able to take the opportunity and raise to the top.

“The person who went to find me was an old man, he was rather strong... Part of the reason I came was because I was forced by this old man. Although I’m good at escaping, I can’t really do much against a Sky Immortal!” Shi Qian shrugged and smiled wryly.

Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo looked at each other.

Old man.

Sky Immortal!

The two of them were able to see that they had thought of the

same possibility.

At that very moment, Elder Lin, who had not yet appeared, hurried up from the sixth floor. When he saw Shi Qian, who had been suppressed, his expression froze...

“Yes, yes, yes. It’s that old man!”

The Treasure Tower people looked over, and revealed shocked expressions when they saw that it was Elder Lin.

Zuo Mo smiled meaningfully.

Noticing everyone’s strange demeanors, he immediately walked over and asked as if he didn’t know what was going on, “What’s going on? This old man noticed there was something strange to the North, so I went over to take a look.”

“Elder Lin, are you sure?” Zuo Mo smiled faintly. “This divine thief just told me that you asked him to destroy this auction.”

“Ridiculous!” Elder Lin’s expression sank. He rolled up his sleeves to his elbow, then quickly walked in front of Shi Qian with a snort. “Just kill a scum like him.”

His right hand flared up, and an intense killing intent could be felt from his body as he smacked his hand towards Shi Qian.

“Elder Lin, why are you in such a hurry? Wouldn’t we know if it is actually ridiculous after we confront each other?” Ye Zichen raised his hand and stopped Elder Lin’s attack. Even though Ye Zichen had two layers of protection on him, the attack still turned his arm numb, and the blood in his chest to boil.

Shi Qian, who stood behind Ye Zichen, was rather surprised...

This brat saved me.

“Ye Zichen,” Zuo Mo quickly supported Ye Zichen with a worried look.

Both Yang Jian and Zhu Ganglie glared at Elder Lin and wished to attack him for daring to attack their bro.

“Yang Jian, Old Pig!” Ye Zichen called sullenly.

Both Yang Jian and Zhu Ganglie retreated with a frown.

“Shitty brat, you dare!?” Elder Lin’s heart was filled with shock. My enraged smack was actually stopped by that brat.

He was indeed the one who had sought Shi Qian out. Since the title of the divine thief was not just for show, he thought that Shi Qian would be able to fulfill his task.

His return was supposed to be perfectly timed.

When Shi Qian succeeds, he would be able to use the opportunity to complain to the Council of Elders about Zuo Mo’s faults. He never expected Shi Qian to be caught.

Since he would not allow his actions to come to light, he... could only shift the blame.

“Young Lady, this brat has been colluding with Shi Qian. They actually have ill intentions towards you. You should know very clearly that I’m on your side. The reason they’ve blamed me is to weaken your influence in the clan! Young Lady, think about how wholeheartedly Old Lin has worked for you all these years. Don’t you believe me?” Elder Lin kneeled onto the floor, and spoke in a manner that caused others to be moved.

However, Ye Zichen merely smiled towards him, while Zuo Mo laughed coldly.

“Wow, wholeheartedly. You want to say that Ye Zichen got close to me under Qingcheng’s orders?”

“This old man is uncertain, but he definitely isn’t a good person,” Elder Lin glared with bloodshot eyes.

“Old man, you really are shameless. I, Divine Thief Shi Qian, have always been completely truthful. It was clearly you who told laozi to wreck this place. You even said that after it’s done, all of the treasures would be mine, and you would even give me three

percent of the Treasure Tower's profits. It has nothing to do with this little bro at all. You're actually trying to shift the blame?" Shi Qian retorted.

Elder Lin merely snorted, "Listen to what's wrong with your words. It's one thing that the treasures all belong to you, but three percent of the profits afterwards? This old man is merely the leader of the Guest Chamberlain Council, how could I possibly give you such conditions."

"You are truly shameless!" Shi Qian roared in anger.

Zuo Mo, who stood on the side, also raised her eyebrows and smiled. "How is it impossible? As long as you drag me down, Qingcheng will be able to rise, and when she does, so will her dogs. How is it... impossible for you not to give this sort of condition?"

"Young Lady!" Elder Lin said frantically. "Why don't you believe me!"

"Ye Zichen, what do you think we should do?" Zuo Mo ignored Elder Lin, who kneeled on the floor, and looked towards Ye Zichen, who had turned silent.

"Kill him," Ye Zichen squinted his eyes. "Leaving someone like him behind is leaving trouble on your doorstep."

## Chapter 523 – Immunity Medallion and Tower Head Token

---

None of the Treasure Tower people expected Zuo Mo to think so highly of Ye Zichen. She didn't ask her guest chamberlains about what to do and instead asked Ye Zichen, who had nothing to do with the Treasure Tower.

At the same time, they never expected Ye Zichen to actually make such a decision...

Kill.

This is a Sky Immortal level expert, and could be counted as amongst the peak fighting force of the Three Realms.

He actually said kill?

However, his decision was naturally not the most important. Their Young Lady's decision as the most important.

Since Ye Zichen was not someone of the Treasure Tower, he naturally would not care about a Sky Immortal fighting force, but as the future head of the Treasure Tower, their Young Lady should have her own considerations.

“Then we'll do as you say!”

Yet, Zuo Mo directly agreed without any hesitation.

It was a situation that neither the Treasure Tower people nor any other people could believe.

“Young Lady, Elder Lin is a Sky Immortal...” a guest chamberlain couldn't help but speak out.

Zuo Mo merely smiled indifferently, “So what if he's a Sky Immortal? Since keeping him around is trouble, then so what even if he's an Immortal King?”

The guest chamberlains turned silent when they heard her

indifferent tone, and those who wanted to stop her all shut their mouths.

“What right do you have to just easily decide on this old man’s fate? The reason this old man came to the Treasure Tower was because the Tower Head bowed personally and invited me. What right do you have to decide to kill this old man without the Tower Head here!?” Elder Lin snorted with a frown.

Zuo Mo smiled with a nod, “Indeed, my father personally invited you, but do you still remember the reason he initially invited you? It was for the better future development of the Treasure Tower. Even when the Treasure Tower faces internal conflict, he wished you to be fair. That was why he appointed you as the leader of the guest chamberlains. It wasn’t for you to disturb the internal order.

Do you think my father and I really couldn’t see what you have done? Through your high status, you extorted others for your own benefit. You also used your own position to take items for your own use, and falsely report the price of products in order to harm the profits of the elders. Do you really think... we don’t know anything?” Zuo Mo’s expression turned colder and colder.

All of the guest chamberlain’s expressions changed drastically, while Elder Lin’s expression also turned for the worse.

Zuo Mo smiled and took a step forward. “I know plenty of your crimes. Do you want me to list them out one by one?”

“You’re full of crap,” Elder Lin snorted. “I can tell that you have been blinded by this brat. As a candidate of the next Tower Head, you ignore justice and merely focus on your romantic relationship. You have no right to become the next Tower Head!”

“That decision is not up to you,” Zuo Mo continued to smile indifferently, then twitched her mouth. “You have committed far too many crimes, but you should not have tried to ruin the Treasure Tower’s reputation. We have tolerated you for so long because we wished for you to realize your wrongs. However, you

are truly a disappointment.”

“Oh? Why is it so crowded here?” At that moment, Zuo Qingcheng walked in from the stairs.

She looked at Zuo Mo playfully, then raised her eyebrows, “Big sis, what are you doing? Elder Lin is actually kneeling towards you? Do you not know of Elder Lin’s contribution and hard work? Big sis, you are not the Tower Head yet, how could you do something like this?”

“Since when were you allowed to educate me?” Zuo Mo glared at Zuo Qingcheng. “Didn’t I already say it just now? This isn’t a place for you to be, why are you still coming here?”

“We’re both people of the Treasure Tower, why can’t I come to the Treasure Tower’s territory?” Zuo Qingcheng walked over with a smile and helped Elder Lin up. “Elder Lin is a valued member of our Treasure Tower. Even if he has committed crimes, he should be judged by the Tower Head. You are unworthy of doing that.”

With that, Zuo Qingcheng begun to walk out with Elder Lin. “Elder Lin, let’s go. No need to argue with her.”

“Hmmpf, I’m definitely going to report you in properly when I get back,” Elder Lin snorted coldly towards Zuo Mo, then began to leave with Zuo Qingcheng.

“I want to see who dares to step out of here without my permission!”

Whoosh.

A woman stood out from every single one of the eight directions on the seventh floor. They were all elites that Zuo Mo trained in secret.

All of these women were pretty, but more importantly...

They were strong.

Complete stage Human Immortal leveled auras radiated

outwards.

Zuo Qingcheng, who was about to leave, turned her head back and smiled, “Is big sis going to use violence on little sister here?”

“It’s none of your business here, but you are forcefully interrupting. I don’t mind acting against you here at all,” Zuo Mo’s face was dark, while her chilling gaze caused Zuo Qingcheng’s expression to freeze.

She isn’t kidding, she really wants to act here.

“Hahaha... Hahahaha!” Elder Lin suddenly laughed loudly. He turned back with a dark look and held a gold medallion in his hand. “This is the Immunity Medallion which Tower Head gave me. Which one of you dare to act against me without the Tower Head?”

“I never thought that what you asked my father for was actually this. It seems like you have long expected this to happen?” Zuo Mo’s expression did not change.

Elder Lin smiled darkly. “People should always have something to back themselves up. With the Immunity Medallion, only the Tower Head can decide what to do with me. You... are not worthy!”

“That is very true, but since even you know to leave some backup for yourself, do you think my father doesn’t? Ye Zichen!” Zuo Mo suddenly looked towards Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen instantly withdraw the token he had gotten from Zuo Mo through Yang Jian from his phone, “You’re asking for this?”

Ye Zichen handed the token over with a smile.

Zuo Mo nodded, “It really is with you.”

Then, she held the token in her hands and said coldly, “This is the Tower Head Token. Seeing it is the same as seeing the Tower Head. Now, I announce with the Tower Head Token in hand. From

today onwards, Lin Xiong is kicked out of the Council of Guest Chamberlains. Due to him cooperating with enemies to damage the Treasure Tower's reputation, I order him to be killed! As for those who begs on his behalf... they shall be treated in the same manner!"

Zuo Mo's fierce words instantly pushed Lin Xiong to the corner.

Zuo Qingcheng also pulled her hands away in secret.

Lin Xiong was merely one of her pieces. The only reason she even came over was due to his powerful cultivation and status in the clan.

However, since Zuo Mo had revealed the Tower Head Token, Zuo Qingcheng did not wish to risk anything.

"Kicked out of the Council of Guest Chamberlains. Hahaha..." Lin Xiong continued to laugh loudly even under such condition. His gaze instantly turned cold. "Girlie, it's not like this old man didn't give you a chance. You forced me to do this! Kill me? This old man wants to see who's going to do the killing here!"

Now, a problem arose.

All of the guest chamberlains at the scene were of the Human Immortal level, and even Zuo Mo's elite forces were of the Human Immortal level.

The difference between a Sky Immortal and Human Immortal was like a mountain that cannot be overcome. The Three Realms did have a lot of Human Immortal level experts, but only one in ten thousand were able to break through into the Sky Immortal level...

Who could kill someone like that?

## Chapter 524 – Unable to Withstand Flicking

---

All of the surrounding guest chamberlains were unsure of what to do after Lin Xiong spoke up.

They needed to obey the request of Zuo Mo, who held the Tower Head Token in her hands. However, the other side was a Sky Immortal level expert, so were they supposed to go and die?

Between their life and loyalty, they preferred the former.

“Girlie, you want to make a move against this old man? Heh! You should look at just how capable are the people around you first. When you reach the Underworld, make sure to complain to the Yama Kings and tell them that it was your ignorance, which caused your demise,” Lin Xiong laughed maniacally. The reaction of the other people around him was the reason why he acted so cocky.

The guest chamberlains on the scene had been all nurtured by him. He understood, better than anyone else present, just what they were capable of. He was the heavens here, and nobody would be able to do anything to him.

“Do it,” Zuo Mo glared with a cold gaze. The surrounding guest chamberlains trembled and did not dare to approach Lin Xiong. However, Zuo Mo’s female subordinates all dashed forward fearlessly.

“Heh, you’re all lovely women, so you should have fun with men properly. You’re all too naïve to fight this old man.”

Bang.

Zuo Mo’s eight complete stage Human Immortal experts fell to the ground in mere moments.

Everyone raised their eyebrows when they saw that.

A Sky Immortal is actually so strong!?

Only Zuo Mo bit her lips with a frown, “You broke through!”

“Heh, it’s too late for you to realize that now!” Lin Xiong snorted coldly as he revealed his strength of a mid stage Sky Immortal.

“Die!”

Zu Mo and Lin Xiong were only a mere ten meters apart, and that distance was something that a Sky Immortal level expert could reach in a blink of an eye.

“Go!” At that very moment, Ye Zichen stood in front of Zu Mo then roared.

Lin Xiong suddenly felt his charging body stop. He turned around, only to see a rake dug into his shoulder.

Then, before he could even comprehend what was going on, Yang Jian appeared in front of him, picked his own ear, then poked Lin Xiong’s forehead.

“Laozi hates people ignoring me. You never even did so much as look at laozi. Do you really think your Grandpa Yang Jian is weak!?”

Bang.

Yang Jian flicked Lin Xiong’s forehead, causing the latter to fly backwards.

“Your Grandpa Pig said come back!” Zhu Ganglie used his Nine Tooth Rake to pull Lin Xiong back exactly where Yang Jian had flicked him.

“Oh, you came back, then here you go again.”

“Come back again!”

“Oh wow, you came back again. Then let me flick you again.”

It was clear that Yang Jian and Zhu Ganglie were merely having fun Lin Xiong. In the middle of their playing around, Zhu Ganglie actually handed Yang Jian the rake so that he could go and flick Lin Xiong a few times himself.

And thus, the flicking continued for several tens of times more...

Lin Xiong's head was already swollen from all the flicking Yang Jian and Zhu Ganglie had done.

When they finally removed the rake from his shoulder, Lin Xiong wobbled like a drunk man, then finally fainted, falling to the floor.

"He really can't stand the flicking," Yang Jian shrugged bitterly.

Yet, the other guest chamberlains were shocked.

Just how strong are these two? They actually managed to play with the mid stage Sky Immortal level Elder Lin without using any spiritual energy at all.

"Bro, we helped you deal with that guy, but it has to be up to you guys to finish him. It isn't good for us to kill here."

"Understood," Ye Zichen nodded with a smile and looked towards Zuo Mo. "I'll leave him to you."

"Imprison Lin Xiong, and bring him back to the clan to be judged by the Tower Head," in the end, Zuo Mo lacked the resolution to kill Lin Xiong on spot.

The surrounding guest chamberlains frantically bound Lin Xiong.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen also looked towards where Zuo Qingcheng stood...

"When did she run off?"

"Heh, whatever. I didn't actually wish to do anything to her," Zuo Mo snorted, then threw the token towards Ye Zichen once again.

"What are you doing?" He had accepted it when Yang Jian handed it to him previously, but after finding out that it was actually the Treasure Tower's Tower Head Token, he naturally did not dare to recklessly accept such a valuable thing.

“I gifted it to you before, so that’s that. I was merely borrowing it just now. This token will be very useful for you in the future, so go ahead and accept it!”

“...” Ye Zichen hesitated for a moment, then shrugged and put the token away.

Zuo Mo also spoke up once again, “I have to bring Lin Xiong back to the clan, so I won’t be in Maple City the near future. If you need anything from our Treasure Tower, then just bring the token over. Also, let me tell you something before I leave...”

“What is it?”

...

After the Treasure Tower people had left with the bound Lin Xiong, Ye Zichen took Yang Jian and Zhu Ganglie over to a restaurant.

“The ingredients used here is truly too terrible, but I, Old Pig, don’t mind,” Zhu Ganglie’s reputation of being a glutton was definitely not for show. Even though Ye Zichen had taken his gluttony into consideration, and ordered a lot more, it was still not enough for him.

And that was with neither Ye Zichen nor Yang Jian even touching the food.

“Laozi has always wondered how you survived the journey to the west,” Yang Jian couldn’t help but retort as he watched Old Pig.

“I, Old Pig, eats my fill with one meal, then I won’t feel hungry for half a month. What the heck do you know?” Zhu Ganglie twitched his mouth, then began to lick the plates as if nobody was watching him.

“This is seriously enough,” Yang Jian rolled his eyes and stood up from the chair. Then, he suddenly frowned and snorted. “Who’s outside!?”

Creak.

The door to the room opened, and Shi Qian, who they had captured earlier, walked in.

“Why did you come here?” Ye Zichen was rather surprised. Zuo Mo didn’t take Shi Qian away when they had left the Treasure Tower earlier.

Ye Zichen and the others had also ignored him.

I didn’t expect him to follow us.

“I came over with you guys,” Shi Qian scratched his head and licked his lips. “I, Shi Qian, am not an ungrateful person. You saved my life at the auction house earlier, so I’ll follow you from now on. My life is yours.”

“I... saved you?” Ye Zichen was surprised.

“Did you not?” Shi Qian raised his eyebrows. “I seem to recall you blocking the geezer’s palm when he tried to smack me to death!”

“Oh!” Ye Zichen nodded. I really didn’t think so much back then.

“See? You saved me back then, so I’ll follow you. What’s more, I feel like following you is better than working solo!” Shi Qian nodded excitedly.

“But I don’t steal...”

“None of that matters. What’s more, who actually wishes to do that kind of shady thing if they can do proper jobs?” Shi Qian’s words were filled with sincerity. “Boss, are you willing to accept me?”

All of a sudden, Zuo Mo’s words, which he hadn’t paid much attention to, rang in his mind.

“Are you interested in establishing a power? When you do, my Treasure Tower will be your firmest ally.”

# Chapter 525 – Got into huge trouble

---

After more discussion with Shi Qian, Ye Zichen had found out that he had been alone ever since he had arrived in the Immortal Region.

However, Ye Zichen did not ask too much about his life before that.

He really wasn't sure what he was going to do if Shi Qian is truly the Shi Qian mentioned in the Water Margin.

On the other hand, Yang Jian and Canopy Marshal chose to stay in the Immortal Region for three days. During so, Ye Zichen did question why they weren't in a hurry to return to the Heavenly Court.

We asked for sick leave.

That was the answer Yang Jian, who was eating a melon, gave.

Thus, they ended up staying in Spiritual Breeze Village.

Due to that, the two of them naturally took on the task of teaching the villagers about cultivation upon themselves. Even the cultivation of Master Li, who Zuo Mo had asked to stay in the village, begun to raise under Yang Jian and Canopy Marshal's guidance.

During this period of time, Ye Zichen only had one thing on his mind.

Should I establish my own power or not?

Being a general in a time of chaos was far safer than being a civilian. The main reason being that a general would be able to defend himself when the enemy attacks, while his soldiers could also help him out.

Although Ye Zichen wasn't currently in a time of chaos, he knew the Demon Realm would attack in the future. What's more, he also

needed to go to the Demon Realm to save Xiao Yumei. In that case, he had begun to feel like he had to become that “general”.

Yet, that’s where the problem lies. Just where am I supposed to get the money to establish my own force?

I had Maintaining Beauty Corporation to do that in the Modern Realm, but now...

The Treasure Tower?

Don’t joke around. Although our relationship is rather special, I can’t exactly ask her for money. Even if Zuo Mo is willing to give the money to me, then who would the power belong to?

Thus, Ye Zichen felt very troubled...

What’s more, he needed reputation to establish power, as well as a reason for others to follow him. Just having money was definitely not enough. At the very least, he needed a reason for others to follow him contentedly.

That was why Ye Zichen began to think about pill refining.

According to what he knew about the Three Realms, pill refiners were extremely valued existences. What’s more, high leveled pill refiners would always have a lot of experts following him.

Most importantly, pill refiners were all rich!

Zuo Mo had once told him that amazing pill refiners wouldn’t have any less resources when compared to the Treasure Tower as a whole.

“Old Lord Taishang is definitely a good choice, but this geezer simply refuses to teach me!” Ye Zichen scratched his head as he sat on the bed, while his phone was placed in front of him. “Ahh, let me try once again.”

Ye Zichen thought about it for a long time, then finally made up his mind to have a good chat with Old Lord Taishang once again.

As long as I use both pathos and ethos...

The old man will definitely be moved.

Ye Zichen clicked open his WeChat, but before he went over to find Old Lord Taishang, he saw a lot of people had sent messages towards him.

God of Thunder: Sky Sovereign, you screwed me over!

God of Fortune: Sky Sovereign, what you did was not right.

Yue Lao: What's going on?

Third Prince Nezha: The group exploded.

Immortality Peach Fairy: Big bro, the group exploded. Hurry up and take a look, the great deities of the Heavenly Court are all in trouble.

Ye Zichen was rather confused from all the private messages. He could only click into the Red Packet Server.

Utter silence.

The most recent message was from over half an hour ago.

That was a situation that was completely out of the norm for a group as popular as the Red Packet Server. Normally, it was possible to reach 999+ new messages in a mere ten minutes, not to mention thirty.

What happened here? Ye Zichen scratched his head and scrolled up, then saw...

Jade Emperor entered the group by scanning the QR code.

"This... should be huge trouble, right?" Ye Zichen muttered. Since Jade Emperor entered with his main account, then it was almost definitely because God of Thunder, God of Fortune and co. had angered Little Prince way too much.

That's why the Jade Emperor directly entered with his main account in a fit of rage...

Ye Zichen took a look at the subsequent chat history...

Jade Emperor: @everyone, come out!

Immortality Peach Fairy: Greetings to Jade Emperor.

Third Prince Nezha: Hello, Uncle Jade Emperor.

Barefoot Immortal: Oh my god, why did the monarch enter as well? This group is seriously popular!

God of Fortune: Greetings, supervisor.

God of Thunder: Boss, why did you come? Oh yeah @Little Prince. Supervisor, this grandson is pretending to be you all the time. I told him enter with his main but he refuses to. Hurry up and banish him to the mortal realm.

God of Fortune: Yeah, yeah, yeah. This grandson...

Jade Emperor: Hehe!

Jade Emperor: Laozi is Little Prince. Leizhenzi, Zhao Gongming, didn't you two ask this emperor to enter with my main?

Jade Emperor: Say something. C'mon!

Even though Ye Zichen wasn't present when Jade Emperor sent the message, he was able to imagine the atmosphere of the group at the time.

It was definitely utter silence.

Jade Emperor: Calling me grandson, grandson every single day was fun wasn't it? Leizhenzi, what exactly are you capable of? Zhao Gongming, didn't you say you're not going to give laozi my year end bonus?

Jade Emperor: Say it one more time!

Ye Zichen looked at the time the message was sent, then looked at the time all of the deities sent him the private messages. It seems like this was when they sent it all.

There's no need for me to read the rest of the chat history. Jade Emperor is definitely pissed, and blabbered on in the group.

The other deities naturally did not dare to anger him even more, so they all stopped chatting.

That's why the group became silent.

Ye Zichen closed the window. Other people are one thing, but I really feel sorry towards God of Thunder and God of Fortune. But what I even do? Jade Emperor didn't let me tell anyone.

Ye Zichen licked his lips, then sent a message to God of Thunder in a testing manner.

No reply.

Then he sent a message towards God of Fortune.

"Sky Sovereign, you really screwed us over hard," God of Fortune replied instantly.

"Wait, what's the situation over there for you guys?" Ye Zichen smiled coyly as he sent the message. But I suppose there was no need for me to ask.

How is it even possible for it to be good now that Jade Emperor has been angered so much!?

"Leizhenzi is chatting with the Jade Emperor inside. I'm waiting outside the palace, and it seems like it'll be my turn soon. Sky Sovereign, we aren't on bad terms, right? Since you knew that he's the Jade Emperor, why didn't you tell us?" God of Fortune truly wanted to cry. He actually swore at his own boss.

What's more, it was the big boss! Isn't that just asking for it!?

"I already reminded you guys, and told you not to argue with Little Prince. You guys didn't listen!"

The moment Ye Zichen sent that, he saw Yang Jian and Zhu Ganglie dip their heads and appear at the entrance to his room.

"It can't be, did the Jade Emperor seek the two of you out as well?"

“No,” Yang Jian said in a depressed manner. “But someone told us that Little Prince is the Jade Emperor. Old Pig and I seem to have argued with him before, so we’re going to hurry back and ask for our punishment!”

On the other hand, Canopy Marshal did not say anything, but his resentful-filled eyes...

You were screwing us over right!?

He’s definitely thinking that.

“Bro, I don’t know whether we can meet again after I return to the Heavenly Court this time, but it is definitely my honor to have become your sworn brother,” Yang Jian said as if he was saying his last words. “Bro, I’m in heaps of trouble this time. Ha... If I really end up falling... Remember to burn a few bottles of Erguotou, then burn a few doujins for me. Don’t let me be too lonely!”

With that, Yang Jian grabbed Canopy Marshal’s shoulder. “We’re off!”

“Wait a moment,” just as they were about to leave, Ye Zichen suddenly blurted out. “I’ll go back with you guys!”

# Chapter 526 – Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches

---

At the South Heaven's Gate.

Yang Jian and Canopy Marshal appeared at the gate wearing their armors, while a black hooded man, who had his face covered, stood beside them.

“Yo, True Lord, Marshal, where did you guys come back from?” The soldiers guarding the Heavenly Court hurried over with a smile, then looked towards the black robed man. “This is...”

“Don't ask what you shouldn't. You'd be scared to death if I tell you his identity,” Canopy Marshal scolded.

Yang Jian also spoke up, “Where is the Jade Emperor?”

“In the Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches. The two of you should have already seen some of your group, Lord God of Thunder and Lord God of Fortune were called into there. If I take a look at the time, they should still be in there,” one of the heavenly soldiers said with a smile.

Hearing that, Canopy Marshal and Yang Jian both gulped.

We really are in heaps of trouble.

“Fine, just go and patrol properly. We're off to see the Jade Emperor,” Yang Jian said softly, then called over a piece of cloud, which he climbed onto with the black robed man.

Meanwhile, Canopy Marshal also flew up into the air beside Yang Jian, then ventured towards the palace.

The Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches was the greatest palace within the South Heaven's Gate, and the three people arrived outside of it very quickly.

God of Fortune, who had told Ye Zichen earlier that he was

waiting outside the palace, had already disappeared, making it seem like he already entered.

As the three of them stood at the foot of the staircases outside the palace, Canopy Marshal licked his lips repeatedly, “Are we really going up?”

“What are we supposed to do even if we don’t?” Yang Jian sighed softly. “We did insult the Jade Emperor. Right now, the two of us are officials in the Heavenly Court, we’re not free like the monkey is.”

“But the Jade Emperor didn’t look for us. Perhaps, he...” Just as he was about to finish his words, Yang Jian and Canopy Marshal’s phone buzzed simultaneously.

They immediately took out their phones, but when they saw the messages, they looked as if they were already dead.

“The Jade Emperor sought you guys out?” The black robed man couldn’t help but ask.

Yang Jian nodded, then towed his phone away.

Canopy Marshal couldn’t help but mutter, “Now we’re completely screwed. Monkey Bro said before that the Jade Emperor is kind of petty in the first place...”

“But what can we really do? We have to keep going,” Yang Jian tidied up his armor, then turned towards the black robed man. “Bro, how about you return to your celestial manor to rest for a bit. Old Pig and I will go over to find you when we come out?”

“I’m going with you guys.”

“Sky Sovereign is truly nice. With Sky Sovereign here, the geezer Jade Emperor might give him face and don’t hand us overly heavy punishments,” Canopy Marshal chuckled.

Yang Jian looked towards the black robed man seriously, then began walking up the stairs to the palace.

...

“True Lord Erlang, Canopy Marshal!” A brown haired man with a pale face called out with a bit of hesitation outside the palace.

Canopy Marshal raised his eyebrows and smiled, “[Brother Wang Mo](#), it’s actually you on duty. Where are the others?”

“The other three older brothers went to play cards!” Wang Mo nodded with a smile. “Why did you guys come over right now? The Jade Emperor is enraged right now. I advise you guys not to enter!”

“I, Old Pig, don’t want to go in, but... the Jade Emperor told us to come. What’s going on inside?” Canopy Marshal said in a troubled manner. He was banished to the mortal realm before due to enraging the Jade Emperor. If that happens again...

He thought back to the number of people who embarked to the Journey to the West. It was four, and this time... It seems like it’s four of us as well.

If I have to make the journey to the west to obtain the sutras once again, then which of us will become the master this time? Hmm, I do have experience, so I can do that. Yang Jian and God of Thunder are pretty decent as fighting forces, so we won’t be in too much danger. We also don’t need to worry about food and drinks with God of Fortune around.

When he thought like that... It seems like getting banished down there sounds like a pretty good deal!

“God of Fortune chatted quite a bit with me earlier, and Leizhenzi has been getting scolded inside the entire time. The situation isn’t looking good. But the Great Sage came just now, so I don’t know the current situation!” Wang Mo replied calmly.

Yang Jian and co. looked towards each other.

Canopy Marshal also raised his eyebrows and smiled, “You said that my Monkey Bro came!?”

“Mhmm, he entered not long ago,” Wang Mo nodded.

“There shouldn’t be any problems with Monkey Bro here,” Canopy Marshal let out a sigh of relief. He was the one who called the Great Sage over as he was returning to the Heavenly Court, since from what he could recall, his Monkey Bro was the only one able to dominate the Jade Emperor.

Thinking of the possibility of nothing happening to him at all, Canopy Marshal smiled, “Alright, stop blocking out way here. Hurry up and let us it.”

“But... this is?” Wang Mo asked in hesitation. He was unable to feel any celestial aura from the black robed person, and the way the person dressed also caused him to be very suspicious.

It was decreed that those who enter the Cloudy Palace of Golden Arches must wear proper clothing, which referred to their core armor after their ascension to a deity.

“He came to support us, so don’t mind it that much. Hurry up and let us in. If that geezer Jade Emperor blames us for being late, then... Heh, you’ll have to treat Old Pig to a meal tonight.”

“Don’t...” Wang Mo hurriedly shook his head. The previous time he had treated Canopy Marshal to a meal, the latter had eaten enough food equivalent to a month of his wage, causing him to feel incomprehensible regret.

“Tsk, so stingy,” Canopy Marshal twitched his mouth.

Wang Mo smiled and took a step back, “Good luck everyone.”

Canopy Marshal had completely calmed down. He was so calm to the point that he, who was normally cowardly, actually became the first one to walk up the stairs to the palace.

Yang Jian and the black robed person also shook their heads with similar smiles, then followed him up the stairs.

...

“Monkey, just what exactly do you want?”

The Jade Emperor revealed a helpless expression as he stood in his palace and frowned.

Meanwhile, the Great Sage squatted on the Jade Emperor’s throne, and held a peach in his hand, while he scratched his neck, “Geezer Jade Emperor, you’re far too petty. God of Fortune and Leizhenzi merely scolded you a bit, and that was only when you were on your alt. You deserve to get cursed for not using your main. Why did you bring them over here?”

Both God of Fortune and Leizhenzi lowered their heads without speaking, but they began to feel more hopeful.

Although this monkey is terrible, he’s definitely a great person at dealing with the Jade Emperor.

“What does me educating my subordinates have to do with you? This emperor did not summon you. This emperor has already been turning a blind eye to you stealing peaches from the Immortality Peach Garden, yet you actually dare to come and cause trouble here,” Jade Emperor roared angrily.

The Great Sage scratched his head and chuckled, “Seriously, you’re so stingy. Never mind. I, Old Sun, came over here because my junior brother asked me to come. I had heard that you summoned him, so I, Old Sun, came to support him, and to see whether you are going to be just or not!”

“But your junior brother has not yet...” Before the Jade Emperor finished, Yang Jian and co., walked into the palace side by side.

The Great Sage smiled, then jumped down from the throne, “He’s here now!”

Wang Mo (王魔) is one of the guards of the Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches alongside Yang Sen (杨森), Gao Yougan (高友乾) and Li Xingba (李兴霸). All of them were given this position after their deaths.

# Chapter 527 – Arguing with the Jade Emperor

---

“Monkey Bro!” Canopy Marshal waved towards the Great Sage excitedly. Normally he was actually kind of scared of this Monkey Bro, but now, he only felt like Monkey Bro was definitely a close relative to him!

Since Yang Jian and the Great Sage were old rivals that were not on particularly good terms...

They glanced at each other with heated gazes.

Then, Yang Jian snorted coldly and cupped his hands towards the Jade Emperor, “Uncle.”

Jade Emperor turned to take a look at him, then glanced at the black robed man.

After a long time, he turned back towards Yang Jian with a snort, “Do you still have uncle in your mind?”

“Uncle, please hand me my punishment,” Yang Jian lowered his head.

Great Sage couldn’t help but slap his thighs and laugh loudly, “You’re relatives, why are you acting like this now!?”

“Monkey, do not be so disrespectful!” Yang Jian raised his eyebrows and roared loudly.

The Great Sage put his hands on his hips fearlessly and snorted, “So what? Fight meh!”

“Do you think that I’m scared of you!?”

Dong.

A lance instantly appeared in Yang Jian’s hands, while the Ruyi Jingu Bang appeared in the Great Sage’s hand. Just as they got ready to attack...

“This is the Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches, not a place for you two to mess around!” The Jade Emperor said angrily.

The Great Sage twitched his mouth and snorted, “It’s not like I haven’t fought here before!”

“Alright, don’t fight,” the black robed man on the side also spoke up.

The Great Sage looked at him in confusion, “I, Old Sun, noticed you a long time ago. What exactly are you!?”

“Great Sage, you already forgot about me so quickly?” The black robed man pulled down his hood as he spoke.

“Oh, bro, why did you come here?” The Great Sage put away the Ruyi Jingu Bang and ran over.

Ye Zichen smiled, then replied, “I heard that Jade Emperor wants to punish them. I came to ask for mercy on their behalf.”

“Sky Sovereign!” God of Thunder and God of Fortune were momentarily stunned. Then, they ignored the Jade Emperor and immediately walked over to Ye Zichen and began to chit chat.

“Are you really not taking this emperor seriously?” Jade Emperor stomped his feet in anger.

The deities in the hall immediately coughed then separated. God of Fortune and Leizhenzi returned to their original position, while Yang Jian and Canopy Marshal stood on the side with lowered heads.

As for the Great Sage...

He didn’t take Jade Emperor seriously from the beginning.

He would do whatever he like without a care of whether he angered the Jade Emperor or not. He just didn’t care.

“Jade Emperor,” when everyone else had calmed down, Ye Zichen also cupped his hands towards the Jade Emperor.

Jade Emperor squinted his eyes for a moment, then frowned as he sat back down upon the throne after shooing the monkey away. “Who are you!?”

The moment the Jade Emperor said that, all of the surrounding deities looked at Ye Zichen in confusion.

Jade Emperor actually doesn't know Sky Sovereign?

Ye Zichen had already anticipated that he would get exposed, but since he dared to come, he naturally did not mind it anymore.

“This one is Ye Zichen, the deities of the Heavenly Court address me respectfully as Sky Sovereign Nameless!”

“You are Only Idealism, the group owner?” The Jade Emperor said sullenly.

Ye Zichen nodded, “Indeed!”

“Good, then what is your purpose for coming here?”

“I came here to ask you for mercy on their behalf!” Ye Zichen smiled. “God of Thunder, God of Fortune, Yang Jian and Canopy Marshal were indeed slightly disrespectful towards you in the group, but that was only when you weren't using your main account.”

“So?” Jade Emperor answered.

“You intentionally hid your identity and did not allow others to know it was you. That was because you wanted to lurk and see what these deities around you were saying and doing! But you used your alt account and acted cocky. All of them are reputed deities in the Heavenly Court, how could they allow you to do that? What's more, have they ever said anything bad about you in the group? Even if they did, it was all about Little Prince!” Ye Zichen said solemnly. Although he understood how high and mighty the Jade Emperor was, he still had to make the Jade Emperor understand.

God of Thunder, God of Fortune and co. were on good terms with

him, he could not just let them stay in trouble like this.

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with God of Thunder increased by 100.  
Current intimacy level 200.

Dingdong.

Intimacy level leveled up. Current intimacy level: Trusted.

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with God of Fortune increased by 100.  
Current intimacy level: 320.

Great Sage nodded, then added on the side, “Yeah, you wanted to see the truth using a disguise, but couldn’t take others mocking you. Then just use your main account. You aren’t letting others flame your alt? Nobody owes that to you!”

“This emperor isn’t angry about their words...” Jade Emperor argued. “They are always bullshitting in the group and forgot about their actual jobs.”

“You’re wrong once again!” Ye Zichen held up his right hand and counted. “First of all, have you ever seen them slacking while working? Have there been any problems with the Heavenly Court’s security? Second of all, the group was established to improve the relationship between the deities, and create a good social environment in the Heavenly Court. Third of all, does the Heavenly Court have any entertainment facilities? Deities live for a long time. Chatting in the group is a good way to waste time. Do you actually just want them to live so plainly for their entire lives?”

“Brat, do you know who you are speaking to!?” Jade Emperor’s expression turned gloomy.

“The Jade Emperor, the current master of the Three Realm’s Heavenly Realm,” Ye Zichen replied straightforwardly.

“Then are you not afraid of me sentencing you to death right here?” Jade Emperor said with a dark expression. Ignoring the shitty monkey, it had already been ten thousand years since anyone dared to anger the Jade Emperor.

“This kid understands deeply exactly how just the Jade Emperor is. As the current master of the Heavenly Court, and having been for several million years, I believe that you are not some useless person. I am merely stating my opinion here. The actual decision is still naturally up to Your Majesty!” Ye Zichen said everything in an extremely roundabout manner.

All of the deities couldn't help but raise their eyebrows.

His speaking skills are pretty much as good as that geezer Taibai Jinxing!

“Mhmm,” the words were clearly very effective against the Jade Emperor. He nodded plainly, then rubbed his chin. “Your words make sense, but you mentioned entertainment facilities just now... You can listen to songs in the Heavenly Court, and can also play cards. How can you say that there is a lack of entertainment in the Heavenly Court?”

“Heh, how is that anything?” Ye Zichen said with disdain. “I was the one who created Landlord, and I even have the patent for it. As for the songs you talked about, aren't they just a few fairies dancing traditional dances? That performance is way too old! What's more, are you not bored of it after watching stuff like that for several hundreds of thousands of years?”

“It seems like you have better entertainment in mind?” Jade Emperor smiled.

Ye Zichen nodded with certainty, “Of course. Even disregarding everything else, I have songs that are several thousand centuries more advanced than what you listen to.”

“How are you going to make me believe you?”

The moment the Jade Emperor asked, Ye Zichen took out his phone. Back when he was a true otaku, he downloaded plenty of girl band performances in his phone.

“Jade Emperor, how about we make a bet?”

# Chapter 528 – The First Girl Band

---

“Bet? What do you want to be?” The Jade Emperor smiled. At that moment, he was indeed rather interested. The entertainment in the Heavenly Court had indeed been essentially the same for several hundreds of thousands of years. He was actually a bit sick of the songs.

“Postpone their punishment for now. Give me half a month’s time, and I’ll give you a visual feast that will alter your perception of entertainment. If I manage to do that, then let them go. If I don’t, then I will be punished alongside them,” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and replied.

The Jade Emperor nodded with a smile, “Alright, then this emperor will make this bet with you. If this emperor loses, then not only will I not punish them, I will reward you greatly.”

“Yet during this two weeks, I will require Jade Emperor to provide me with some assistance.”

“Just tell me directly what you need.”

“Then this little one will thank Jade Emperor first,” Ye Zichen bowed.

Jade Emperor raised his eyebrows, “Are you not afraid of losing?”

“Lose? It’s impossible for me to lose!” Ye Zichen replied with absolute certainty.

...

After everyone left the Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches, God of Fortune and Leizhenzi both fixed their gazes on Ye Zichen.

“Why are you two looking at me like this? What? Do you feel like you lost something by calling me Sky Sovereign since my cultivation isn’t that high?”

“No, no!” Leizhenzi quickly denied it. “I definitely don’t mean that. It’s just that... Just now, there was no need for you to act like that in the palace.”

“Yeah!” God of Fortune couldn’t help but nod. “The Jade Emperor was merely punishing us for our wrong doing. There is no need for you to be dragged in.”

“It’s alright!” Ye Zichen waved his hand with a smile. Some time ago, a certain girl band was extremely popular, and he did have a lot of their videos saved.

“Sky Sovereign, then can you tell us bros how you’re going to deal with it?” Canopy Marshal couldn’t help but raise his eyebrows.

Ye Zichen looked over with a smile, “It’s a secret!”

After that, Ye Zichen decided to stay in Yang Jian’s manor. Meanwhile, the major news of Sky Sovereign Nameless arriving in the Heavenly Court swept through the numerous deities.

In the following three days, Immortal Lady He and Han Xiangzi were the first to visit alongside the Eight Immortals. Then, Yue Lao, Immortality Peach Fairy, Third Prince Nezha and co. also came over to visit.

It could be said that Ye Zichen continuously greeted deities wave after wave, causing him to be unable to do anything else.

Yet, what surprised everyone was that Chang’e did not appear.

...

“Kid, don’t be too outrageous,” the Jade Emperor knitted his eyebrows in the Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches.

Ye Zichen stood within the palace and smiled, “I wonder how this one is too outrageous?”

“There are plenty of fairies in the Heavenly Court. Why did you set your eyes on my seven daughters? Just what exactly do you

want?" The Jade Emperor said angrily.

Just moments prior, Ye Zichen went over to the Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches to discuss further about the bet, but to the Jade Emperor's surprise, Ye Zichen actually asked for his seven daughters...

"The Seven Fairies are natural beauties. Since it'll be a visual feast, then the first impression definitely has to pass. Otherwise, if I find a bunch of normal looking people, no matter how amazing the show is, it'll be pointless!" Ye Zichen shrugged. "What's more, I seem to recall you promised me in the Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches, and in the exact position that you're in now, that you will satisfy any of my requests. You can't be thinking of going back on your words, right?"

"Heh, this emperor's words are absolute. How could I go back on them?" The Jade Emperor snorted in response to Ye Zichen's mockery, then called to the attendants outside the palace. "Summon the Seven Fairies!"

Approximately ten-odd minutes later, the Seven Fairies arrived in the palace playfully.

The Seven Fairies looked nearly identical, and the only way to tell them apart seemed to be the color of their clothes.

Out of red, orange, yellow, green, blue, indigo, violet colored clothes, the fairy in the red dress was the eldest, while the purple was the youngest Seventh Fairy.

"Father, I wonder what business did you summon us, your daughters for?" The eldest fairy asked with a smile.

"I'm not the one who called for you, it was him!" Jade Emperor pointed at Ye Zichen, causing the Seven Fairies to look over.

"Seven fairy-jiejie, this man hereby greets you!" Ye Zichen smiled like a scholar.

Jade Emperor couldn't help but frown when he saw that, "I

didn't tell you to come here to chat up my daughters. Tell them about the proper business already!"

"Ai, alright," Ye Zichen nodded with a smile, then walked in front of the Seven Fairies. "The situation is like this, since it's all too complicated to tell you girls in detail, I'll put it simply. You all belong to me now!"

"Huh?" The Seven Fairies all blushed together.

"What do you mean belong to you!?" Jade Emperor grasped the sides of his throne in anger. "Explain your words properly. This is the Heavenly Court after all."

Ye Zichen smiled coyly when he felt the sinister aura from behind him, "Ahem.. It's like this. Your daddy got sick of fairies dancing, so he wants something more exciting. In order to satisfy his needs, I sought you guys out. I believe your father-daughter relationship will be able to satisfy his twisted mind."

"Brat..."

...

Ye Zichen patted his chest after hurrying back to Yang Jian's manner. Although the Jade Emperor normally gets bullied by a monkey, Ye Zichen could clearly feel that he was actually a lot stronger than the monkey.

"Sky Sovereign, what exactly do you want us to do?" The Seven Fairies couldn't help but ask. Just a while earlier, Ye Zichen had ran with all of them when their father became angry.

What's more, they all followed him willingly without any refusal.

"I'm going to get a girl band to start in the Heavenly Court. As for what a girl band is, it's basically... Never mind, you won't understand even if I explain it to you," Ye Zichen shook his head and took out his phone, then clicked on one of the videos. "Here, take a look. This is a girl band..."

The Seven Fairies leaned over, but after they took one look, they could no longer look away.

After letting them watch nearly ten videos, Ye Zichen put his phone away and looked at the fairies...

“We’ll be like them in the future!” Third Fairy said.

“Their melody is so nice!” Fifth Fairy also smiled.

“I feel like their dance is so good, but I feel like it’s kind of embarrassing,” Sixth Fairy covered her blushing face.

“You feel like it’s embarrassing mostly because the Heavenly Court’s mindsets old fashioned. I haven’t shown you anything more embarrassing...” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth. I seem to recall I still have several [Sola-sensei](#)’s combat videos. If I play those...

Ahem, as a proper person. I will not teach bad things to these flower-like fairies.

“You saw it just now, that’s what the girl band want to establish is. In the future, you need to quickly learn their dances and songs... Of course, I can promise you that if you learn it successfully, you will be the center of attention of everyone.”

“Really?” The eyes of the fairies lit up. Ahh, all girls have at least dreamed of becoming a celebrity...

“Of course. Judging from your expressions, I guess you agree to establishing a girl band. Then what we have to do now is... practice!”

With that, Ye Zichen used his spiritual energy to charge his phone, then used a technique to project the screen into the sky.

“Heavenly Court’s First Girl Band. Let’s begin!”

Referring to Sola Aoi

# Chapter 529 – I want to learn Pill Refinement

---

A charming melody could be heard coming from the backyard of Yang Jian's manor, while Ye Zichen sat on a vine chair and watched the fairies dance.

Since Ye Zichen did not have any dancing knowledge, he was unable to offer the fairies any form of technical help.

However, since the fairies are deities, their learning capabilities were far greater than that of mundane mortals, the Seven Fairies, who had never been exposed to anything like what Ye Zichen showed them before, actually managed to get a grasp of it in less than half a day's time.

"Practice properly. I'll test you guys when I return," Ye Zichen stood up and shouted towards the fairies, then departed from the backyard. However, he did not forget to stick a "Staff Only" notice on the door to the backyard.

The moment Ye Zichen arrived in the front yard, he immediately heard someone shout "King bomb!" He glanced over, and saw that Yang Jian, Canopy Marshal and Yue Lao were playing Landlord together.

"F\*ck, Yang Jian, are you cheating? How do you have a bomb every single time? Old Pig isn't going to play anymore!" Canopy Marshal threw his last card into the pile of cards like he was throwing a tantrum.

Canopy Marshal was the landlord, and he had just played out a straight, leaving a single three left in his hands. If nobody could answer his straight, then he would have won. However, Yang Jian's bomb promptly stunned him!

"Stop it, hold your 3 properly and prepare to pay up!"

Whoosh.

When Yang Jian and Yue Lao both played out their hands, Canopy Marshal could only take out his phone bitterly, and send Yang Jian and Yue Lao a red packet of ten thousand cultivation experience each...

“That’s some pretty hefty betting!” Ye Zichen chuckled. Only then did the three card players notice Ye Zichen.

Yang Jian raised his eyebrows, “Do you want to play a few rounds?”

“I’m worried that I will win so much that you’ll all cry,” Ye Zichen smiled broadly.

Yang Jian immediately wore an expression of disbelief, “Fight me.”

“You guys go ahead and play. I, Old Pig, is done. Hmm? What’s the noise coming from the backyard? It sounds pretty good,” Canopy Marshal raised his eyebrows as he motioned with his chin towards the backyard.

Ye Zichen sat down in Canopy Marshal’s place and shuffled the cards, “It’s a secret, but it’ll definitely stun you guys.”

“Stop talking about pointless things. Hurry up and deal,” Yang Jian yammered.

He was the Landlord Prince in the Heavenly Court. Nobody from the great deities down to the basic Heavenly Soldiers were able to match him.

When he lost, it was always intentional, so that others would continue playing with him in the future.

However, he had forgotten just who exactly taught the game to him in the first place.

...

“I’m done, I’m done.” Yang Jian immediately threw down his cards and said that he didn’t want to play anymore within an hour

of Ye Zichen's entrance.

There's something seriously wrong. I haven't even won a single game.

"You two are working together, aren't you?" Yang Jian glanced at Yue Lao and Ye Zichen. "The two of you were close from the start. Did you guys decide to work together to screw me over? Bro, that really isn't right!"

"Stop finding excuses for yourself. Do you think that you're actually invincible?" Canopy Marshal rolled his eyes.

Hearing that, Yang Jian turned around, only to see a huge plate in Canopy Marshal's hand.

The plate was filled with valuable fruits, which the pig was stuffing into his mouth non-stop.

"Zhu Bajie..."

"What? Old Pig has lost so much here, I can't even eat a little bit of your fruits?" Canopy Marshal also rolled his eyes as he retorted.

"Is this still a little bit?" With that, Yang Jian immediately dashed over to fight over the fruits with Canopy Marshal, but before long, they had already pulled out their weapons.

"No need to mind?" Ye Zichen glanced over at them, but noticed that Yue Lao was beyond calm. "No need, this old man is already used to it."

"Two kids," Ye Zichen couldn't help but shake his head and smile. "Oh yeah, have you seen Old Lord Taishang recently?"

"Old Lord? I haven't paid too much attention to him recently," Yue Lao shook his head. "Is Sky Sovereign looking for him?"

"Mhmm!" Ye Zichen nodded. He had one more reason for going to the Heavenly Court, and that was to learn how to refine pills from Old Lord Taishang.

However, plenty of deities had visited him in the past few days,

but Old Lord Taishang was nowhere to be seen.

Old Lord Taishang didn't receive any of the messages he sent. It was as if the old man had just disappeared from existence.

“Then why doesn't Sky Sovereign directly go to his manor to find him?”

“But I don't know where he lives?” Ye Zichen shrugged.

“But I do.” Yue Lao smiled. “If Sky Sovereign wants to go, then this old man is willing to lead the way.”

“Then let's hurry!”

Yue Lao smiled, put down the cards on the table, then stood up and made a please gesture for Ye Zichen.

...

Approximately half an hour later, Ye Zichen and Yue Lao arrived at the Old Lord's manor. The disciple standing outside the gate immediately greeted Yue Lao when he saw him, “Great deity Yue Lao.”

“Mhmm, is the old man here?” Yue Lao pointed towards Ye Zichen. “Sky Sovereign Nameless and I have come to see him.”

“Yes! Do you need me to go and announce your arrival?” The child nodded.

“No need, Sky Sovereign and I will just go in,” with that, Yue Lao took Ye Zichen into the manor. It was clear that Yue Lao and Old Lord Taishang were clearly good friends.

The arrangement of the manor was extremely complicated, and was filled with various formations.

However, Yue Lao merely walked through it like his own back garden and brought Ye Zichen straight to Old Lord Taishang's pill refinement room without invoking any of the seals.

“Fire, the fire has to be stronger!”

“It’s time to open up the furnace. Why are you always so unfocused?”

“Gah, I told you to use soft flames. Just what are you using!?”

Old Lord Taishang stood in the pill refinement room with his hands behind his back, and watched while a few of his disciples stood in front of a pill furnace in order to observe the situation within the furnace as well as the flames.

“You’re so dumb. Just when are you guys going to learn half of what I can do!?”

“They’re all disciples who have just came into contact with pill refinement, aren’t your expectations of them a bit too high?” Yue Lao walked in with a smile.

All of the disciples, who were refining pills, greeted him, “Great Deity Yue Lao!”

Smack.

Old Lord Taishang frowned and smacked all of the disciples who greeted Yue Lao, “You are refining pills. You have to be completely focused. Don’t you know that your pill might have been completely ruined in that split second?”

“You’re too harsh on them,” Yue Lao shook his head with a smile.

Old Lord Taishang snorted towards the disciples, “How’s it harsh? I’m doing it for their good. Geezer, why do you have time to come over to my place? I heard that Sky Sovereign came. Why aren’t you with him?”

“Old Lord actually knows that I came? I thought that Old Lord didn’t know at all!”

At that very moment, Ye Zichen walked in with a smile.

The disciples in the room wanted to peek again, but when they saw Old Lord Taishang glare at them, they immediately turned

their heads back to the furnace.

“Focus on refining pills. If you don’t manage to refine this furnace of pills in three days, then there’s no need for you to learn pill refinement from me anymore,” with that, Old Lord Taishang turned towards Ye Zichen. “So you’re Sky Sovereign. You’re pretty much what I imagined. I should have went to take a look since Sky Sovereign had returned to the Heavenly Court, but these kids make me worry too much.”

“No worries!” Ye Zichen smiled, then raised his eyebrows. “I actually came over here because I have a request to make of Old Lord!”

“Please!”

“I want to learn pill refinement!”

# Chapter 530 – Pill Refinement

---

Bang.

The moment Ye Zichen spoke, one of the disciple's furnaces imploded.

With that, all of the other furnaces also followed. Fortunately, Old Lord Taishang immediately set up a barrier in front of them, otherwise, the kids might have been turned into smithereens.

“Whose furnace was the first to explode?” Old Lord Taishang frowned.

The disciples lowered their heads for a long time, then finally a dark faced disciple around thirteen or fourteen years old walked forward.

“Reach your hand out!”

The disciple obediently did so under Old Lord Taishang's order. Old Lord Taishang whipped down with a willow branch.

“How many times did I tell you guys? Focus! You just refused to listen. Look at what happened, the furnaces have imploded!”

The disciples all looked down without daring to speak.

Old Lord Taishang let out a long sigh, “Go and copy the Focus Incantation thirty times, and hand it to me tomorrow morning!”

“Yes, Esteemed Master!” The disciples all walked out of the pill refinement room with lowered heads.

Old Lord Taishang rubbed his temples, then shook his head with a sigh, “They truly make people worry. Oh yeah, Sky Sovereign, what did you say just now?”

“I said that I want to learn pill refinement,” Ye Zichen said with a serious expression.

“Sky Sovereign, you should have seen it just now. Pill refinement

requires you to be extremely focused. What's more, natural talent and specific attributes are needed. Only people who naturally have the dual attributes of fire and wood are suitable for pill refinement. If... I'm not mistaken, you seem to lack any attribute."

I didn't expect him to be able to tell just like that. Even the old Dragon God needed to inspect for a while before making the judgment that I lack any attribute.

"The void of any attribute won't do?" Ye Zichen frowned.

"No," Old Lord Taishang replied. "I'm not tricking Sky Sovereign. The fire attribute allows one to better control the flames, and understand them better. The wood attribute is able to make the effects of the pill gentler and help it condense. You might be able to try if you had one of the attributes, but you..."

Old Lord Taishang's meaning was obvious. He essentially said that it was impossible for Ye Zichen to become a pill refiner.

Yet, back when Ye Zichen was in the Immortal Region, he had already made up his mind to learn pill refinement...

If I'm unable to refine pills, then all my plans are ruined.

"But if Sky Sovereign insists, then you can give it a shot!" Just as Ye Zichen became rather dejected, Old Lord Taishang spoke up once again.

"Didn't you say it won't work?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

"It's definitely not going to work without external assistance. I can teach you some pill refining techniques to see how good your talent is. If your talent is spectacular, there is a type of fire in this world called Beast Flames. It is the flames from Phoenixes, Fire Qilin and Frost Dragons. The flames from their bodies can be used to refine pills, but the ways of gaining these flames are extremely difficult..." Old Lord Taishang replied with a smile.

Ye Zichen's dejected heart re-ignited once again, "Then I want to try!"

Thus, they set up the furnace and started the fire...

Ye Zichen sat cross-legged in front of the pill furnace. It was his first time refining pills, and the heat of the flames from the pill furnace caused him to feel rather uncomfortable.

“What you have to do next is refine a Spiritual Recovery Pill, a Spiritual Grade Level 1 pill, which is also what the disciples were refining just now. Since it is your first time refining pills, your target isn’t too high. All you have to do is refine it so that the shape is right!” Old Lord Taishang said, then opened up the furnace and popped the herbs in.

“Begin!”

The moment Old Lord Taishang shut the furnace, Ye Zichen put all his attention on the pill furnace.

Meanwhile, Yue Lao couldn’t help but speak up when he saw Ye Zichen completely focus, “Geezer, do you think Sky Sovereign can actually succeed?”

“It’s going to be difficult,” Old Lord Taishang shook his head. “His ability to focus is pretty good, but he has never study pill refining before, nor does he possess the fire or wood attributes. The chances of him actually refining a pill, even with my True Samadhi Fire underneath the furnace, is going to be tiny.”

“Then why are you still letting him try?” Yue Lao couldn’t help but raise his eyebrows. “Wouldn’t it be better if you just directly tell him?”

“But didn’t you notice his expression? He will not give up if he doesn’t witness failure,” Old Lord Taishang shook his head, then patted Yue Lao’s shoulders. “C’mon, a first time pill refiner won’t be able to succeed without a few days. Grab someone from the group so we can have a few games!”

When Yue Lao and Old Lord Taishang departed from the pill refinement room, Ye Zichen, who was concentrating

wholeheartedly on pill refining, did not notice at all.

It was as Old Lord Taishang said, it felt like a ridiculous wish for him to refine pills without either the fire or wood attribute.

Without the wood attribute, he was unable to sense the actual situation within the furnace, causing Ye Zichen to feel even more anxious. As he wished more and more desperately to sense the situation within the furnace...

Fiery Eyes of Truth, activate!

Through the Fiery Eyes of Truth, Ye Zichen was able to see that the herbs had already turned into powder. Now, the most important thing he had to do was help the pill take shape...

If he possessed the wood attribute, he would be able to rub the powder into a pill shape with his spiritual energy.

But he didn't have it.

"Laozi's not giving up!"

...

"Straight!"

Old Lord Taishang threw out a pile of cards. Both Yue Lao and God of Fortune looked at the cards in their hands, and passed.

"I was looking for you guys, why are you all here?" At that very moment, Ye Zichen walked over with dust all over his nose and face.

"Sky Sovereign," God of Fortune and Yue Lao threw their cards onto the table and nodded towards Ye Zichen.

Seeing the other two did so, Old Lord Taishang also threw his cards onto the table. He didn't mind, since the chances of him winning were actually rather low.

He glanced at Ye Zichen, then took note of the time.

It's only been an hour or so, why did he come out already?

However, when he saw what happened to Ye Zichen's face, Old Lord Taishang said understandingly, "Your furnace imploded?"

"Nope," Ye Zichen shook his head.

"Then why did you come out? Oh, I get it, did you give up because you lack the wood attribute, so you were unable to shape the pill?" Old Lord Taishang walked over understandingly and patted Ye Zichen's shoulders. "Don't mind it too much. You can develop in other areas even if you can't refine pills. Sky Sovereign doesn't have to be a pill refiner."

"Yeah Sky Sovereign, don't mind it too much," Yue Lao also comforted from the side.

"Why are you guys all like this? Did you really think that I failed?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, causing Old Lord Taishang and co. to be unsure of how to reply.

From their perspective, especially from the viewpoint of Old Lord Taishang, a true professional, it was impossible for Ye Zichen to succeed.

"Sky Sovereign, don't mind it too much. We don't mean anything bad with what we said. But it really isn't possible for you to have succeeded under such circumstances. It's just failure, it's nothing special!" Old Lord Taishang sighed.

However, Ye Zichen opened his palm and smiled, "Who said I failed? Isn't this a pill?"

# Chapter 531 – Art of Soul Guidance

---

The pill was completely green, while six spiral lines were laid out across its surface, as it glowed faintly.

The fragrance of the pill did not disperse, and one could tell that it was clearly not a normal pill just from looking at its surface.

“This is... a pill you just refined?” Old Lord Taishang was stunned. He carefully put the pill into his hands and sniffed it. “You refined it with the materials I gave you?”

“What do you think? I don’t understand any of this at all. I just refined whatever you put inside,” Ye Zichen smiled while looking at Old Lord Taishang’s surprised demeanor. “How is it? My talent is pretty good, isn’t it?”

“I don’t believe it.” With that, Old Lord Taishang popped the pill into his mouth.

Yue Lao and God of Fortune both set their gazes on Old Lord Taishang. After a while, the latter opened his eyes and grabbed Ye Zichen by his shoulders. “How did you do it? Soul guidance... You actually know how to use your soul to guide it!”

Both God of Fortune and Yue Lao were rather surprised by Old Lord Taishang’s excitement. As one of the Three Pure Ones, and as the imperial pill refiner of the Heavenly Court, Old Lord Taishang hadn’t shown such a demeanor in a very long time.

The previous time he had been that excited was right before the Immortality Peach Feast a thousand years ago when he refined a Level Nine Sky Grade Pill.

“I refined it just like that. How else could I have done it,” in that moment, Ye Zichen finally confirmed that his pill refinement was a success. Actually, the main reason he was able to refine it was because he was dead set on it, then all of a sudden, his soul randomly went into the pill furnace...

He didn't have a clue about how it happened at all.

"Soul guidance. You are actually capable of soul guidance..."

Old Lord Taishang muttered excitedly to himself as he took a few steps back. Soul Guidance was a technique that any pill refiner would be desperate to learn, and Old Lord Taishang was naturally no exception to that.

However, only geniuses were able of figuring out how to do it. Even though he had refined pills for several hundred thousand years...

He was still clueless about the technique.

"Can you teach me the method of Soul Guidance?" Old Lord Taishang requested like a disciple would.

Both Yue Lao and God of Fortune were dumbfounded. They had never seen a situation like this occur with Old Lord Taishang ever since they came to know each other.

"I'm not so sure," Ye Zichen scratched his head. He was speaking the truth. Back then, his soul had randomly entered. He didn't even know what was going on.

All he knew at the time was shape the pill, open the furnace and take the pill out. There was nothing else on his mind.

"Keeping secrets for yourself isn't the act of a good daoist friend," Old Lord Taishang raised his eyebrows.

"I really don't know," Ye Zichen pleaded his innocence.

"Tsk, never mind. Whatever, this old man doesn't want to learn it anymore," Old Lord Taishang replied in annoyance. "Isn't it just Soul Guidance? Sooner or later, this old man will figure it out for himself!"

"..."

Ye Zichen really didn't know what to say. It was clear that Old Lord Taishang thought that he didn't want to teach it.

However, in all honesty, he really doesn't know how to teach it.

Thus, he ignored Old Lord's sour words, then raised his eyebrows, "Don't make me feel guilty. I meant it when I said that I don't know. Also, that pill just now was my hard work, and was actually my first pill ever. You should compensate me since you just ate it, right?"

"Kid, have some conscience. This old man introduced you to the art in good will, and this old man actually tried the pill for you personally, fearlessly. You're actually telling me to compensate you?" Old Lord Taishang raised his eyebrows and put his hands on his hips.

"Stop bullshitting here, you're useless if you don't know the properties of the pills after refining pills for so long. As for what you said about introducing me, can you stop messing around? I didn't even see you when I finished refining the pill. When I came out, I just saw you playing cards here. You didn't even say anything from start to finish. Seriously, hurry up and compensate me!" Ye Zichen was completely speechless, so he chose not to argue with Old Lord Taishang, and promptly reached out his hand.

"Then tell me what you want. Isn't it just a crappy pill?" Old Lord Taishang answered with disdain.

"I want your Pill Refining Manual. You said that you were going to check my talent before I could start. It is definitely clear that my talent is superb. You said that keeping secrets is not a good daoist friend, so don't hide it!" Ye Zichen answered with a coy smile.

Old Lord Taishang's expression immediately turned upon hearing that.

Pill Refining Manual!

Seriously!?

"You're way too daring! You're actually asking for my Pill Refining Manual, that is seriously way too much. Do you even

know what that represents!?” Old Lord Taishang rolled his eyes.

Ye Zichen shrugged with a smile, “Then... give me my pill back. If you can’t do it, then refine one that’s exactly the same as mine was for me!”

“Heh...” Old Lord Taishang suddenly laughed coldly. If I could refine one that’s exactly the same, I wouldn’t have a need to learn the method of Soul Guidance from him.

Ye Zichen glanced at Old Lord Taishang with innocent eyes.

Old Lord Taishang immediately got annoyed when he saw the gaze, “Fine, I’ll give it to you, but don’t get so full of yourself. You can’t refine anything without fire.”

“Didn’t you say I can use Beast Fire?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and smiled.

Old Lord Taishang nodded, “Indeed, but do you think that’s easy to get? I can give you the manual, but contact me after getting Beast Fire. Otherwise, it’s pointless.”

With that, Old Lord Taishang raised his hand, and pushed God of Fortune, Yue Lao as well as Ye Zichen out of the manor with a snort, “Alright, stop bothering this old man. You guys are annoying!”

After pushing the three out, Old Lord Taishang put his hands behind his back, then walked towards the pill refinement room with a loud shout, “All of you, come to the pill refinement room and refine pills!”

...

“Seriously, that old man...” Ye Zichen couldn’t help but shake his hand after leaving from Old Lord Taishang’s manor.

Since Yue Lao had been his friend for many years, he naturally understood Old Lord Taishang’s personality, “He has an obsessive interest in pill refinement. It would’ve been fine if Sky Sovereign

taught him directly!”

“But I really don’t know, Ye Zichen shrugged his shoulders helplessly. “If I actually knew, would I hide it from him?”

Yue Lao and God of Fortune nodded. They understood very well that Ye Zichen wasn’t someone like that.

“Oh yeah, do you guys know where I can get Beast Fire?” Ye Zichen couldn’t help but ask. All he lacked to refine pills was fire.

“Uhm... Beast Fire is rather hard to come by. I heard that only the Beast Fire is shed by ten-thousand years old spiritual beasts as they undergo a change, can be used by others. Old Zhao and I are not pill refiners, so we’ve never actually paid much attention to it,” Yue Lao said with a frown. “But if Sky Sovereign wants me to, then I will pay more attention to it from now on.”

“Same here,” God of Fortune agreed.

“Then thanks!” Ye Zichen nodded thankfully, then returned to the True Lord manor after bidding Yue Lao and God of Fortune farewell. It had already been several hours since he left the manor. It’s time for me to see how the fairies are doing!

## Chapter 532 – Chang’e’s Visit

---

When Ye Zichen returned, he saw the “Staff Only” sign was still stuck to the door that led to the backyard of True Lord Erlang’s manor.

However, he was no longer able to hearing the alluring melody. Ye Zichen took a look at the time. My phone is probably out of battery.

He pushed open the door. He had thought that the Seven Fairies were already taking a break, but when he entered, he noticed that...

They were actually still practicing.

“Sky Sovereign,” when the fairies saw Ye Zichen return, they finally stopped what they were doing.

To Ye Zichen’s surprise, he could not see any signs of fatigue in their expressions. All he could see was a faint bit of excitement.

“You’re pretty hard working,” Ye Zichen nodded with a smile.

The Seven Fairies smiled in response, “Is Sky Sovereign coming to check up on us?”

“Mhmm, but I’m not in a hurry. Wait a moment,” Ye Zichen signaled for the Seven Fairies to rest a bit.

Then he walked over to the table to pick up his phone. It was as he thought. Playing videos for several hours had already used up all of his phone’s battery.

He held up the phone to charge it, then after turning it on, he clicked open the video he had showed the fairies previously, then raised his eyebrows, “Are you all rested?”

“Yes!” The Seven Fairies answered energetically.

Ye Zichen nodded when he saw their passion, “Then go ahead and start!”

When the pleasant melody played, the expressions of the fairies changed.

They seemed to be people born for the stage, as every tiny action reminded people of what a girl band should be.

Ye Zichen was certain that if they were in the Modern Realm, they would definitely be the top girl band in the entire world.

The reason for that was simple. They're fairies, so they can apply special effects to themselves.

When the song ended, and the fairies finished their dance, they all looked towards Ye Zichen with gazes filled with anticipation.

Ye Zichen could not deny that their performance was essentially perfect for beginners.

Thus, Ye Zichen did not hold back his praise.

"It really was great. It seems like you girls are very talented in this area. Let's end the practice for today with this. Go back and rest yourselves properly, we'll be continuing tomorrow."

"Yes Sky Sovereign. Bye bye, Sky Sovereign." The Seven Fairies waved towards Ye Zichen together, then departed from Erlang Shen's backyard.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but smile with a nod as he watched them leave. If they continue on like this, then I'm guaranteed to win the bet!

...

"Not bad, not bad. But just now, Lil' Six's actions weren't too good, it felt a bit out of place with others. Synchronized dancing requires you to act in unity. Your actions were a bit stiff, you have to practice properly."

Ye Zichen had gradually become more and more professional during the training of the Seven Fairies. What's more, with the Fiery Eyes of Truth, it was also as if he was an eagle-eyed coach.

Moments earlier, he had noticed the irregularity of Sixth Fairy's movements, so he immediately pointed it out.

"I understand, I will practice properly," Sixth Fairy nodded.

Ye Zichen dragged the video back to the beginning, then replayed it once more, "Start over again."

Thus, the Seven Fairies started once again. It was already the third song and dance they had learned in recent days.

However, what should be noted was that none of the original songs had been performed by a seven girl band.

Despite that, the Seven Fairies were able to figure the performances out, as well as add in their own elements to easily change it into their songs and dances.

All of it goes to show that they truly had talent for becoming a girl band.

Ye Zichen rubbed his chin and smiled in satisfaction. He was very happy to see the girl band take shape so naturally.

Dong, dong, dong.

Someone knocked on the backyard door.

Ye Zichen reminded the Seven Fairies to train properly, then stood up from the vine chair and walked out.

"Sis!"

The person standing outside the door was no other than Ao Cunxin, the Third Princess of the West Sea and Yang Jian's wife!

Since Ye Zichen had been staying in Yang Jian's manor while he was staying in the Heavenly Court, he did chat a bit with her.

"Why did you come? Did something happen?"

"Lil' Ye, sis is going to ask you something. You have to answer me honestly," Ao Cunxin grabbed Ye Zichen's hand rightly, then dragged him to an isolated place in the courtyard, then spoke

solemnly.

“Sis, just ask!” Ye Zichen was rather confused, but he still nodded.

“Do you know Chang’e?”

The question completely caught Ye Zichen off-guard. He thought about it, but didn’t say anything.

Only after a while did he ask in a testing manner, “Sis, what is it?”

“Chang’e suddenly came to our manor and said that she wants to see you. But you should also know that Yang Jian had a brief thing with her before. The two of them have also been chatting quite a bit recently. Sis is a bit scared, are the two of them... Lil’ Ye, you definitely have to tell sis the truth. Do you know Chang’e?” Ao Cunxin begged him worriedly.

Ye Zichen was completely stunned by her words.

He gulped, while his eyes opened wide.

“You said Chang’e came to find me?”

Ahh, in the end, I’m not able to avoid it. Since Chang’e had not sought him out the previous few days, Ye Zichen had thought that Chang’e didn’t hear about it.

However, she just suddenly showed up.

“What? Lil’ Ye, you don’t know Chang’e?” Ao Cunxin’s expression instantly saddened. She let go in a depressed manner, then muttered. “I knew it. I knew it...”

Seeing that, Ye Zichen immediately realized that Ao Cunxin misunderstood, so he quickly explained, “Sis, it’s not what you think. Yang Jian is infatuated with you. Chang’e did indeed come here to find me.”

“Then just now...” She raised her eyebrows.

Ye Zichen sighed in a worried manner. “It’s hard for me to explain everything just like that. Just tell me where Chang’e is right now, I’ll go and see her.”

“Oh, she’s in the plum garden in the front yard.”

...

Sev’ral plum branches stand at the wall corner there;

Ev’n in extreme cold they, alone, flow’r in delight.

From a distance I know that they are not snow white,

For sweet scent floats and lingers in the freezing air.

The plum flowers in the garden bloomed, while a lady in a white dress, possessed of an otherworldly beauty, stood amongst them.

Ye Zichen arrived at the plum garden following Ao Cunxin’s guidance. When he saw Chang’e, who stood amongst the plum garden, he immediately stopped.

One visit will charm a city; a second visit will charm the country. Her skin was as smooth as clay, her lips were like cherry blossoms; she had clear eyes and a charming smile. The slender beauty merely stood there gracefully.

It could be said that her existence could mesmerize billions.

Yet, she, who should be pursued by men, had a worried look on her face, which only invoked the pity of others.

The lady in the plum gardens also noticed someone’s approach. When she looked up and saw Ye Zichen, who stood on the other end o the plum garden. She suddenly smiled.

The smile was like a blooming notice, ever so charming.

“It’s you, right?” Chang’e’s tone had absolute certainty. Even though she had never once seen Ye Zichen before, she was till certain that the man standing in front of her was Sky Sovereign Nameless.

“It’s me,” Ye Zichen also smiled. However, his heart was not as calm as the demeanor he put on.

F\*ck, I met Chang’e. Now what!?

## Chapter 533 – Awkward Date

---

As Chang'e approached him, Ye Zichen was able to smell the fragrance coming from her body.

However, he stood stiffly on the spot, while he pondered about how to deal with the situation.

Truth be told, everybody love beauties.

Ye Zichen could not deny that Chang'e was beyond beautiful. He was mesmerized the moment he saw her as well. Yet, at the same time, in the depths of his heart, he did hope that Chang'e had found him unworthy.

It would have been great if their marriage string broke. However, the affability level merely rose instead...

Houyi's probably going to shoot me!

"Are you upset with me?" Chang'e walked in front of Ye Zichen and said in a vexed tone. "The reason I didn't come and find you immediately when you came to the Heavenly Court is actually because I was a bit worried. No matter what, we've never met before, and I wasn't sure how I should face you, so I..."

Chang'e bit her lips.

Hearing her young girl-like reply, he couldn't help but shake his head, "How could I? I should have went to find you, but I've been busy in the Heavenly Court."

"I know you've been busy," Chang'e smiled gently. "That's why I came to find you. I'm telling you, I had to become super determined before coming over here."

"Hehe... Is that so?" Ye Zichen maintained a coy smile. He wasn't sure of how to answer at all.

"Uhm... Do you have time right now? How about let's go out for a walk?" Chang'e licked her lips carefully.

Ye Zichen nodded, “Sure!”

...

Chang’e was a permanently controversial person in the Heavenly Court, so her appearance summoned the appearance of many paparazzi.

“This is so annoying!” Chang’e frowned when she sensed the people tailing them.

Following me normally was one thing, but today is my first day with Sky Sovereign. These damn people are actually still following us!

“Never mind, just let them follow us. It’s not like they’re affecting us,” Ye Zichen replied with a smile. The reason he said that was because he wanted to use these people to spread the news.

Then, Chang’e’s male fans might rush out to fight him.

Then he could stop worrying.

However...

A paparazzi shared the photos of Ye Zichen and Chang’e going on a walk in the Red Packet Server.

Erlang Shen: Isn’t this my bro and Chang’e!

Canopy Marshal: Sky Sovereign finally meets with the fairy. Ai, to be honest, I really do feel kind of uncomfortable!

Handsome: Haha, a capable man and a beautiful woman, they really do suit each other.

God of Thunder: There are plenty of Chang’e fanboys here, right? I, Leizhenzi, is going to say it right now. Whoever dares to destroy the date between my bro and Chang’e... Heh, the consequences are dire.

Yue Lao: +1

Erlang Shen: Leizhenzi is right. I, Yang Jian, is going to say it

here as well. Whoever dares to go and destroy it... Hmph.

Third Prince Nezha: No destroying Sky Sovereign and Chang'e-jiejie's date, otherwise, I'll get angry as well.

Monkey King: My, Old Sun's, Jingu Bang is specifically made to beat those who destroys my bro's relationship.

Seeing several of the major deities in the Heavenly Court all speak up at the same time, the other deities who wished to do something after seeing the photos all gulped.

Chang'e might be nice, but their lives were more important.

Erlang Shen: I really wonder which step can my bro reach with Chang'e. When is he going to hold the wedding feast?

God of Food: I'll go and cook for it personally.

Third Prince Nezha: I want to be the flower boy!

Immortality Peach Fairy: Hehe, I'll go and be the bridesmaid.

Third Prince Nezha: Oh yeah, I'll go and be the best man!

All of the deities in the group began to chitchat. However, at the same time, Ye Zichen was mocking the deities in the Heavenly Court to death. Are they real fans or not!? Chang'e and I have already walked around for nearly an hour, but nobody came to cause trouble at all!

What was even more awkward was that they had walked in complete silence the entire time.

To be honest, even though he was accompanied by a beauty, he wanted to end the silent date quickly.

"Why aren't you speaking?" Chang'e bit her lips as if she had noticed how strange the atmosphere was.

"I'm not good with words," Ye Zichen smiled apologetically. I can't exactly tell her what I'm thinking. Therefore, he could only pretend like he was a bit simple.

Normally girls don't like these kind of dull people, perhaps Chang'e...

"Oh, that's nice. You're a lot better than those people who only know flowery words."

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Chang'e increased by 50. Current affability level: 2165.

Ugh.

Ye Zichen nearly coughed up blood. The affability level actually rose!

"O-Oh!" Ye Zichen smiled helplessly.

Since she found out that he "wasn't good with words", Chang'e instead took upon the role of finding the topic, "Let me tell you, Jade Rabbit and I have been working for Yue Lao. We've been figuring out so many types of snacks and clothes for the women of the Heavenly Court. They're all super popular in the Heavenly Court!"

"Is that so?"

"Oh course," Chang'e smiled proudly. Then pointed at a fairy, who walked by them. "She's wearing something that I designed."

"Amazing!" Ye Zichen really didn't know how to respond.

Yet, after that, Chang'e turned silent as well.

She was someone who was poor with words as well, and her silence only caused an awkward atmosphere to surround them once more.

"Wait!" Suddenly, Ye Zichen looked towards the north.

Hearing that, Chang'e looked at him and raised her eyebrows, "What happened?"

However, Ye Zichen's eyebrows knitted closely together, then

sprinted towards the north.

Seeing that, Chang'e also followed suit.

...

"What happened here?" The Heavenly Court's deities filled the area around the North Heaven's Gate as they all glanced forward curiously.

Ye Zichen squeezed through the crowd, then walked over, only to see a heavenly soldier laying on the ground with a blackened face.

"Yang Jian, what happened here? I felt a strange aura over here just now!" Ye Zichen walked over and glanced at the soldier on the ground.

Seeing Ye Zichen, Yang Jian raised his eyebrows, "I don't know. I only came over since I felt some weird aura over here, but when I arrived, this heavenly soldier was already on the ground."

Ye Zichen frowned and squatted down before the soldier, then flipped open his eyelids, and checked out his situation.

Ye Zichen could not see any wounds on him, nor any hints of battle in the surroundings. What's more, as a heavenly soldier, the soldier naturally wouldn't have any sudden illness.

"This is strange," Ye Zichen frowned.

Yang Jian patted his shoulders, "Don't think about it anymore. Report this to the Jade Emperor and let him decide what to do."

No matter what, this was the Jade Emperor's territory, so Ye Zichen can't exactly act out of line.

"Alright then."

"Okay, everybody leave. Return to your positions. Jade Emperor will deal with this personally, so you guys can leave now!"

## Chapter 534 – The Sickly Heavenly Court

---

“What has happened?” When Chang’e finally ran over and saw the heavenly soldier on the ground, she immediately covered her mouth to prevent herself from screaming too loudly.

“This heavenly soldier has died in a very strange way. Yang Jian and I are going to report it to the Jade Emperor...” Ye Zichen licked his lips.

Chang’e’s expression stiffened for a moment. I finally just found a chance to go on a date with him...

“Mhmm, then go. Proper business is important,” Chang’e nodded with a smile.

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen felt a bit moved by the strangely familiar scene.

I seem to have seen this somewhere before...

Xiao Yumei!

Back in the Modern Realm, she had always supported me silently like this. Right now, Chang’e is acting exactly the same way Xiao Yumei did then.

Creak.

Ye Zichen clenched his fists tightly.

Xiao Yumei was always busy with things for me in the Modern Realm, so I’ve never actually went on a proper date with her.

“Sorry, I’ll definitely compensate you with a real date next time,” Ye Zichen pulled Chang’e into his arms.

Chang’e blushed, then nodded slowly, and ran away with her hands covering her face.

“Bro, not bad!” Yang Jian nudged Ye Zichen with his shoulder.

Ye Zichen smiled, then pointed at the corpse on the floor, “We

need to deal with him.”

...

At the Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches.

It was the first time that a heavenly soldier of the Heavenly Court had died in such a strange manner. All of the great deities of the Heavenly Court arrived, while the Jade Emperor sat on his throne with a frown. “Everyone, what do you think?”

“We naturally have to investigate,” Leizhenzi said with a frown. “The sudden death of a heavenly soldier has never happened in the Heavenly Court before. No matter what, we have to investigate this. If this was caused by someone, then we have to catch the criminal. If it is a sickness, then we need to take preventive measures.”

“I agree with Leizhenzi,” said Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li.

“Agreed!”

“Agreed!”

The deities all voiced their opinions once after another. The truth was that they didn’t have any other suggestions. After all, aside from investigating this matter, there wasn’t anything else that could be done.

However, the manner of investigation and where it would begin was not of their concern.

Jade Emperor frowned on the throne. The responses of the deities merely tired him.

“Yang Jian!”

“Present!” Yang Jian cupped his hands and walked to the center of the palace.

“Take the heavenly soldier to Old Lord Taishang. Let him see if it was caused by an illness.”

“Understood!” Yang Jian picked up the heavenly soldier, then left the Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches.

“Li Jing!”

“Here!” Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li also walked over.

“I’ll hand this entire investigation over to you. Report in to me if there is any progress.”

“Understood,” Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li returned to his own position once again.

“That’s that it. You can all leave. Mm, oh yeah, Sky Sovereign Nameless, you stay behind.”

After all the deities had left, leaving only Ye Zichen and the Jade Emperor behind... Ye Zichen had thought that the Jade Emperor wanted to inquire about the situation then, but...

“How is it going?”

Ye Zichen blinked in his confusion.

“Didn’t you promise to give this emperor a visual feast? The deadline of half a month is nearly here.”

To Ye Zichen’s surprise, after such a huge issue, the Jade Emperor was actually only thinking about enjoyment.

Ye Zichen frowned. No wonder Taibai’s comment on the Jade Emperor was so terrible. I thought he was intentionally making him sound bad since he held a grudge, but it seems like the Jade Emperor has truly gotten used to peaceful days, and has already lost his edge.

“Shouldn’t Jade Emperor be thinking about the reasons behind the heavenly soldier’s death?”

“What’s there to even think about? The result will naturally come to light after Old Lord Taishang and Li Jing are finished,” Jade Emperor acted like he didn’t care, then raised his eyebrows. “This emperor cares more about that visual feast.”

“I will definitely not disappoint Your Majesty,” Ye Zichen’s tone turned a bit cold.

However, Jade Emperor seemed like he didn’t notice Ye Zichen’s shift in tone, and smiled with a nod, “That’s good. If you satisfy this emperor, then this emperor will reward you greatly.”

“Mhmm!” Ye Zichen nodded plainly. He no longer wanted to speak with this Jade Emperor, who only knew peace and enjoyment. “Time is short. I have to go back and watch over the fairies’ practice.”

“Go!”

...

Ye Zichen was in a rather poor mood when he departed from the Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches.

He felt as if he saw the shadow of a fatuous king from historical dramas in the Jade Emperor.

If this continues, then sooner or later, the Heavenly Court will be ruined in his hands just like the kingdoms in those dramas.

Meanwhile, Yang Jian had just returned from Old Lord Taishang’s place. When he saw Ye Zichen, who just walked out of the palace, he smiled, “Bro, why did you come out?”

“The deities have already left. The Jade Emperor went over to the Immortality Peach Garden already. No need to report in,” Ye Zichen spoke indifferently.

Yang Jian couldn’t help but raise his eyebrows when he noticed Ye Zichen’s strangeness, “Huh? What happened?”

“Nothing...” Ye Zichen shook his head. “What did Old Lord Taishang say?”

“He can’t determine it right away, so he told me to leave the guy there. But according to his initial judgement, it shouldn’t be due to the acts of others,” Yang Jian replied honestly.

“Oh? Then could he have been poisoned?” Ye Zichen frowned.

“Who knows? Don’t mind so much. I’ll tell you immediately when Old Lord Taishang tells me anything,” Yang Jian hook his arm around Ye Zichen’s shoulder with a smile. “Bro, just what have you been doing in my backyard? The Seven Fairies are coming over every day, and you’re always playing songs. Just what sort of thing are you figuring out?”

“Making a visual feast for your Jade Emperor,” Ye Zichen answered mockingly. All of a sudden, he began to regret putting together a girl band. When I finish it, the Jade Emperor might care even less about proper work.

“Visual feast...” Yang Jian’s eyes lit up. “Then can you let your bro get a show first?”

“You saw it in the Modern Realm. What’s more, let’s go back. The deadline is nearly here. I have to remind the fairies properly. If Jade Emperor isn’t satisfied, then you guys will get punished.”

“That’s true. Let’s hurry back.”

...

The moment they returned to the manor, Ye Zichen sprinted to the backyard. However, he didn’t go and check up on the Seven Fairies’ practice, and was merely thinking about the Jade Emperor and the Heavenly Court’s situation.

The Heavenly Court is truly too peaceful. I can feel that from these few days I’ve been here.

As one of the three great powers of the Three Realms, nobody dared to challenge them. Thus, all of the deities were rather laid back in their work, and did not feel nervous at all.

They’ve all been just having fun, and not taking their jobs seriously...

It’s one thing if it is actually peaceful. But right now, the demons

have their eyes set on the Three Realms. They might actually attack any time.

If this continues, then the Heavenly Court might be the first to succumb.

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen felt hesitant in continuing on with his following plans. The system gave him the mission of letting the Heavenly Court indulge in all sorts of things, but...

Dingdong.

At that moment, his phone on the vine chair buzzed.

It was a system notification.

## Chapter 535 – The System’s Ambition

---

Inside a pitch black secret room, there was a huge bronze mirror hung on the wall. Meanwhile, the mirror itself showed a black-robed man with his face covered.

“How was it?”

“It was effective,” a reply was heard from in the room. “However, the death of the heavenly soldier has already caught the attention of the higherups of the Heavenly Court.”

“That’s fine, you don’t need to do anything again soon. I just needed to know that it is effective on heavenly soldiers.” The man in the bronze mirror smiled.

The person within the secret room raised his eyebrows, “I understand. Alright, I can’t speak too much with you now. Li Jing has come to investigate my manor. I have to go out and see him.”

“Go, remember to be careful. Don’t let yourself get exposed!” the man in the bronze mirror ordered.

The person in the room also nodded, “Naturally, but understand that I’m merely only helping you because of back then...”

“I understand. Okay, hurry up and go to see Li Jing. Don’t let him become suspicious of you. If he does, then we have to change the plans,” the man in the bronze mirror smiled, then disappeared.

Meanwhile, the man in the secret room knocked on the wall, then walked out, and put on a warm smile to greet his guest. “Heavenly King Li. What a rare guest!”

...

At the same time, Ye Zichen, who was sitting on a vine chair within the True Lord manor, raised his eyebrows when he saw a system notification.

The system is actually sending me a notification at this

moment...

System Notification: Why are you worried about the Heavenly Court?

This system is truly amazing. I just started to get worried for the Heavenly Court, and he already sent me a notification.

Ye Zichen walked over to tell the Seven Fairies to practice by themselves for a moment, then walked over to a rather isolated area and spoke, "System, just what do you want me to do? The internal structure of the heavenly court is already failing, and you are still telling me to give them entertainment methods to let them indulge in it? Just what is your purpose for doing so?"

System Notification: Can't you understand?

"No!" Ye Zichen replied with a frown. As one of the great factions of the Heavenly Court, it could be said that it will become an important power in fighting against the Demon Realm in the future.

However, the system was making the Heavenly Court indulge in entertainment. Isn't this essentially decreasing the Heavenly Court's strength?

System Notification: Since it is already ruined on the inside, then wouldn't speeding up the process and let it reach a bottom point to then over throw it for a new dynasty be better?"

"Why not choose to salvage it?" Ye Zichen frowned upon hearing that.

System Notification: There is no point in salvaging it.

System Notification: The Jade Emperor has already lost his edge due to the long period of peace. Even if we salvage him, it is already too late. All he wants to do is to live leisurely, he is no longer the him of the past.

System Notification: The Heavenly Court is actually filled with

all sorts of people of all sorts of factions, such a power cannot be left as it is.

Ye Zichen's eyebrows locked together as he read the system's messages, but he did not speak. At that moment, the system sent another message.

System Notification: What's more, doing all this is preparation for your Struggle of the Three Realms.

“Struggle for the Three Realms!?”

It was not the first time the system had mentioned it, but Ye Zichen still did not know what exactly he was supposed to do.

System Notification: Click on your reputation, and open up the reputation leaderboard to see where you are placed.

Reputation Leaderboard of the Three Realms?

Ye Zichen frowned in confusion, but still did as the system told him.

It was as the system had said, one of the buttons after he clicked onto his reputation did say “Reputation Leaderboard of the Three Realms”.

Tap.

A huge list appeared in the air in front of him.

In first place was Amitabha of Sukhavati. His Reputation was at 127577.

The next was the Jade Emperor with a Reputation of 35427.

The third was the Underworld's Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven with a Reputation of 27968.

After that was Shakyamuni of the western Buddhist domain at 26473.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen was placed 17th on the Reputation Leaderboard with 15902 Reputation.

System Notification: You see it? The first twenty on the Reputation Leaderboard have the right to compete for the Lord of the Three Realms. You are currently in the 17th place, then that means you are able to compete against others for one of lord of one of the three realms.

System Notification: You can choose to compete for the position of the master of the Heavenly Court, Underworld or Immortal Region. Of course, that is assuming you have enough supporters.

System Notification: I told you to give ways of entertaining themselves to the deities of the Heavenly Court so that they will harbor good will towards you, while also making the Jade Emperor even more useless. Then, even if you don't go and compete for the master of the Heavenly Court, as long as you have enough supporters, you can still compete for the Master of the Three Realms.

"I don't really follow," Ye Zichen read the notification several times, but was still unable to comprehend the system's meaning.

System Notification: After you become Master of the Three Realms, you will be able to order the entirety of the Three Realms. When that happens, everyone in the Three Realms will have to listen to your orders. When that happens, whether someone is fatuous or not doesn't matter, they all have to do as you ordered. All you have to do is remain conscious!

Ye Zichen finally understood when he saw the message.

However, what followed was a feeling of shock. The system's plans are truly too huge, it actually wants me to lead the Three Realms!

"Don't you feel like that requirement is too much for me?"

System Notification: is it? The Immortal Region's people should follow you in the first place, so let's disregard that place. The personality of the Great Sacred Emperor of the Underworld is

strange. He acts according to what he likes, so when the demons attack, he might not work as hard as he possibly could. The Heavenly Court's Jade Emperor is foolish, and is cowardly, so he cannot be relied upon. There is only you. Do you not want to save Xiao Yumei?

“You have news on Xiao Yumei!”

Ye Zichen was shocked.

System Notification: If you want to save Xiao Yumei, then you have to become the Master of the Three Realms. For all the living in the Three Realms, and for the woman you love, consider it properly!

With that, the system notifications disappeared from his screen again, leaving Ye Zichen to squat down with his phone in his hands.

Master of the Three Realms!

What great ambition, but... how can he be so sure that I can take upon the duty?

...

Times flies, and the deadline Ye Zichen had arranged with the Jade Emperor had arrived. In just fourteen days, the Seven Fairies learned a total of seven girl band songs and dances.

Ye Zichen got them to go through them all once again, then put away his phone with a clap of his hands, “Let's leave it at this. Based on your performance right now, it should be a very exciting show.”

“Sky Sovereign, thank you for your training,” the Seven Fairies replied together.

Ye Zichen also smiled in satisfaction, then raised his eyebrows, “There is only one day left till the performance. I have already people advertise it. When the day comes, your stage will be the one

like in the videos I showed you. There will be lots of audience members. You will become the brightest stars in the Heavenly Court!”

The Seven Fairies nodded in anticipation. The reason they had worked so hard was because they were astonished by the size of the audience in the videos. In order to become people like the performers in the videos, they had used up all their efforts and more.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen nodded, “But before that, let’s... go and pick out your costumes!”

## Chapter 536 – Suspicion

---

“Choose from the clothes over here yourselves, but don’t choose overly conservative ones. You should still remember what kind of clothes the girl bands in the videos wore, right?” Ye Zichen pointed at the clothing shop filled with clothes and spoke to the Seven Fairies.

“Okay, Sky Sovereign,” the Seven Fairies ran in with a giggle.

From the looks of things, Ye Zichen felt as if they didn’t really hear him at all, and merely wanted to enter to pick what they liked.

Ye Zichen stood outside and shook his head, but didn’t stop them.

During the past two weeks, they did indeed work very hard, so it wasn’t a bad idea for them to relax a little.

Ye Zichen took a cigarette from his pocket and put it into his mouth, then stretched lazily outside of the shop.

Dingdong.

His phone rang. Ye Zichen took it out, then saw that it was a message from the interning White Impermanence.

“I’ve investigated what you asked me to these past few days, but I didn’t find anything.”

Ye Zichen licked his lips when he saw the message. Although the Jade Emperor didn’t care about the death of the heavenly soldier, he did.

During that evening, he had immediately asked White Impermanence to investigate and see if the deceased would appear in the Underworld. If he showed up and didn’t drink Meng Po’s soup, then help Ye Zichen ask the soldier about the situation then.

However, from the message that White Impermanence sent

over...

“Mhmm, I understand. I’ve troubled you.”

“There’s no need for you to be so courteous,” White Impermanence smiled. “Since the Modern Realm has been frozen, are you in the Three Realms now?”

“Yes!” Ye Zichen answered.

White Impermanence sent over another message, “Alright, I understand. I’ll come over to the Immortal Region to find you when I have time, but it won’t be anytime soon. The Underworld is in quite a bit of mess as well.”

“What happened in the Underworld?” Ye Zichen asked in confusion.

“I don’t know either. People are all randomly dying over here. You should know that the people here are already ghosts, if they die again, then they would have really died. The Yama Kings and King Ksitigarbha are investigating into it, but they aren’t making much progress.”

Ye Zichen’s eyebrows locked together even tighter when he read White Impermanence’s message.

People are actually dying in the Underworld as well.

It was one thing if it’s happening normally, but at a times like this... There might be some connection between the random deaths in the Heavenly Court and Underworld.

“Alright then, I have to go. I’ve got some stuff that I have to do. Talk to you later.”

With that, White Impermanence stopped responding.

Ye Zichen returned his phone to his pocket in a pondering manner, while the majority of his cigarette had already turned into a long pillar of ash.

Only when the heat from his cigarette touched his finger did Ye

Zichen return to his senses and chuck the cigarette butt away.

This is strange, but what sort of connection can there possibly be?

Approximately an hour later, Ye Zichen returned to the shop once again, and saw that the Seven Fairies had already finished picking out the clothes they liked.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but raise his eyebrows when he saw their appearance.

They really do kind of look like a girl band!

Tall red high heels, leather hot pants, suspenders... The fact that they revealed a large amount of skin also made them very eye catching.

"Sky Sovereign, do you really think this is okay?" the Seven Fairies bit their lips. It was the first time they had worn anything like that, so they did felt a bit embarrassed.

Wow.

Ye Zichen grabbed seven scarfs, and draped them around the fairies, then raised his eyebrows with a smile, "Not bad. It's nearly time. Let's head over!"

The stage was set on an empty space on the eighteenth heaven by Yue Lao when he received the request from Ye Zichen three days prior.

When Ye Zichen and the Seven Fairies arrived on the scene, he noticed that Yue Lao truly had not held back.

There was barely any difference with what a concert stage would look like in the Modern Realm. The only difference was the lack of an elevator.

As time passed on, Ye Zichen told the Seven Fairies to go over to the backstage to replenish their makeup.

As deities gradually arrived at the scene, the Red Packet Server

also livened up.

Barefoot Immortal: I really wonder what the visual feast Sky Sovereign talked about would be like?

Han Xiangzi: You still care about that after becoming a buddha?

God of Thunder: You already have Immortal Lady He, you still care about this?

Erlang Shen: You already have Mother of Lightning, you still care about this?

God of Fortune: You already have the Third Princess, you still care about this?

The rest of the deities: Ahem...

Erlang Shen: Stop trying to cause trouble. We're all people with families, we merely came here to support Sky Sovereign, understood?

God of Thunder: Yang Jijian is right. I definitely didn't come here to see the Seven Fairies. I merely came to support Sky Sovereign.

Mother of Lightning: Is that so? <insert a row of sneering emojis>

God of Thunder: Of course.

Canopy Marshal: I, Old Pig, is not like you guys. I just came to look at beauties, so what? I, Old Pig, just says whatever I think. I'm not like you guys who only make excuses.

Erlang Shen: Stop trying to cause trouble here!

Jade Emperor: How long until it begins?

The moment the deities in the group saw the Jade Emperor, they immediately stopped talking, put down their phones and looked around. Only to see a slightly chubby man in a golden robe stand in the sky and look at the stage in anticipation.

"Jade Emperor seems to want to see it even more so than us," Yang Jian nudged Canopy Marshal with his elbow and twitched his

mouth. “He actually has the face to punish us. In my opinion, if you’re talking about playing around, he’s does it to an even greater extreme than we do.”

“Yeah,” God of Fortune couldn’t help but snort. “But he’s the Jade Emperor, so nobody dares to piss him off.”

“Agreed!” God of Thunder nodded.

“Be quieter,” Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li flew over with Nezha and frowned. “If Jade Emperor hears that, you guys won’t be able to avoid some punishment.”

“Hello, uncles and older brothers,” Nezha cupped his hands towards the deities.

“Hi hi,” God of Fortune patted Nezha on the head, then snorted with a gloomy face. “Old Li, we’re not speaking bad things about the Jade Emperor behind his back, but his actions... Sigh, can’t you tell after so long?”

“Let’s stop talking about it, there’s no need to. No matter what, he’s still the master of the Heavenly Court,” Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li signaled everyone to stop.

God of Fortune twitched his mouth and wanted to say more, but God of Thunder grabbed him and shook his head.

“How did your investigation go?” Leizhanzi raised his eyebrows.

“I didn’t get anything. I went over to the manors of all the deities in the Heavenly Court, but there were no suspicious people except...”

“Except who!?” Yang Jian and co. asked nervously.

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li shook his head and replied, “I might have sensed it wrong, but I feel like there’s something strange with Count of Wind and Lord of Rain recently.”

“The two of them...” the deities in the surroundings all showed a hesitant expression and stopped talking.

Seeing their expressions, Heavenly King Li quickly spoke, “I might have guessed it wrong.”

“No... It might really be them,” at that very moment, a voice rang out behind the deities.

They turned their heads back, then put on drastically surprised expressions.

“Taibai!”

# Chapter 537 – I Want Your Position as the Master of the Heavenly Court

---

The moment Canopy Marshal blurted out, Yang Jian slapped his head.

“Shhh!”

God of Fortune, God of Thunder and co. immediately surrounded Taibai Jinxing, then glanced towards the Jade Emperor before asking, “Taibai, why did you come up here?”

“Why are you guys so nervous? What can the Jade Emperor do to me even if he sees me?” Taibai Jinxing smiled.

God of Thunder snorted in response to Taibai Jinxing’s carefree expression, “Don’t just make the assumption because you guys were on good terms before. Right now, you basically betrayed the Heavenly Court. If you get caught by the Jade Emperor.... Hmmph.”

Even though God of Thunder didn’t finish his words, his meaning was obvious.

“Alright, I understand,” Taibai Jinxing maintained his carefree expression. “I’ve already understood the Jade Emperor’s personality very well. To be honest, he really isn’t suitable to be the master of the Heavenly Court any longer.”

“Shh!” Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li immediately covered his mouth.

God of Thunder also gulped, “Are you seeking death!? This is the Heavenly Court and you actually said that! If the Jade Emperor finds out, then it’s one thing he kills you, but he’ll take his anger out on us as well!”

“Yeah, Geezer Taibai, you got a lot braver after going out!” Yang Jian twitched his mouth.

“Look at how scared you guys are,” Taibai Jinxing pushed Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li’s hand away and frowned. “It’s not that I got braver, it’s that you guys got more cowardly. After so many years of peaceful days, you guys are starting to take each day leisurely, right?”

God of Thunder and co. turned silent. It actually wasn’t their fault.

Most of the deities in the Heavenly Court were like that. The lack of war naturally caused people to relax. There had been nobody who dared to challenge the Heavenly Court’s might for several hundred thousand years, and even the heavenly soldiers who used to train daily at the South Heaven’s Gate no longer trained so. That was because they truly relaxed.

“Your mindsets will be the death of you,” Taibai Jinxing frowned. “Never mind, there is no point in me speaking too much. I merely came over to remind you guys to be careful of the Count of the Wind and Lord of the Rain!”

“Oh yeah, you just said Count of the Wind and Lord of the Rain... Do you know something!?” Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li raised his eyebrows.

“I did try to scry, but I couldn’t see everything too clearly. I merely came here because I was worried about you old friends. I also have some things I want to tell Ye Zichen. Help me...” Before Taibai Jinxing could finish, Jade Emperor suddenly walked over from behind them.

“When did you arrive?”

The moment Yang Jian and co. heard those words, they immediately froze.

They turned around and smiled, “We’ve arrived for some time.”

“Oh? If there someone else behind you guys? He’s actually not coming to greet this emperor?” Jade Emperor frowned, then

walked towards the place behind them.

Sweat begun to appear on all of the deity's foreheads. If we let Jade Emperor see Taibai Jinxing right now...

Suddenly, a pleasant melody sounded out through the night. Jade Emperor stopped in his tracks, then looked towards the stage.

God of Thunder and co. also let out a long sigh of relief, then signaled Taibai Jinxing to quickly leave with his hands.

"We can talk in detail some time. You better hurry away in this situation. Otherwise, it'll be hard to deal with if Jade Emperor turns around," Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li also turned around and whispered to Taibai Jinxing.

Taibai Jinxing glanced over at the Jade Emperor, then nodded, "Then see you in the Immortal Region."

However, the deities clearly over thought about everything.

The moment the melody sounded out and the Seven Fairies descended from the clouds, the entire crowd went wild.

Jade Emperor looked intently down at the stage. To be honest, if the girls were not his daughters...

He would definitely want to take them into his harem as his concubines.

Ye Zichen stood in the backstage with a smile, and watched on as the Seven Fairies performed at their finest.

It wasn't hard for Ye Zichen to notice from the expressions of the deities that his visual feast was a success.

Dingdong.

You received the praise of the Golden Boy and Jade Girl.  
Reputation +1.

Dingdong.

You received Iron Crutch Li's praise. Reputation +1.

Dingdong.

You received Han Xiangzi's admiration. Reputation +10.

...

System notifications continued popped up on Ye Zichen's phone. During a concert of a short two hours, Ye Zichen actually received over three thousand Reputation.

His ranking on the Reputation Leaderboard of the Three Realms also rose continuously.

It finally stopped when it reached 10th place.

...

When the final song ended, all of the deities of the Heavenly Court were shocked. The performance was truly a visual feast for them.

Of course, Ye Zichen was not the only person who benefitted from the concert...

The Seven Fairies also gained a lot of fans with the concert, which also turned into the Enhancement of Belief. Under the enhancement of such a power, their strength also increased.

When the concert ended, all of the deities left unsatiated. Ye Zichen was certain that in the following days, all of the chitchat in the Heavenly Court would be about the Heavenly Court's first girl band's performance.

...

Three days later in the Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches.

"Sky Sovereign Nameless truly did not disappoint this emperor," the face of Jade Emperor, who sat upon his throne, was filled with smiles.

For some reason, when he saw the Jade Emperor's joyous look, he couldn't help but get reminded of the smile of foolish emperors

in historical dramas when they received a toy they like.

“Sky Sovereign won the bet this time, so this emperor will naturally keep my word and void God of Thunder and co.’s punishment,” Jade Emperor waved his hand.

God of Thunder and co. all walked up and gave their thanks, “Thank you, your majesty.”

“Haha, if you’re going to thank, then it would be better for you to thank Sky Sovereign. He was the one who saved you guys.”

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

God of Fortune, God of Thunder, Yang Jian and Canopy Marshal’s intimacy level shot up, and only stopped when it neared Respected.

Ye Zichen maintained a soft smile as he stood on the side.

Jade Emperor chuckled, “Sky Sovereign is truly capable. You actually managed to make a show so brilliant. Sky Sovereign is truly talented!”

“Your Majesty is flattering me. I merely did it randomly,” Ye Zichen cupped his hands.

“Sky Sovereign is too humble. If that was just you doing it randomly, then just what would it be like if you made it amazing? Is Sky Sovereign interested in staying in the Heavenly Court? This emperor can give you a position that is above all but one, grant you the constitution of a celestial being, and allow you to enjoy endless wealth.”

It was clear that Ye Zichen’s concert had gain the Jade Emperor’s favor, and invoked the Jade Emperor’s talent loving heart.

However, Ye Zichen merely smiled and did not reply.

“Haha, no problem. This emperor will give Sky Sovereign some time to think. Oh yeah, this emperor had promised Sky Sovereign a huge gift at the time. I wonder what does Sky Sovereign desire?” Jade Emperor smiled.

Ye Zichen’s smile also drastically changed, “Is anything okay?”

“Of course. As long as Sky Sovereign wants it, this emperor will definitely satisfy you,” Jade Emperor replied like he was willing to offer anything.

Ye Zichen nodded, then asked, “Then... What if I asked you for your position as the master of the Heavenly Court?”

# Chapter 538 – Yang Jian’s Choice

---

Yang Jian was shocked.

God of Fortune was confused.

God of Thunder was stunned.

Canopy Marshal was dumbfounded.

All of them thought that there was something wrong with their ears. Just now, Sky Sovereign said he wanted the position of the master of the Heavenly Court?

Not only them, even the Jade Emperor’s smile froze.

“What did Sky Sovereign say just now?”

“I said, if I want the position of the master of the Heavenly Court, would you give it to me, Your Majesty?”

Jade Emperor’s expression turned for the worse. He looked down at Ye Zichen, and tried to understand why he had asked that.

“Bro, are you retarded!?” Yang Jian yanked Ye Zichen. He’s truly foolishly brave now. He actually dared to ask the Jade Emperor for the position of the master of the Heavenly Court. Isn’t he seeking death!?

“Sky Sovereign, is that what you really want?” Jade Emperor’s expression turned even darker.

However, at that very moment, Ye Zichen suddenly snickered, “Do you think that I’m dumb? I was just kidding with Your Majesty. You immediately asked me what I want, but how would I dare to ask for anything?”

“Sky Sovereign, seriously. How about this, since Sky Sovereign doesn’t know what you want, then I shall grant Sky Sovereign a token. From now on, all deities shall treat you as if they were facing me, and this token will grant you access to anywhere within the Heavenly Court.”

Whoosh.

The Jade Emperor threw a token into Ye Zichen's hand.

Ye Zichen immediately received it, and thanked the Jade Emperor, "Thank you, Your Majesty."

"Sky Sovereign is too courteous. Alright, I've already rewarded who should be rewarded. Since Sky Sovereign will need to meet with many other deities, then this emperor will not take up any more of your time. However, I would like to ask Sky Sovereign to stay in the Heavenly Court for longer, and let us get closer to one another!"

"Your Majesty, thank you for your favor."

...

When all of the deities departed from the Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches, Yang Jian hooked his arm around Ye Zichen's neck and raised his eyebrows, "Bro, you scared me to death just now. How were you so daring as to say something like that in front of the Jade Emperor!?"

"Yeah, Sky Sovereign's words caused me to break out in a cold sweat!" God of Thunder also patted his chest.

"It was just a joke, is there a need to take it so seriously?" Ye Zichen smiled.

At that moment, God of Fortune also spoke up, "Sky Sovereign knows that's a joke, but if the Jade Emperor actually got angry, and wants to kill you..."

"What would you guys do?" Ye Zichen suddenly asked.

However, the deities merely laughed dryly and did not speak.

They really wouldn't know what to do if the Jade Emperor actually wanted to punish Ye Zichen.

"Never mind, pretend like I didn't say anything. Let's head back."

...

Back at the True Lord Manor, Ye Zichen sat on the stone chair in the square pavilion and looked up at the sky.

Yang Jian walked over with a plate of fruits, and sat opposite him, "Bro, it wasn't all that convenient for me to say anything just now. Don't take it to heart."

"No worries. I know your difficulties since the Jade Emperor is the master of the Heavenly Court," Ye Zichen smiled, then picked up an apple from the plate and took a bite.

"If Jade Emperor really wants to do anything to you, then I will help you ask for mercy," Yang Jian said seriously. "if he doesn't listen, and nothing else works, then I'll start a revolution with my army. No matter what, I cannot allow him to harm you, bro."

Ye Zichen's hand, which was holding the apple, stiffened. He looked at Yang Jian's solemn expression, then smiled. "Thanks."

Regardless of whether Yang Jian was speaking the truth. Ye Zichen was very happy to hear him say that.

"But bro, why did you make that sort of joke with him just now," Yang Jian asked in confusion.

"He asked me what I want, and I didn't know what to ask for, so I wanted to tease him," Ye Zichen smiled.

Yang Jian couldn't help but shake his head, "You've really got guts, you actually dared to make that sort of joke with the Jade Emperor. I'm telling you, my uncle's seriously petty."

"Haha, but I'm fine!"

Yet, the truth was that Ye Zichen did truly want the position of the master of the Heavenly Court.

During the past few days, he had thought long and hard about what the system had said. He did find it rather logical. Since it was already rotten internally, then might as well destroy it. His

question was merely a test, but he found out that he was in too much of a hurry.

God of Thunder and co. were people he were on rather good terms with, but when it came to sensitive questions like the one he asked, only Yang Jian gave an answer Ye Zichen wanted to hear. What's more, Yang Jian had given it privately.

If I was determined to get the position, not many people will actually stand on my side.

It seems like it's still early for me to change the Three Realms.

"Sky Sovereign, Yang Jian..."

At that moment, Yue Lao hurried in.

Ye Zichen and Yang Jian both turned around, while Yang Jian chucked an apple at Yue Lao.

Yue Lao caught it frantically.

Yang Jian raised his eyebrows, "Why did you come over here in such a hurry? Do you want to play Landlord?"

"I came to find Sky Sovereign," Yue Lao returned the apple to the plate. He glanced over to Ye Zichen. "Sky Sovereign, don't you need Beast Fire? I got news of it."

...

All of the deities on good terms with Ye Zichen went to the South Heaven's gate to send him off.

"Are you sure you're not going to stay a bit longer?" Yang Jian frowned as he looked at Ye Zichen, who was going to descend.

"Nah, I have to go and take a look at the Beast Fire. What's more, there are villagers waiting for me down there. They might be worried since I haven't returned in so long," Ye Zichen replied with a smile.

"Big bro, you're leaving too soon. I've been on duty all the time,

so I didn't get a chance to talk to you," Immortality Peach Fairy walked over with a pout.

Ye Zichen rubbed her head, "I'll come up when I have time in the future. Play with the Third Prince properly. I feel like the two of you suit each other rather well."

"Hehe, Sky Sovereign's the best," Third Prince Nezha giggled.

Immortality Peach Fairy blushed, then pouted, "Him? He's just a kid."

"Who's a kid. I'm all grown up!" Third Prince Nezha said in frustration.

Ye Zichen shook his head and watched the two argue.

At the same time, Chang'e also walked over as she bit her lips. A confused look flashed across Ye Zichen's eyes as he looked at the lady who was able to charm everyone.

For some reason, I keep on overlapping her with Xiao Yumei!

"You have to be careful after going back to the Immortal Region. If there is anything that you can't deal with, ensure that you tell Yang Jian and co., and tell them to go over to help you. Don't shoulder everything yourself, understood?" Chang'e's tone was filled with care. However, Ye Zichen was moved beyond that.

Even her tone is so similar to that of Xiao Yumei's!

I really wonder how she's doing in the Demon Realm.

He clenched his teeth and his fists.

After a long time, Ye Zichen finally calmed himself down, then nodded towards Chang'e, "I will."

With that, he waved towards everyone standing within the South Heaven's Gate.

"I'm off. Let's chat in the group!"

# Chapter 539 – News of Beast Fire

---

In the same pitch dark secret room as before, a white-haired man in a long black robe sat in front of the ancient bronze mirror.

“How is it?” The figure in the mirror smiled.

The man knitted his eyebrows, “The person you told me to pay attention to has already left using the South Heaven’s Gate. It’s all thanks to him that the Jade Emperor has become even more useless.”

“He’s actually left?” The figure in the bronze mirror replied in surprise. Then he rubbed his nose. “It seems like he is still unable to do it. But this is good as well, if he continued to stay, then it might affect my following plans.”

“Just what are you trying to do?” The man in front of the mirror frowned.

The figure smiled, “You don’t need to worry about that. Just do what you’re supposed to do properly. Oh yeah, there is no need to cause panic in the Heavenly Court anytime soon. It’s not yet time.”

As the figure in the bronze mirror slowly dispersed, the man in front of the mirror also let out a sigh while wearing a frown, then disappeared into the darkness.

...

The first thing Ye Zichen did after returning to the Immortal Region was to hurry over to where the Spiritual Breeze Villagers were.

When he arrived in the manor, the scene completely stunned him. In a short half a month’s time, the yards were already filled with spiritual herbs, causing a dense spiritual energy to swirl around in the courtyard.

The villagers also seemed to have strengthened significantly.

What's more, their manor also seemed a lot larger.

"Ye Zichen," Stone exclaimed and walked over without a shirt on. From the spiritual energy around his body, Ye Zichen saw that he had actually reached the level of a False Earth Immortal.

"Big Brother Stone, this village... You guys..."

I merely stayed in the Heavenly Court for less than a month's time, but the changes in the village are truly shocking.

"Recently, all of our villagers have been strengthened by a fair bit. To be fair, it's all thanks to you."

"All thanks to me?" Ye Zichen was stunned.

Stone immediately smiled in a teasing manner, "Your little woman came by a few times, and gave our villagers quite a bit of pills and scriptures for cultivation. She also gifted us the surrounding manors and told us that you will have a use for them in the future. Also, look..."

Stone pointed forward, "She said those people are for you to use. They are Human Immortal level experts, and there are two complete stage ones at that!"

...

Ye Zichen was truly shocked. It is clear that Zuo Mo had come over again while I was in the Heavenly Court.

Just what does she want to do? Is she that certain that I will establish my own force?

"Haha, your luck with women is pretty good," Xuan-Yuan Xiang also appeared and teased Ye Zichen. It was clear that the surrounding spiritual energy made her feel extremely comfortable, since she had a blissful expression on her face. "I already noticed it in the Modern Realm. Little Master, you have really good luck in this life."

"Go away," Ye Zichen rolled his eyes.

Stone was extremely confused, “What happened?”

“I wasn’t talking to you. Oh yeah, where’s Xue Qi?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. He did have something to do in the Immortal Region.

“Oh him? He should be practicing spiritual techniques in the backyard. I’ll take you over.”

...

“If I didn’t get it wrong, then the place you’re talking about might be near Mount Biluo, which is just outside Pond City. Half-Beastmen are there all the time, it isn’t a safe place,” Xue Qi sat in the living room and frowned.

At that moment, Xue Lan walked over with washed fruits, and placed them in front of Ye Zichen with a giggle, “Zichen-gege, have some.”

“Good girl,” Ye Zichen rubbed Xue Lan’s head.

Xue Lan immediately lowered her head and smiled happily.

“Lil’ Lan, you really are mean. Your Big Brother Stone is right here, yet you didn’t give any to Big Brother Stone,” Stone teased.

Xue Lan immediately wrinkled her nose and snorted, “Big Brother Stone, tell sis to wash it for you.”

“Hey, listen to what you’re saying. Big Brother Stone feels like there’s more to your words!” Stone smiled in a teasing manner.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen immediately felt like everything was going in a strange direction, so he patted Lil’ Lan’s head, “Lil’ Lan, go out first. I have to chat about some stuff with your brother and Big Brother Stone.”

“Okay,” Xue Lan left the room.

Sensing that Stone wanted to say something, Ye Zichen hurriedly spoke first, “Xue Qi, you just said that place is Mount Biluo, and half-beastmen live there? It’s part of the Immortal Region, why are

half-beastmen there? Shouldn't they be in the Endless Beast Region?"

"Actually, half-beastmen are in a rather awkward spot over here. They are not actually spiritual beasts, nor are they humans. That's why they can't live in the Endless Beast Region, or set foot in human cities. That's why they have to live outside of the cities," Xue Qi said. "But don't think that they're weak. Rumors says that the city lord of Pond City tried to send out an army to eradicate them, only for it to return in failure!"

Ye Zichen nodded and squinted his eyes. If that's the case, then Mount Biluo is going to be a dangerous place. There should be Sky Immortal level experts there if they caused even a city lord to be unable to do anything.

But...

There's a Beast Fire there!

Yue Lao told me that it is on Mount Biluo, that's why I returned in such a hurry!

I have to get the Beast Fire if I want to refine pills!

"Do you have a map of the area? I'm going to go over to Mount Biluo," Ye Zichen asked after a brief hesitation.

"Did I hear you correctly? You're headed to Mount Biluo?" Xue Qi was speechless. "Didn't you hear what I just said? That is the half-beastmen's territory, aren't you seeking death by going over there?"

"I have to go."

Ye Zichen was determined to learn refining pills. As long as he got the Beast Fire, he would be able to get the secret manual of pill refining from Old Lord Taishang.

It is worth the risk!

"I can't help you even if you are so determined," Xue Qi

shrugged. “Our Spiritual Breeze Village is merely a small village outside of Maple City. Our village does have a map of the outside world left by a strong person ten thousand years ago, but it’s been so long. Ignoring the fact that the roads might have changed, I can’t even find the map!”

Ye Zichen’s expression darkened. Doesn’t that mean I have to stop here?

“I heard Ye Zichen returned. Why didn’t he come over to the auction house to greet this lady?”

A casual snicker suddenly sounded out outside the room. The three men in the room turned around, and saw Zuo Mo walk in, while fanning herself like a scholar.

“Lady Zuo.”

Everyone in the room stood up. Zuo Mo had helped their village a lot recently. She was a savior-like person for them.

Of course, they also found out about Zuo Mo’s identity during their contact.

The Young Lady of the Treasure Tower!

“Mhmm,” Zuo Mo nodded, then pointed at Ye Zichen with her fan. “Hey, the brat sitting over there. Why didn’t you stand up to greet me after seeing this lady?”

Ye Zichen smiled when he saw her.

She should have a map!

## Chapter 540 – Girl Band Server

---

“Why are you looking at me like that!?” Zuo Mo hugged her shoulders and took a few steps back when she noticed Ye Zichen’s smile.

“Hehe, don’t be nervous, let’s chat where there’s no-one else.”

Ye Zichen stood up from his chair, then walked over to Zuo Mo, then dragged her out of the room by the arm.

Zuo Mo’s heart beat rapidly as Ye Zichen dragged her along to a side garden.

“Let go of me,” she struggled out of Ye Zichen’s grasp, then took a few steps backwards. “Just what exactly do you want from me!?”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and smiled when he saw her vigilant look, “How did you handle the old man after turning to the clan?”

“Him? My father naturally let him go. My father is a nostalgic person. Regardless of what the old man has done, he worked very hard for the Treasure Tower previously. Due to that, my father merely banished him from the Treasure Tower,” Zuo Mo shrugged helplessly. It was clear that she did not support her father’s method of doing things.

“That isn’t a good idea. He’ll become trouble for your Treasure Tower in the future. Oh yeah, what about Zuo Qingcheng? Did you report her in when you returned?”

“How could anything happen to her with my second uncle protecting her?” Zuo Mo twitched her mouth. “Although my father is the Tower Head, my second uncle didn’t just sit idle these past years. He has a bunch of loyal people in the tower.”

With that, Zuo Mo brought back her vigilant look, “What exactly do you want? Don’t try to catch me off guard. I will scream if you have any are harboring ill intentions towards me in broad

daylight.”

Ha.

Ye Zichen laughed, then shrugged with a wry smile. “Just what are you thinking about? I merely brought you over here to ask whether you have the map of Mount Biluo.”

“Mount Biluo?” Zuo Mo raised her eyebrows. “You already know?”

“Huh?” Ye Zichen put on a confused look.

“Didn’t you ask me to help you investigate the whereabouts of a jade pendant? I received news that it appeared on Mount Biluo. That’s why I came over. Judging from your expression, it doesn’t seem like you’re going over for the jade pendant?”

“The pendant is also over there!?”

I really didn’t expect the jade pendant to be there as well. I have to get the Beast Fire, as well have to seal Hanba. I suppose I’m going to have to go over to Mount Biluo no matter what.

“We must go over,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang said in Ye Zichen’s consciousness. “The jade pendant might have appeared there due to someone doing that intentionally. No matter what, we have to have the jade pendant in our hands.”

“I understand.” Ye Zichen replied in his mind.

Then he turned towards Zuo Mo, “When can you leave?”

“When did I say I’m going with you?” Zuo Mo raised her eyes and put on a proud expression.

Ye Zichen merely smiled in response and shrugged, “You’re dressed like this, are you seriously going to tell me that you’re not going? Alright, then since you’re not going, give me the map, I’ll go by myself.”

“Tsk, you’re smart!” Zuo Mo rolled her eyes, then twitched her mouth. “C’mon, I already prepared the carriage. But don’t you

need to say farewell to your villagers?”

“No need for that. They should be used to my absence already. The jade pendant cannot wait. Let’s hurry.”

...

Pond City was rather far from Maple City. Even when an earth dragon ran at full speed, it would take them an entire day to get there.

Since Ye Zichen had nothing to do in the carriage, he took out his phone, only to discover a new group in his list of active chats.

Girl Band Server.

The Seven Fairies’ performance had a huge impact, and Ye Zichen took the chance to tell Yue Lao to create a group when he had time. I didn’t expect him to do it so quickly...

Announcement: Heavenly Court’s First Girl Band will be performing on the Eighteen Heaven tonight at nine o’clock. Those who are interested, come and buy your tickets now!

Yue Lao [Girl Band Manager]: Floor tickets are thirty thousand cultivation experience. General admission tickets are ten thousand cultivation experience. Buy them now!

Erlang Shen [Girl Band Assistant]: If you want to come and watch, then buy one quickly. It’s a once in a lifetime chance.

God of Thunder: You guys are truly evil merchants.

Erlang Shen [Girl Band Assistant]: Nothing comes for free in this world. A rich bloke like you should stop complaining.

Canopy Marsha: I, Old Pig, will definitely come to support them.

God of Fortune: Same here.

Immortality Peach Fairy: Nezha said he will come as well. Reserve two floor tickets for him.

Erlang Shen [Girl Band Assistant]: You see that? Even if you don’t

want to come watch it, others will.

God of Thunder: Who said that? Give me a floor ticket.

Yue Lao [Girl Band Manager]: If you want a ticket, then send me a red packet. Entrance will only be allowed upon the display of the ticket. If you don't have a ticket, then don't even try to get in...

Ye Zichen couldn't help but send a message as well when he saw the heated chat.

“Can you give me a floor ticket as well?”

Erlang Shen [Girl Band Manager]: Bro, you made it to the Immortal Region?

“I arrived ages ago,” Ye Zichen smiled, then raised his eyebrows. “How did you end up as the girl band's assistant?”

Erlang Shen [Girl Band Assistant]: I have nothing to do. What's more, the girls are my little sisters, so being their assistant is nice as well.

Seven Fairies: If Sky Sovereign wants to watch, then I'll send you a video when the concert's over. There'll also be some private clips!

God of Thunder: I'm jealous!

Canopy Marshal: I would like to report! Yang Jian said that becoming the assistant would allow him to get in close contact with the Seven Fairies, and wouldn't need to pay to watch the concerts! Report complete!

Erlang Shen [Girl Band Assistance]: Zhu Ganglie, do you want to die!?

God of Thunder: Hehe, you're crafty.

Golden Boy: I didn't expect Uncle Yang Jian to be so stingy. Well, that makes sense. He refused to give me a few candies last time.

Jade Girl: Mhmm, Uncle Yang Jian is super stingy!

Erlang Shen [Girl Band Assistant]: You two kids. That was when I was in poverty. If you guys asked for it now, I can give you a huge truck-full!

Golden Boy: Uncle Yang Jian, then give us floor tickets.

Ye Zichen was completely stunned. I seem to recall Golden Boy and Jade Girl as being merely children around six to seven. I didn't expect kids nowadays to be so crafty!

Erlang Shen: Sure, I'll buy them for you. Isn't it just concert tickets?

Erlang Shen: Yue Lao, why did you remove my assistant tag?

Yue Lao [Girl Band Manager]: Due to Canopy Marshal's report, I feel like you are unsuitable for the position. If you want to buy tickets, then please send me a red packet.

Erlang Shen: ...

Ye Zichen couldn't help but snicker.

At that moment, his phone buzzed.

He clicked out of the group, then saw that the Seven Fairies had truly sent him a video.

Private video?

Ye Zichen rubbed his hands, and just as he was about to play it...

Roar...

The earth dragon let out a thunderous howl and stopped.

Ye Zichen nearly flew out due to the sudden stop. He looked up in surprise, and saw that Zuo Mo's situation was no better than his.

"Help!"

## Chapter 541 – Kidnapped

---

Ye Zichen pulled open the curtains, saw that the sky had already turned dark, while several burning torches not so far in front of them.

Beasts were terrified of fire in the dark night, so it was clear that the earth dragon's unease was caused by the flames coming closer.

As the people holding the torches moved closer, Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo could hear the chattering of the horse hooves.

“Help!” An anxious voice was heard once again.

Zuo Mo asked the driver with a frown, “What happened?”

“Young Lady, someone seems to have been met with bandits in front of us. That person is calling for help!” said the driver. “Should we go around them or...”

“Help me!”

A man covered with dirt appeared in front of the carriage before Zuo Mo could even reply.

“I am the junior city lord of Pond City. Please send me back to Pond City, I will definitely thank you greatly for this.”

“Let him come up,” Zuo Mo only felt a bit of pity when she saw the situation.

Hearing that, the man hurriedly jumped into the carriage excitedly.

However, what was strange was that the moment the man climbed on, the pursuers actually went around them a few times, then left. They showed no intention of fighting for the person at all.

“Thank you so much. I really don't know what I would have done if it wasn't for you guys,” the man smiled thankfully.

Zuo Mo nodded, “We should help each other when we’re out. We’re going over to Pond City right now, so we can take you over along the way. But this is quite far from Pond City, how did you appear here?”

“It’s a long story. I was kidnapped by those bandits,” the man sighed. “They wanted to use me to ask my father for ransom, but I managed to run away while they were off guard.”

“Then you’re pretty lucky,” Ye Zichen smiled meaningfully.

The amount of ransom that the city lord’s son could get was no small amount. Since the bandits dared to kidnap the city lord’s son, they were definitely people who lived with their lives on the line.

The fact that they actually stopped chasing when their target climbed onto the carriage...

This is kind of strange!

“Perhaps,” the man shrugged, but the moment he shrugged, Ye Zichen grabbed his arm. “Brother...”

“You’re not the city lord’s son,” Ye Zichen grabbed his wrist tightly with a frown. “Who exactly are you? Why are you trying to get close to us!?”

“Brother, what do you mean by that?” The man revealed a frantic look.

Ye Zichen snorted, “Your hands are very coarse. They are clearly hands of people who often work. Do you need to farm as the city lord’s son?”

“This is from practicing martial arts...”

“Heh, martial arts? If it was from martial arts, then the callus on your hands wouldn’t be like this. What’s more, your [purlicue](#) is weak. You’re at most a person who is physically strong. Say it, who exactly are you!?” Ye Zichen pinned the man onto the carriage.

However, the man suddenly laughed, “I can’t believe you even noticed that, but what a shame, it’s still too late.”

Bang.

Zuo Mo suddenly fell down in the carriage, while Ye Zichen felt a bit light-headed as well. All of a sudden, he was seeing double when he looked at the man.

“Sleep. This young lord has never seen any one be able to resist this Dreamslumber Powder!”

With that, Ye Zichen could no longer fight the sleepiness that was about to overcome him.

“Young Lady!” The driver immediately noticed something amiss within the carriage, however, the man merely scattered a bit of powder towards the driver, causing him to slowly lose consciousness as well.

“Haha, an earth dragon carriage, it seems like I caught a big fish again.”

...

“Ye Zichen...” A soft murmur sounded out by Ye Zichen’s ear, causing him to open his eyes blurrily. When he did, he saw that they were no longer in the carriage.

“You’re awake? It seems like we were tricked,” Zuo Mo, who saw beside him, said dejectedly. Even an idiot could tell in this sort of situation that the man who claimed to be the Pond City’s city lord’s son was lying.

“It’s all my fault. If only I hadn’t allowed him onto the carriage.”

At that moment, both of their hands and feet were tied together. Ye Zichen tried to struggle out of it with a frown...

“Stop trying, it’s useless,” at that moment, a man’s voice could be heard near him.

Ye Zichen turned around, and saw that another man was also tied

up like them not far away. It was obvious from the way the man dressed that he was no ordinary person.

“These ropes are replicas of the Immortal Tying Rope. Although they don’t even contain a ten-thousandth of the strength of the actual celestial artifact, they are still have some special effects. The more you struggle, the tighter the rope will be.”

It was as the man had said, Ye Zichen tried to struggle out of the ropes, only to feel the restraint become even tighter.

Thus, he could only give up, “Who are you?”

“I am Qiu Yuan, the son of Pond City’s city lord. The people who captured me are some bandits. They probably kidnapped me to get money from my father,” the man said with a sigh.

Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo were both shocked for a moment. Then Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, “You are the son of Pond City’s city lord?”

“What? I don’t look like it?” Qiu Yuan raised his eyebrows. “What does your family do? These bandits always capture big fish. Since you guys are here, you are clearly no normal person. Getting captured here together is fate. We might as well get to know each other!”

“You are pretty optimistic,” Ye Zichen smiled.

“It’s not optimism. It’s impossible for us to run with this Immortal-Binding Rope. Of course, you guys have no need to worry, these bandits merely want money. They won’t do anything to us as long as the ransom is paid. So, it could be said that we’re safe,” Qiu Yuan said with a smile.

“So they do have some principles,” Zuo Mo twitched her mouth. It was obvious that she was in a rather poor mood.

“Hey, Qiu Yuan, when’s your father going to send us the money?” At that moment, the man that had lied to Ye Zichen and co. by telling that he was the son of the city lord entered.

“Boss Ma, you’ve already captured me four times this month. Even if my dad’s the city lord, he wouldn’t be able to afford it for much longer!” Qiu Yuan said helplessly.

The man smiled apologetically, “Sorry brother. Business hasn’t been good recently. You’re the only person who’s rather easy to capture, so hurry up and contact your father to pay up!”

Then, he looked over to Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo. Seeing that both of them had woken up, he walked over with a chuckle, “You’re awake. Then, don’t stay idle. Tell us your identities, so I can contact your family. We don’t have a standard ransom, the prices are all decided by your own identity. We’ll definitely let you go after getting the money!”

“Good job on that,” Ye Zichen smiled meaningfully, then raised his eyebrows. “But you are going to be disappointed. Neither of us are from large families. Do you know of Spiritual Breeze Village near Maple City? We’re from that village.”

“Don’t try to lie to me. An earth dragon carriage cannot be ridden by commoners,” the driver smiled, then motioned towards Zuo Mo. “If you don’t want anything to happen to the beauty beside you, then pay up!”

The space between your thumb and index finger.

## Chapter 542 – [Earth Traveler Sun](#)

---

“A woman?” Qiu Yuan opened his eyes wide in shock when he heard. Since Zuo Mo was dressed as a man, he was unable to tell that she was actually female.

“Yeah, she’s rather pretty! But she’s very lucky. I, Ma Teng, only ever ask for money. If it had been other bandits that had kidnapped you all, then they might screw you as well!” Ma Teng shrugged.

Zuo Mo clenched her teeth and snorted, “Shameless!”

“I might be shameless, but who would feed me if I wasn’t?” Ma Teng sighed. “Don’t blame me, just treat it as spending some money to be taught a lesson. Tricks like mine are amongst the most basic in Pond City. It’s not my fault that you were foolish and were tricked!”

“We took you in out of good will, you...” Zuo Mo only got angrier when Ma Teng talked about it in such a proud manner.

“Little beauty, being kind-hearted is a good thing, but being kind cannot solve everything. If you want to live longer, you have to remain vigilant, as well as having paranoid heart!” Ma Teng shook his head while wearing a smile, then turned around. “I’ll come back later. You guys can also call me when you have considered everything properly!”

“Freeze!”

A soft voice was heard the moment Ma Teng turned around. At the same time, Ye Zichen turned into a fly, and flew out of the restraint of the Immortal Binding Rope.

Zuo Mo and Qiu Yuan watched Ye Zichen turning into a fly in shock, then watched him turn back to a person...

They were completely dumbstruck by what they had just watched!

“If one wants to live long, then they have to remain vigilant, and have paranoid heart,” Ye Zichen repeated Ma Teng’s words right back to him, then walked in front of him with a meaningful smile. “You just said that, why did you forget about it?”

“How-How did you get out?” Ma Teng’s looked around. How could he have escaped from the Immortal Binding Rope? I even used it to restrain a Human Immortal level expert several months ago, and that guy didn’t manage to get free!

More importantly, why is my body frozen where I stand?

“It’s merely a forgery of the Immortal Binding Rope, did you really think that it could restrain me?” Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile, then shrugged. “You’re still too young.”

Ye Zichen walked over in front of Zuo Mo, only to find her looking at him like she was looking at a monster. She was unable to understand just how Ye Zichen had transformed into a fly and then back to human.

“If you continue to look at me like that, then I’m not going to untie you,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes as he spoke.

Zuo Mo quickly shook her head in denial, “Don’t! Hurry up and untie me. It’s way too uncomfortable.”

Ye Zichen twitched his mouth towards her, then walked behind her...

It’s not working! I can’t untie it!

“Kid, you’re too naïve,” Ma Teng suddenly laughed callously. “I have no idea how you got out of the rope, but I accept you doing so. However, without my incantation, it’s impossible for you to release the others!”

“Tell me, just how can I untie these ropes?” Ye Zichen walked over and grabbed Ma Teng’s collar.

“What? You want to hit me? If you even so much as touch me,

then don't think about freeing your little beauty from the rope!" Ma Teng smiled viciously.

Ye Zichen expression turned darker, "Don't challenge my bottom line."

Tap, tap, tap...

Urgent footsteps were heard from outside the tent. Then, not long later, a few hulks with maces pushed open the curtains and rushed in.

"Boss!"

"Don't blank out now, capture this brat," Ma Teng frowned.

The men glanced over at Ye Zichen, then charged at him.

"Freeze!" Ye Zichen couldn't be bothered with them at all, so he merely froze them immediately using the Body-Freezing Technique, then frowned. "Hurry up and tell me the incantation!"

"Don't even think about it," Ma Teng answered cockily. "If you want to save your little beauty, then pay the ransom. There is no way I'm going release her!"

"Are you not afraid of death?" Ye Zichen put Xuan-Yuan Sword on Ma Teng's neck.

"Brat, now you've done it. Just wait, I'm going to find my master!"

Whoosh.

All of a sudden, Ma Teng disappeared, leaving Ye Zichen behind with a tight frown.

"Damn, I let him escape."

With that, he arrived behind Zuo Mo once again and asked Xuan-Yuan Xiang, "Can you cut the rope?"

"It's tough," Xuan-Yuan Xiang raised her eyebrows. "Although I'm a primordial devine artifact, but so is the Immortal Binding

Rope. Although this rope itself is a mere forgery, I shouldn't be able to do it with my current self!"

Creak.

Now what!?

Ma Teng escaped through some art, and I can't untie this rope. Am I supposed to leave Zuo Mo tied up just like this?

"My god, what do I do!?" Qiu Yuan suddenly started to cry. "I don't want to be tied up by this rope for my entire life. I'm unmarried. Ahh, what do I do!? Dad..."

"Stop crying!" Ye Zichen shouted in annoyance, which only made Qiu Yuan cry even harder.

"Of course you don't care since you got out of the rope, but I'm still tied up! Say, why are you two so stingy? You can afford to ride an earth dragon carriage, then why couldn't you just pay up? It's great now, Ma Teng ran away because of you, now, even if my dad brings the money over, I still won't be able to get out!"

"Stop crying, if you cry even just a little more, I'm going to slice you up!" Ye Zichen was already annoyed, and when he heard Qiu Yuan cry, he only got even more agitated, so he placed Xuan-Yuan Sword on Qiu Yuan's neck.

The moment he did that, Qiu Yuan stopped crying as he felt the sharpness of the blade.

"Then... I won't cry. Hurry up and move your damn thing away!" Qiu Yuan sobbed.

Ye Zichen retracted the sword, then sat down onto the floor to ponder about how to untie the ropes.

After a good thirty minutes, Ye Zichen was still unable to think of anything.

It seems like I have to wait for Ma Teng to return, then agree to pay him!

All of a sudden, the ground under the tent bulged up, then Ma Teng appeared from the ground alongside a short man of around a hundred and forty centimeters.

“Master, this is the brat!”

“You said he insulted me just now?” The short man frowned as he spoke.

Ma Teng nodded, “Yes, he just said to me that the Immortal Binding Rope Master gave me is a piece of garbage. He said that your height is due to you being disabled. He also said that you’re ugly, and you being with Martial Mother is like a flower on a piece of cow dung. What’s more, he also...”

Ye Zichen was completely speechless. Huh? When have I ever said those kinds of things?

Why does it all seem like that’s what he wants to say?

“Stop talking, you’re pissing me off!” The shorty frowned. Then, a golden rope directly appeared around Ye Zichen and restrained him. “Brat, you are the first person to ever insult me, Earth Traveler Sun, like that!”

Earth Traveler Sun (土行孙) is a character from the Investiture of the Gods. As his name suggests, he’s very skilled in travel through the earth. What’s more, he is someone that is very short, and uses metal rods as his weapons. He is also married to Deng Chanyu (邓婵玉).

## Chapter 543 – Envoy

---

Earth Traveler Sun's Immortal Binding Rope was clearly that of a higher level than Ma Teng's, since Ye Zichen had wanted to use the Seventy-Two Transformations to escape, only to find that the Immortal Binding Rope had even restrained his use of spiritual energy.

"Master, yeah, this brat was damn cocky. His insults angered your disciple way too much," Ma Teng clenched his teeth, while he showed a hint of pride when he looked towards Ye Zichen.

"You really are pissing me off. Ever since I became a deity, nobody has ever dared to insult me so!" Earth Traveler Sun was also outraged.

"Don't listen to your disciple's bullshit. I've never insulted you like that," Ye Zichen twitched his mouth. "I've never seen you before, how could I know of you in order to insult you?"

"Don't try to argue otherwise. Everyone knows that this Black Water Town outside of Pond City is my Master's, Earth Traveler Sun's, territory," Ma Teng argued.

Earth Traveler Sun nodded in agreement, "My disciple is right. Everybody around here knows that Black Water Town's my turf!"

"You really are funny. You can be a proper deity, yet you actually chose to become a bandit instead?" Ye Zichen shook his head with a chuckle. "I'm telling you. I know Yang Jian, Leizhenzi and co. If you continue to tie me up like this..."

"Yang Jian? Leizhenzi!?" Earth Traveler Sun paused for a moment, then quickly walked over in front of Ye Zichen and raised his eyebrows. "How do you know them?"

"Release me first. I'll show you something."

Jade Emperor gave me his token before I left the Heavenly Court. Since this midget is Earth Traveler Sun, then he naturally has to

obey the Jade Emperor's words.

Ye Zichen shook his head with a wry smile when he saw Earth Traveler Sun's rather vigilant expression. "The Immortal Binding Rope is your artifact, I won't be able to escape even if I wanted to, right?"

"Master, no!" Ma Teng shook his head vigorously. "This brat's seriously strange. He can freeze me, and cause me to be unable to move on the spot. He can also turn into a fly and get out of the Immortal Binding Rope."

"Body-Freezing Technique, Seventy-Two Transformations..." Earth Traveler Sun's expression changed drastically when he heard his disciple's words. He hurriedly retracted the Immortal Binding Rope from around Ye Zichen.

Actually, Ma Teng's words did help to convince him as well. If he hadn't talked about the effects of the two secret techniques, then Earth Traveler Sun wouldn't have actually believed Ye Zichen to be someone from the Heavenly Court.

The moment the restraints were undone, Ye Zichen took out his phone and withdrew the token.

Bang.

Earth Traveler Sun kneeled down uncontrollably onto the ground.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows while he held the token in his hands, "You believe me now? Hurry up and let my friends go. Otherwise... Hmph!"

He chuckled coldly.

Earth Traveler Sun frowned, then slapped Ma Teng's thigh, "Look at what you have done now. Hurry up and release the Immortal Binding Rope restraining that young sir."

With that, Earth Traveler Sun rubbed his hands and looked up

with a chuckle, “I didn’t expect you to be the Lord Envoy. Please do not take offense to my disciple’s various wrongs!”

After the Immortal Binding Rope on Zuo Mo were undone, she walked over to Ye Zichen with a frown and looked at Ma Teng angrily.

I really did a bad thing even though it was out of good will. I was going to save him on the way, yet we ended up getting kidnapped by him.

“Hey, me... me!” Qiu Yuan, who was tied down, continuously shouted at Ye Zichen.

Seeing that, Ma Teng immediately slapped him, since he was already very annoyed that one of his golden tickets were gone. “Stay there properly, hurry up and tell your daddy to send the money over. Otherwise, I’m going to kill you!”

“Boss Ma, it’s not that my daddy doesn’t want to send the money over. Although he is the city lord, you have captured me quite a few times this month, nobody would even be able to afford it,” Qiu Yuan said with a depressed look. Then he looked towards Ye Zichen with his pitiful eyes.

In all honesty, Ye Zichen was rather speechless. A city lord’s son actually got captured by the same bandit four times. Just what has he been doing!?

But this bastard Ma Teng was too cocky just now, I can’t let him off easy...

“That’s my friend too, release him as well.”

“Brat, don’t be too outrageous. Are you letting people make money now?” Ma Teng glared. “I’m looking for money. I didn’t bring you guys here to sightsee!”

“Release him!” Earth Traveler Sun stomped his foot in his anger.

Why can’t my disciple notice what’s going on? Even I, the

master, can't afford to offend this sir, and he's actually still thinking about making money.

"You hear that? My bro and your master have both spoken. Hurry up and let me go," Qiu Yuan snorted proudly.

Ma Teng squinted his eyes, then let out a long sigh, before untying Qiu Yuan's Immortal Binding Rope unwillingly. "Don't get too happy with yourself. I can still capture you again in a few days!"

"Tsk, do you think that I'm an idiot," Qiu Yuan rolled his eyes and ran over to Ye Zichen's side, and wrinkled his nose in Ma Teng's direction.

"Envoy, since your friend has been released as well. I wonder if you can retract the Jade Emperor's token now?"

"Mhmm," Ye Zichen put the token away.

Only then did Earth Traveler Sun stand up from the ground. Yet, his height didn't change that much at all.

"Lord Envoy, did you come this time to summon me back to the Heavenly Court?" Earth Traveler Sun said with great anticipation.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen was stunned for a moment. Then he looked at Earth Traveler Sun in confusion, "What happened? You were banished?"

"Didn't envoy come for this reason?" Earth Traveler Sun's expression stiffened. Then he smiled wryly. "Actually, I wasn't really banished. Back then, the Jade Emperor heard that Mount Supreme was going to appear in the Immortal Region, so he asked the deities who was willing to come down to check. Since I was drunk, I nominated myself... Then the Jade Emperor immediately chucked me down here. Now I'm already been here for nearly five hundred years, but nothing's happening with Mount Supreme at all!"

Mount Supreme again?

There was already Bai Hai at the auction house who mentioned it.

I didn't expect the Jade Emperor to place such importance on Mount Supreme as well. He even sent a deity to investigate it!

"Since you were not banished, then just go back directly. Tell him that there has been no news of Mount Supreme in the Immortal Region. Then, tell him to send a different person since you already stayed in the immortal Region for too long..." Ye Zichen replied.

"I want to as well, but the Jade Emperor gave me an absolute order. If I returned by myself, then not only might I not be rewarded, I might actually be punished. What's more, I've already stayed here for several hundred years, and nobody from the Heavenly Court has even descended to visit me. Right now, it's like I've been abandoned by the Heavenly Court."

"Esteemed Master, what's so good about the shitty Heavenly Court? Isn't being a bandit nice too?" Ma Teng interrupted, only to be faced with a five-finger mountain.

"Don't say that shit. I know that it's carefree down here as well, but your Martial Mother is still in the Heavenly Court. Do you think it was easy for me to get just such a beautiful wife!?"

# Chapter 544 – Staying in the City Lord Manor

---

Ye Zichen could kind of understand as he looked at how troubled Earth Traveler Sun was.

He had went through a lot in order to marry Deng Chanyu. Now, his beautiful wife is in the Heavenly Court, while he's below, the fact that they haven't even met for several hundred years is even more pitiful than the cowherder and the weaver girl.

"Oh, I see. Then I'll find some time to ask the Jade Emperor about this!" Ye Zichen patted Earth Traveler Sun's shoulder.

Hearing his words, Earth Traveler Sun nodded his head like a chicken pecking rice, "Then thank you, Sire."

"Welcome. But before that, can you tell me the details about Mount Supreme?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

"I actually don't know too much myself, but according the information I gathered over the several hundred years here, Mount Supreme should be a place of inheritance of a certain Earth Supreme from the God Realm. It is a place of both danger and opportunities," Earth Traveler Sun replied. Actually, he also only knew very little about it.

After all, Mount Supreme had never appeared before, and all of the information were passed down from primordial times. The only reason people were so focused on it was because someone had predicted Mount Supreme would appear soon.

"Then since you're stationed here, is it because Mount Supreme is supposed to appear here?" Ye Zichen asked.

"The Jade Emperor told me to station here when I came down, so it should appear around here," Earth Traveler Sun said hesitantly.

Ye Zichen nodded I didn't expect there to be so many things for

me to do on this trip over to Pond City.

Get the fire, find the pendant!

If Mount Supreme is going to appear here, then since I possess one of its keys, I might have to fight others as well.

“Alright, then that’s it. I actually have other things to do over here, so I won’t stay too long here,” Ye Zichen said with a smile.

Earth Traveler Sun also nodded with a smile, “Then I’ll send you off. I hope you can remember to mention this to the Jade Emperor.”

“Certainly.”

After Ye Zichen left the tent with a soft smile, Qiu Yue also stuck his tongue out at Ma Teng, then followed suit.

After all three of them departed, Earth Traveler Sun suddenly turned around with a cold look, then snorted at Ma Teng, “My good disciple, what you said earlier was actually all stuff that you wanted to say, right!?”

“Master, you must be hungry now. I’ll go and cook for you immediately,” Ma Teng tried leave the tent with a wry smile, only to be tied up by Earth Traveler Sun’s Immortal Binding Rope.

“Don’t go and cook. Lay down here and rethink your actions!”

...

“Thank you so much. Ma Teng definitely went to ask my father for money again. Oh yeah, I wonder how should I address the two of you?”

“Ye Zichen!”

“Zuo Mo.”

Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo answered together. In Ye Zichen’s opinion, this city lord’s son was a bit dim. If he was even a bit smarter, he wouldn’t have been caught by the bandit four times in

a single month.

“Brother Ye, Lady Zuo, are the two of you a couple?” Qiu Yuan asked with a smile.

Zuo Mo pouted with a blush, “Who’s a couple with him!?”

“We’re just good friends,” Ye Zichen said.

Hearing that, Qiu Yuan quickly apologized, “Sorry, I said the wrong thing.”

“No worries.”

At that moment, the carriage stopped once more. The driver pushed aside the curtains and said to Zuo Mo, “Young Lady, another group of people with torches appeared in the front.”

It can’t be!

Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo looked at each other. Did we get out of danger, only to fall into another dire situation? Thus, they all looked out the curtains, only to see Qiu Yuan suddenly chuckle.

“Don’t worry, it should be my father.”

Then, he jumped down from the car and waved to the incoming people.

Not long later, the city lord’s people had arrived. The person in the lead was an old man with pure white hair. He looked to be around sixty, and since Qiu Yuan looked to be twenty something, it was clear that this city lord only received his son at an old age.

No wonder Qiu Yuan’s like this. He was probably extra spoiled.

“Yuan’er, are you okay?” the old city lord’s face was filled with worry.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen could see that the following mounts were pulling several boxes with spiritual seals on them, which should be the ransom they had prepared to get Qiu Yuan back with.

“Hehe, I’m alright. I just got slapped by Ma Teng once. I’m fine

everywhere else,” Qiu Yuan replied with a smile, then pointed at Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo, who just had dismounted the carriage. “Let me introduce you, these are friends I met at the bandits’ place. It was all thanks to them that I could get free this time.”

“City Lord Qiu!” Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo called out together.

The old city lord also walked over with a thankful smile, “Thanks to you two, my son’s life is unharmed. How about staying at my city lord manor for a few days in order for me to repay your kindness?”

“Uhm...” Ye Zichen was a bit hesitant.

“Brother Ye, stop hesitating. Pond City’s security isn’t the best, and there are tons of bandits and highwaymen around here. What’s more, it’s already late. Just stay in the city for a night. If you are in a hurry, then just leave tomorrow morning!” Qiu Yuan advised.

The driver also called out, “Young Lady, the bandits just now too our earth dragon’s food, so it doesn’t have the stamina to run anymore.”

“Then we’ll be troubling you!” Zuo Mo and Ye Zichen replied together.

...

Pond City was in the extreme northern region of the Eastern Continent. Due to it being near the Endless Beast Region, and Mount Biluo was just outside the city, the people were extremely tough. They would begin to fight due to any tiny arguments. It could be said that the civilians were definitely as brave as soldiers.

“Brother Ye, let me give a toast to you. It was all thanks to you that I could escape unscathed,” Qiu Yuan held up his glass.

Ye Zichen smiled, then bumped his glass with Qiu Yuan’s before downing it. However, right after that, he used his spiritual energy to disperse the alcohol from his body.

Due to being in a foreign place, he needed to remain conscious at all times.

“I didn’t expect the two of you to be from Maple City. Pond City is at the very edge of the Eastern Continent. Did you pass by here to go to the Endless Beast Region?” The old city lord asked.

Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile, “No, we’re headed to Mount Biluo!”

“Mount Biluo?” The old city lord’s expression drastically changed, then he raised his eyebrows. “Mount Biluo is not a good place. The reason you guys are going there...”

Ye Zichen merely smiled in response.

“Dad, what are you asking!? Brother Ye and co. saved me, and saved you tons of money. Yet, you’re actually asking this and that,” Qiu Yuan frowned.

The old city lord snorted, “Isn’t that because you’re a disappointment? As the city lord’s son, you get kidnapped by bandits every few days. You truly make me lose all my face.”

“Tsk...” Qiu Yuan twitched his mouth, then threw his chopsticks onto the table. “Here you go again. I told you I dislike cultivation. Alright, I’m done. Brother Ye, I’ll take you guys to the guests’ rooms!”

## Chapter 545 – Two Keys

---

“Brother Ye, please don’t take offense. My dad’s old, so he just likes to ask questions like that,” Qiu Yuan smiled apologetically in the courtyard.

Ye Zichen shook his head, “No worries, it’s good that the old city lord is very careful.”

“What’s being careful? He just likes to test people,” Qiu Yuan twitched his mouth. “He also likes to force things upon who has no love for them. I’m a perfect example. I don’t like cultivation, but he still forces me to cultivate. It’s so annoying!”

“The old city lord only did it so you can protect yourself somewhat!”

“He only feels like I make him lose face,” Qiu Yuan shook his head with a snort. “He just cares about his face.”

“Be careful.”

Ye Zichen suddenly pushed Qiu Yuan away while he was retorting. Then, a row of metal needles stabbed into the ground where Qiu Yuan had just stood.

“An assassin!”

The soldiers within the city lord manor immediately began to run over with their torches when they heard the sound.

Seeing that, the person squatting on the roof also leapt out of sight.

“Young Master, are you alright?” One of the muscular man walked over and asked. When he saw Qiu Yuan shake his head, he immediately shouted towards the people behind him. “Give chase!”

Ye Zichen wanted to join in, but Qiu Yuan stopped him. “Don’t go, it’s impossible to catch up.”

From the looks of his expression, Qiu Yuan was already used to this sort of assassination. He merely glanced at the needles on the ground, then continued to walk forward once again without any hesitation.

Not long after, Qiu Yuan took Ye Zichen and co. over to a yard.

“Brother Ye, stay here for tonight. There are two rooms here, the two of you staying together can also look after each other. The city lord manor has not been very safe recently,” Qiu Yuan pointed at the two bedrooms.

His calm tone caused Ye Zichen to raise his eyebrows, “The person came to assassinate you just now, right? Why didn’t you let me catch him?”

“It’s not that I wasn’t allowing you, it’s that you won’t be able to catch him,” Qiu Yuan smiled. “Although Pond City is not as large as Maple City, there are still experts. My father is a mid-stage Sky Immortal. Do you think you will be of use in capturing someone that he can’t?”

“I see,” Ye Zichen was surprised. A mid stage Sky Immortal was a top expert already. Even if he had average movement techniques, even a complete stage Human Immortal level expert with a focus in movement techniques would be unable to escape from him.

Since the old city lord can’t capture him, then doesn’t that mean the person is a Sky Immortal!?

Ye Zichen looked at Qiu Yuan in confusion for a while. Why would a person of that level come to attack someone who is merely of the Spiritual Body level?

“They might have come to kill me for this damn key,” Qiu Yuan took out a glowing key from around his neck as if he could tell Ye Zichen’s confusion. “Huh? Why is it glowing? I’ve never seen it glow even after wearing it for so long.”

“Mount Supreme’s key!” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. I didn’t

think that Qiu Yuan would have one too. The reason behind the glowing was very simple, it was because Ye Zichen had one as well.

The keys to Mount Supreme will automatically glow when in a certain distance from each other, which also served as a warning signal.

“This is strange, I’ve never seen it glow after picking it up for so long,” Qiu Yuan muttered in confusion. “Why is it glowing now?”

“Yuan’er, that assassin came again...” The old city lord hurried over frantically, only to stop when he saw the glowing key in Qiu Yuan’s hand, which caused him to look towards Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo.

“So? So what if I die? Then you won’t need to get angry,” Qiu Yuan twitched his mouth like he was throwing a tantrum.

The old city lord yanked Qiu Yuan behind him, then looked vigilantly at Ye Zichen and co., “You guys came for Mount Supreme as well, right? I see that there are only the two of you here. Each key can bring three people in. Isn’t asking for my son’s key as well too greedy?”

“City Lord, I think you misunderstood, we didn’t approach Qiu Yuan for his key. We didn’t come to Pond City for Mount Supreme either,” Ye Zichen shook his head with a wry smile.

The old city lord pursed his lips, then yanked Qiu Yuan out of the room with no regards to his reaction, while he turned to Ye Zichen, “I’ll let you stay the night, but I hope you can leave my manor tomorrow morning.”

“Naturally.”

...

Zuo Mo frowned and snorted after watching the city lord and Qiu Yuan leave, “Just what does this old city lord want? He invited us to the manor, but is now chasing us away!”

“Don’t mind so much, we didn’t plan to stay long anyways. We’ll just stay here tonight, then we can just go directly to Mount Biluo tomorrow morning,” Ye Zichen smiled, then pointed at the two rooms. “Which one do you want?”

...

Qiu Yuan, who was dragged away by the city lord, was only able to struggle out of the old city lord’s grasp when they reached his study.

“Dad, what are you doing!?”

“Do not get so close with those two!” The old city lord frowned. “They might have come for your key.”

“What key!? Are you talking about this shitty thing?”

Qiu Yuan yanked the key off his neck as he spoke. At that moment, the key was still glowing, but it was a lot dimmer than when he stood beside Ye Zichen.

“Yuan’er, the two of them definitely have a key as well. You can tell by how the key is shining. We are unclear about their identities. What’s more, they actually appeared so suddenly at this moment. They might very well want to snatch the key from you!” The old city lord explained in a worrisome manner. “The fact that you picked up this key coincidentally must mean that you are fated to enter Mount Supreme. As long as you can enter, then you will have a chance at the inheritance. When that happens, your father, I, will also be able to stop worrying!”

“What shitty Mount Supreme!? Just how many times have I said it already? I’m not going to cultivate! Whoever wants this shitty key can just take it. I don’t want it!”

Fling.

He threw the key out of the window with all his might.

Seeing that, the old city lord slapped Qiu Yuan in anger,

“Disappointing son!”

The wrathful slap caused Qiu Yuan’s mouth to bleed, which also made the city lord immediately regret it.

But that was the key to activating Mount Supreme, how could he throw it away just like that!?

The key does have a mind of its own. Even though the area outside of the window is still within the city lord manor, the key might not be waiting for him there.

“Ha, this is how you treated big brother back then, right? He didn’t like cultivating, but you forced him, and so he was forced to death? Now big brother isn’t here anymore, so you’re going to force me to death as well, right? Let me tell you one more time, I don’t like cultivating. If you force me anymore, then I’m the next big brother!”

# Chapter 546 – The Seven Fairies Were in Danger

---

Bang.

Qiu Yuan kicked the door open and left for the city, leaving the old city lord Qiu smiling wryly, while hints of tears flickered in his eyes.

“Come!”

“City lord!” A long-haired man in a warrior entered.

The old city lord let out a sigh, “Li Zhi, take some people to go and search for the key. It is for the best if you can find it. If you can’t, then... never mind.”

“Understood!” Li Zhi cupped his fist and left the room.

Then the old city lord let out another long sigh once again before the also departed with a shake of his head.

...

Outside the city lord’s manor the next morning.

“Brother Ye, why not stay a few more days?” Qiu Yuan stood at the entrance and sent Ye Zichen off without the old city lord.

“I still have urgent business to take care of for this trip, so I won’t trouble you too much here. I’ll come to the city lord manor and find you after I’m done with everything.

At this moment, the earth dragon carriage was also drove over by the driver. Seeing it, Ye Zichen cupped his hands towards Qiu Yuan and smiled, “See you soon.”

...

As they sat on the earth dragon carriage, Zuo Mo took out a map, “We should be here right now. It’ll take at least six hours for us to reach Mount Biluo.”

“Mm, okay,” Ye Zichen nodded, then took out his phone.

Ye Zichen was a man of his word, and so he would definitely do what he promised Earth Traveler Sun. Since they weren't yet to Mount Biluo, he took out his phone and was going to chat with the Jade Emperor about it, only to think of the private video the Seven Fairies had sent him.

Ye Zichen took a glance at Zuo Mo. When he saw that she was resting her eyes, he clicked on the video.

Purchasing this video requires a hundred thousand cultivation experience. Would you like to continue?

Yes.

A familiar tune sounded out. The background music was the song that Ye Zichen played while the fairies practiced, but the screen was completely black for five minutes...

“Hehehe, you got tricked!

Just as Ye Zichen was wondering why there was no video, Seventh Fairy suddenly sent him a message.

The cultivation experience from him purchasing the video naturally went over to them, so they knew that he clicked on it after he paid.

“... you actually dare to mess with this sovereign,” Ye Zichen was completely speechless.

Seventh Fairy giggled, “Hehehe, what is Sky Sovereign doing?”

“I've naturally been busy,” Ye Zichen replied. “Why are you girls so free? Don't you need to go and practice? I'm telling you, you have to work hard.”

“Okay. We're just resting for a little while,” Seventh Fairy said.

“How was the concert yesterday?” Ye Zichen asked.

“The concert?” Seventh Fairy twitched her mouth, then

shrugged. “It didn’t go particularly well. Someone came to wreck the concert yesterday. Fortunately, Canopy Marshal and Yang Jian were both here, otherwise, we might have been in danger.”

“Wreck!?” Ye Zichen frowned.

That’s the Heavenly Court, someone actually dares to do something to the Jade Emperor’s daughters!?

“Has the culprit been caught?”

“Not yet, but our imperial father is furious. He has already sent out the entire army to investigate this. He also forbid us to not go out and about recently, then told us to stay home,” said Seventh Fairy.

“Yeah, just stay home properly. It might be very dangerous for you to go out. Practice with your sisters, I’m going to find out about the situation from other people.” Ye Zichen replied.

“Hehe, okay,” Seventh Fairy replied with a giggle.

After that, Ye Zichen went straight to the Red Packet Server, and saw that the group was actually talking about the Seven Fairies getting endangered.

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li: I hope everyone can actively provided us with any information you might have.

Canopy Marshal: Don’t be in such a hurry. Wait for Yang Jian’s news. He gave chase, and might be able to help you when he comes back.

God of Thunder: But the person who came to cause trouble didn’t look like someone from the Heavenly Court.

Barefoot Immortal: Indeed. There was a very evil aura radiating from his body. If this sovereign bump into him, I definitely have to cast a spell of mind purification on him.

Immortality Peach Fairy: Why did they come to destroy the concert?

Yue Lao: There are too many possibilities. No matter what, we must investigate this thoroughly.

Jade Emperor: Yes, everything must be investigated thoroughly. They actually dared to bully this emperor's daughter. They really are seeking death!

Ye Zichen was unable to get any useful information from their chat. The only helpful piece of news was that Yang Jian had given chase.

He raised his eyebrows, then quit the group and clicked on his chat with Yang Jian.

“Who are they, please reply when you receive the message.”

Ye Zichen returned his phone to his pocket after sending the news. When he looked up once again, he saw Zuo Mo staring right at him. “Huh? Why are you looking at me like that!?”

Anyone would feel awkward in that sort of situation.

However, Zuo Mom merely blinked, and supported her head with her hands, “When did I start to stick to you every single day? I have never been so close to a man before!”

“...”

“Never mind, pretend I never said anything,” Zuo Mo shook her head. “Let's talk. What price are you paying me if I help you find that jade pendant?”

“You want a price?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“Of course, I'm a merchant. I care only about profits. As the young lady of the Treasure Tower and the future successor of the Treasure Tower, wouldn't it be wrong if you don't give me anything when I go around with you every single day?” Zuo Mo raised her eyebrows.

“Fine, fine, fine, then tell me what do you want!” Ye Zichen replied speechlessly.

“I haven’t decided yet. I’ll tell you when I have. Oh yeah, don’t say that I haven’t reminded you, Mount Biluo is the resting grounds of half-beastmen, it is very dangerous,” Zuo Mo replied.

Ye Zichen has already heard a lot about Mount Biluo’s danger, but he didn’t have a choice when the situation was forcing him to go to the dangerous place.

What’s more, so what if Mount Biluo is dangerous.

His journey till that point was not the safest either.

“Stop!”

A call suddenly sounded out outside the carriage. Hearing that, the carriage stopped as well.

“Who is inside? Tell them to come down to be investigated.”

“What now?” Zuo Mo bit her lips and revealed a look of displeasure. We haven’t been in peace ever since coming over here. Just how terrible is the security over here? Someone actually dares to block us off in broad daylight.

Not long later, a conversation between the driver and the other person sounded out.

However, that person clearly didn’t believe the driver’s words, since he rolled up his sleeves and walked over, “What Treasure Tower? I don’t know it. Since you don’t want to accept investigation, then don’t fault me for using violence.”

Whoosh.

The person pushed the curtains over, causing Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo to both manipulate their spiritual energy in preparation for a fight.

However, both of them were completely shocked when they saw the person in front of the carriage door, and the other person had the exact same reaction as them.

“Why did you come over here?”

## Chapter 547 – Zuo Hongxin

---

The person in front of the car was no other than Yang Jian, who Ye Zichen had just messaged.

As Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo dismounted the carriage, Yang Jian saw that they were completely confused as well. He raised his eyebrows, “Why did you guys come over here?”

“Why did you come over here?” Ye Zichen asked him in return. “Didn’t you go to give chase to that culprit? Why did you come over to the Immortal Region?”

“I followed that culprit over here!” Yang Jian lit a cigarette for himself. “I chased that grandson around the Heavenly Court once, then pursued him around the Immortal Region once. But when we reached this area, he suddenly vanished. I used my spiritual consciousness to lockdown the area, and decided to wait to see if there were any suspicious people passing by here.”

“The culprit vanished here?” Ye Zichen frowned. There aren’t any hiding places around here. What’s more, since Yang Jian used his spiritual consciousness to lockdown the place, the guy couldn’t have possibly vanished into thin air.

“The Endless Beast Region is behind me, so it’s possible that he escaped there. I don’t dare to survey the Beast Region using my spiritual consciousness. There are too many tough people there,” Yang Jian shrugged helplessly. “But he wasn’t a spiritual beast, so he definitely won’t be able to stay long there, so I decided to just wait out here.”

“Beast Region,” Ye Zichen knitted his eyebrows.

We are supposed to be heading towards Mount Biluo, which may be very close to the Beast Region, but we’re already at the border... It’s clear that the driver wasn’t even heading towards Mount Biluo.

Ye Zichen turned his head back...

“Where did the driver go!?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

Zuo Mo merely replied indifferently, “He left.”

Ye Zichen was rather surprised by the calm reaction, but he understood it all when he heard her continue.

“It’s very clear that this driver was one of my second uncle’s people. I’m already used to this sort of situation. He might have wanted to send me to the Endless Beast Region so that he can use the spiritual beasts to kill me. I really didn’t expect that his people had infiltrated so deeply into my group.” With that, she turned towards Yang Jian and nodded with a smile. “Thank you, you saved my life again.”

Yang Jian blinked in confusion. I didn’t do anything? Why did this hot chick say that I saved her? Does she want to use this chance to start something with me?

But this chick is my bro’s woman, and I already have the Third Princess....

All of a sudden, Yang Jian fell into an internal struggle.

However, it was very clear that Yang Jian had just over thought the situation. Zuo Mo didn’t even do so much as look at him after thanking him.

“Then what do we do now?” Zuo Mo asked Ye Zichen. Although we still have the map, we won’t be able to identify any of the roads without a driver.

Ye Zichen frowned for a moment, then set his eyes upon Yang Jian, “Bro, you know where Mount Biluo is, right?”

...

“Master, the mission failed.”

Within a restaurant in Pond City, Zuo Mo’s driver bowed towards a fat man standing in front of him. That person was the Treasure Tower’s second in command, Zuo Hongxin.

“Failed, failed. I don’t want to hear failure anymore!” Zuo Hongxin snorted sinisterly as he slammed down on the table with his grubby hands.

“Master, this subordinate has already driven the carriage to the edge of the Beast Region. Nobody could have expected someone to suddenly pop up and block my way,” the driver said in a troubled manner. “I just ran back here since I saw that something was going to go wrong!”

“You’re useless! Since you had already reached the edge of the Beast Region, then why didn’t you just forcefully drive over the boundary? Even if the guy was blocking your way, you should have hurried and driven over! Do you think that I wouldn’t take care of your family if you die!?” Zuo Hongxin slammed the table angrily, causing the driver to lower his head, and not dare to say anything. “Never mind, I’ll give you a final chance. Zuo Mo is going to Mount Biluo, then we’ll just kill her off there. This time, I will send out all of my fighting prowess. Success or failure will depend on this. They are on a piece of open ground outside Pond City’s east gate. Go and get them!”

“Open ground?” The driver was stunned. Doesn’t that mean...

...

“Grandson, don’t worry too much, we only want money. If you want to live, then go and contact your leader, and tell him to bring the ransom,” Ma Teng held a small whip as he looked at the several tens of people within the tent. I really caught a large group this time.

What’s more, there were even a Sky Immortal level experts amongst the group, who was tied up using Earth Traveler Sun’s rope.

I let Ye Zichen and co. run away yesterday, this time, I definitely have to extort them hard to get all the money back!

“Do you know who we are!?” The Sky Immortal leveled old man yelled angrily.

Ma Teng immediately whipped his face, “I don’t give a rat’s ass about who you are. Right now, you’re my prisoners. Get it? If you want to live, then bring me the money. If you want to die... It’s not like I can’t fulfill that request of yours!”

The whip caused the elder to grimace with pain. However, that was all he could do with the Immortal Binding Rope wrapped around him.

“Elder Tian, how about we contact Master?”

“Yeah, contacting your master and telling him to come and ransom you guys is the right choice,” with that, Ma Teng took out a phone from the Heavenly Court and a bunch of paper. “How do you guys contact him? I can satisfy all my customer’s needs.”

...

“What’s wrong with the open ground?” Zuo Hongxin squinted his eyes when he saw the driver’s reaction.

Just as the driver licked his lips and was about to reply, the phone in the fat man’s hand lit up.

Zuo Hongxin immediately unlocked the phone, but when he saw the message, he slammed down onto the table and shattered it into smithereens.

“You’re just all a f\*cking pile of trash!”

...

Meanwhile, an earth dragon carriage sped along the road towards Mount Biluo without anyone driving it.

Yang Jian sat inside the carriage, and felt as if his entire body was going to fall apart due to all the shaking.

“Why are the two of you so stubborn? It’d be so much better if I just sent you guys over on a cloud.”

“You have to tell this lady over here. I don’t really care myself,” Ye Zichen shrugged.

Zuo Mo rolled her eyes, “Do you know how expensive this earth dragon carriage is? If we go on the clouds and I just left my dragon carriage there, what if I lose it?”

“Girl, then let me ask you. Mount Biluo is a mountain with half-beastmen living there. There aren’t any wide roads for your carriage to pass through like in the Immortal Region. Then what are you going to do about your carriage then?” Yang Jian asked.

“...” Zuo Mo blinked.

Yang Jian spoke up once more, “Wouldn’t you have to leave your carriage behind anyways? Then wouldn’t you still lose it if it’s going to happen?”

“I...” Zuo Mo muttered to herself for a few moments, only to find out that she had no way of retorting.

At the same time, the carriage had finally stopped.

Yang Jian opened the curtains and looked at the vegetation cover mountain outside, then curled his lips slightly. “We’re at Mount Biluo.”

# Chapter 548 – Summoning the Divine Dragon

---

“This is Mount Biluo?” Ye Zichen was stunned as he stood at the base of the mountains.

Zuo Mo also couldn't help but exclaim, “As expected of the mountains in which inhabit over a million half beastmen, it really is...”

The mountain range covered several tens of thousands miles, while the tall peaks were firmly embedded into the clouds. Such a mountain range was even larger than three Maple Cities combined.

“Don't think so much about it. I said that Mount Biluo is here...” Yang Jian pointed at a small hill amongst the mountain range. “What you guys are looking at is the Firmament Mountains. Mount Biluo is this one!”

...

“You are definitely kidding me,” Ye Zichen couldn't help but roll his eyes. Just what the hell? I might be able to kick it apart myself, and he's actually telling me that's Mount Biluo?

“I also feel like you're definitely lying,” Zuo Mo agreed for no other reason other than the fact that what Yang Jian said was too unbelievable.

Mount Biluo is the habitat of several million half-beastmen. Even if it cannot be compared to the Firmament Mountains, it can't possibly be this tiny hill!

“Have you guys been to Mount Biluo?” Yang Jian curled his lips. “You truly hurt me too much by saying that I'm lying without having been to Mount Biluo yourselves.”

“Bro, it's not that I don't believe you...” Ye Zichen smiled wryly. “It's that...”

“Reach your hand forward,” Yang Jian raised his eyebrows.

Ye Zichen nodded then stretched out his hand.

Bang.

The moment he did so, an extremely powerful surge of spiritual energy hurled his hand back.

“A spiritual formation!” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

Yang Jian smiled, “Half beastmen are not spiritual beasts, nor are they humans! Both the Beast Region and the humans want to kill them all off, because their existence marks the failure of both races. Since they want to protect themselves, they naturally have some things up their sleeves.”

“Then how are we supposed to enter?” Ye Zichen frowned. None of us are proficient in the ways of formations, and this spiritual formation is clearly keeping us out.

“I don’t know either,” Yang Jian shrugged. “To be honest, I’ve never entered the half-beastmen’s territory. I thought that you guys would have a way since you wanted to come.”

He glanced over at Zuo Mo, only to see Zuo Mo shrug, “Don’t look at me, I don’t know what to do either.”

“Then how did your people get the news? Didn’t you said that someone saw the jade pendant on Mount Biluo?” Ye Zichen frowned.

“I never ask about how they get their information,” Zuo Mo shrugged.

“Seriously...” Ye Zichen frowned, then flung his arms to the sides. Mount Biluo was right in front of them, but at the same time, he could pretty much disregard Zuo Mo’s information of the jade pendant since it could very well be a false piece of news that her second uncle had spread to use against her.

However, Yue Lao’s information about the Beast Fire could not

be false. There's definitely a Beast Fire in there!

Ye Zichen walked over to a nearby piece of rock and sat down, then took out his phone and opened up his chat with Yue Lao.

“Yue Lao, this sovereign has already reached the location that you talked about. But there are seals around Mount Blluo, so I can't enter.”

Dingdong.

Yue Lao sent him a red packet alongside a photo the moment he sent the message over.

“Place the divine stones I sent you according to the image! But after that, make sure to send them back to me, they are seriously valuable!”

Ye Zichen smiled. Ahhh, an older person is truly more reliable.

He clicked open the red packet.

You received Yue Lao's red packet.

Divine Stone x7.

Then, he clicked open the image Yue Lao sent him. It was a picture of the northern dipper constellation, thus Ye Zichen laid out the seven divine stones according to Yue Lao's instructions.

“What are you doing?” Zuo Mo raised her eyebrows and walked over curiously as she watched Ye Zichen playing with the shining stones on the ground.

“Just summoning [Shenron](#)!” Ye Zichen replied without looking up.

He raised his hand and pushed towards the hill, but found that the barrier was still there.

Thus, he took out his phone and sent Yue Lao a message.

“Yue Lao, I set it up already. It's not working!”

“Don't be in such a hurry, it won't dispel the barrier instantly.

Just wait a bit,” Yue Lao replied. “The Heavenly Court is in quite a bit of mess. The Jade Emperor is looking for me, so I’ll chat with you later.”

“Alright!”

The Heavenly Court is most likely in a mess due to what happened with the Seven Fairies. Ye Zichen put his phone into his pocket, then sat cross-legged on the floor and waited for the seals to disappear.

Ye Zichen is going to summon the Divine Dragon!

Zuo Mo was shocked. As the young lady of the Treasure Tower, although she comes from a merchant background, she was rather educated. She had read a lot of stories about the Dragon God. When she heard what Ye Zichen was doing, she immediately displayed a surprised smile.

“You really are going to summon the Divine Dragon?”

“Seriously, you...” Ye Zichen looked up at her. Seeing her expression, and thinking that there was nothing better to do, a thought of teasing her rose in his mind. “Yeah, I’m going to summon Shenron.”

“What are you summoning it for? Didn’t it die in the Great War of Gods and Demons?”

“Sit down first, and I’ll tell you,” Ye Zichen pointed at the empty ground around him.

Zuo Mo immediately sat down in front of him obediently, and looked at him with her hands supporting his head.

“Although the Shenron died in battle, his soul is still around. He had left seven balls behind in order to bring happiness to the world. Collecting all these seven balls would allow you to summon Shenron,” said Ye Zichen.

Seeing Zuo Mo nod, Ye Zichen continued, “The appearance of

Shenron is a shocking event. Due to how strong it was, it's appearance will change the laws of the world. When that happens, you can make a wish, which he will fulfill!"

"Really?" Zuo Mo opened her eyes wide. "Then are the seven balls you set down the seven balls the Divine Dragon left behind? What are they called!?"

"The Dragon Balls!" Ye Zichen said seriously.

"Why hasn't the Divine Dragon appeared even though you have already gathered all of them?" Zuo Mo knitted her eyebrows.

At that moment, Yang Jian also ran over and raised his eyebrows, "Bro, how many wishes can the Divine Dragon grant? Can you let me make a wish too?"

...

I just want to trick Zuo Mo. I didn't expect that idiot Yang Jian to fall for it as well.

Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile, "Shenron can only grant you one wish. I'm going to use the wish to break open Mount Biluo's seals. As for why he didn't come yet... Summoning him takes some time, alright?"

"Oh, oh, oh!" Yang Jian and Zuo Mo nodded together.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen chuckled, then he laid down on the ground.

...

Several hours passed by in the blink of an eye. The sky had already turned dark, and during the past few hours, Ye Zichen had tried to see whether the seals were still there, only to find that it had not been broken yet.

At the same time, Yue Lao had not replied his message either.

He had already lost all his patience with the divine stones, but both Yang Jian and Zuo Mo still looked with great anticipation

towards the sky as they waited for Shenron's arrival.

Roar...

All of a sudden, a dragon's roar rang out in the sky, and large amounts of black clouds appeared!

"It's the Divine Dragon. The Divine Dragon has come!" Zuo Mo jumped up in excitement.

Ye Zichen looked up into the sky in shock, then looked down at the divine stones on the ground, "F\*ck me, you can't be serious!"

The Chinese characters for Shenren is exactly the same as just "Divine Dragon".

# Chapter 549 – Entering Mount Biluo

---

Roar...

The dragon's roar in the sky continued. Zuo Mo jumped up in excitement, while Yang Jian also wore a serious look as he glanced towards the sky.

The Dragon God was someone who fought the demons alongside the Gods in the Great War. It was a person worthy of his respect.

On the other hand, Ye Zichen...

You've got to be kidding me!

I just said it randomly... How could there be something like summoning Shenron here. Ignoring the fact that the seven stones can't be the Dragon Balls, the old dragon god is in my bone ring, just where did this dragon come from?

Then finally, the dragon's roar stopped as the winds calmed down.

A huge fissure opened up in the sky.

A black-robed man stepped out of the spatial fissure, then slowly walked down to the foot of Mount Biluo.

“Divine Dragon!”

The black-robed man continued forward as if he didn't hear anything. However, he did take a short pause when he passed by Ye Zichen's side.

Ye Zichen was rather confused. He blinked and looked at the person in front of him...

“You...”

“Didn't you summon me?” The voice of the man underneath the robe was slightly coarse. Then he walked in front of Mount Biluo's seals. “This sort of seal...”

He waved his hand, then picked up the seven divine stones from the ground, before turning to leave.

“Hey, who are you!?” Ye Zichen shouted, but the man merely smiled and waved towards Ye Zichen before departing from the spatial fissure.

“Wow, you really summoned the divine dragon,” Zuo Mo exclaimed.

However, Ye Zichen merely pushed forward with a frown....

The seal had already disappeared, and his arm being able to enter was proof of that.

“The seal is gone. Let’s enter!”

With that, Ye Zichen walked forward.

Zuo Mo looked at the carriage hesitantly, but still bit her lips and followed.

“I have never been on Mount Biluo even though I’ve been a deity for so long!” Yang Jian smiled, then followed suit.

...

A while after they finally left, a man walked out from behind them. It was no other than the man who helped them break through the formation just moments ago.

“Dragon Balls... Your personality still hasn’t changed, but I have already...” The man sighed softly and placed the divine stones into the carriage. Then, he set up a seal in front of the carriage and left quietly.

...

“Who broke the seal?”

A man with a daoist hat, who was sitting on top of a straw cushion, formed several finger incantations and frowned within a daoist temple on the mountaintop.

“How did a person so capable in the arts of formations appear in the Modern Realm? He actually completely destroyed my Heaven Blinding Formation!”

The man stood up from the cushion, then called out. “Firsty, Secondy, Thirdy!”

Not long later, a set of triplets appeared in front of the man.

The man turned to them, “Contact the Three Yao Emperors, tell them that someone broke the seal here. Mount Biluo is not longer sealed off from the rest of the world, so tell them to hurry up. I made a rough foretelling just now. A large group of humans and beasts will come to Mount Biluo. Be careful.”

“Understood!”

The old daoist frowned as the triplets left. “Such is fate. It seems like in the very end, Mount Supreme is not fated to belong to the half beastmen. I wonder when is the destined one going to visit!”

...

“This is Mount Biluo?”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows after entering through the seal. The scene in front of him was truly too shocking.

“Whoever created such a space is truly a powerful one,” Yang Jian shook his head in shock. The separate space was still filled with spiritual energy and laws. It is essentially a sub dimension that resided outside of the Three Realms. It really is a blessed land for the half-beastmen to be able to find this place to stay!

“What should we do?” Zuo Mo asked. She had thought that Mount Biluo was merely a mountain, but after entering through the broken seal, she noticed that it was a completely different continent that would allow others to live on.

“Xuan-Yuan Xiang! Have you been here before?” Ye Zichen could only seek assistance from Xuan-Yuan Xiang since it was Yang Jian

and Zuo Mo's first time there.

"Nope. The Yellow Emperor had never set his feet upon the half-beastmen's territory, so I naturally have not come here before. But since it is the habitat of the half-beastmen, then tribes will naturally exist. Look around to see if there are any small villages."

"But half-beastmen have a grudge with humans, and don't they have a particular grudge against the Yellow Emperor?" Ye Zichen frowned.

"The Yellow Emperor did indeed kill quite a few half beastmen back then, but those were all evil people. Although half beastmen are not on good terms with the humans, some more docile races do live here," Xuan-Yuan Xiang replied.

"Then let's try?" Ye Zichen said hesitantly.

"That's all you can really do. But even if you end up meeting truly vicious people, there is no need for you three to be afraid. I can sense a spiritual artifact protecting Zuo Mo, while Yang Jian is a heavenly deity. What's more, you have me, so what are you afraid of!" Xuan-Yuan Xiang replied with a smile.

Ye Zichen subconsciously looked towards Zuo Mo. I didn't expect there to be an artifact spirit protecting her.

But I suppose it's understandable when taking her identity into account. She is a favored successor of the Treasure Tower, and her father is the Tower Head himself. It isn't very difficult for him to get her a treasure to protect herself with.

"Ye Zichen!" Zuo Mo called out once again.

"Mhmm, okay! We'll go around randomly, and see if we can end up bumping into some sort of village. But let's not reveal ourselves as humans too early, and get more information first," said Ye Zichen.

"But half-beastmen and we humans..." Zuo Mo said worriedly. "You guys should know that half-beastmen have a vendetta against

humans. Isn't us going to their village seeking death?"

"According to what I know about the half-beastmen, some of them are able to take complete human form as well. We'll be fine like this. I'll just disguise my celestial spiritual energy as yao spiritual energy. They probably wouldn't suspect us," Yang Jian comforted.

"Yang Jian is right. What's more, the two of us know the Seventy-Two Transformations. We can transform into a half-beastmen in order to gain their trust."

"You also know the Seventy-Two Transformations!" Yang Jian raised his eyebrows.

...

It seems like my tongue slipped.

I got it from the Treasure Shop. It's not something I can reveal to others!

Ye Zichen coughed, then changed the topic, "Alright, let's chat less. We have proper business."

...

A hour passed by in the blink of an eye.

"I didn't expect Mount Bilou to actually be like this," Zuo Mo exclaimed as they walked around.

Meanwhile, although Ye Zichen did not say anything, his eyes were still filled with shock.

Even if I was born here, I would still find it very difficult to believe that this is just a sub dimension.

"Smoke! There are people over there!" Yang Jian, who had the best eyesight out of them, pointed at a place with rising smoke in front of them.

Ye Zichen looked up and raised his eyebrows, "Let's go and take a

look!”

Although it seemed to be very close, it was actually at a distance away from them.

They had to run for ten-odd minutes to hurry over to the place where Yang Jian said there was smoke, but when they got to the scene...

“What’s... this?”

# Chapter 550 – News about the Fire

---

“Did we come in a bad time?” Yang Jian couldn’t help but raise his eyebrows as he stood in the air.

“Why do you say that? I feel like the Heavens are helping us,” Ye Zichen smiled as he walked towards the village.

Flames covered the entire village. What they had seen from afar was not smoke from the villagers’ cooking, it was the dense smoke from the fire that was destroying the villagers’ homes.

Villagers with long rabbit ears continuously ran, through the flames with buckets of water in their hands in an attempt to drowse the flames. However, the fires were burning so intensely that the water they brought were nowhere near enough.

Boom.

A house collapsed.

Many younger half-beastmen were already wiping away their tears, and the seniors also sighed as they watched the collapsed wooden house with a shake of their heads.

“Heaven’s ichor!”

Yang Jian, who stood in midair, opened his third eye, and raised his arms towards the sky.

Rumble.

All of a sudden, rain clouds instantly covered the clear sky, and endless thunderous rumbles sounded out. Not long later, rain droplets began to fall as it gradually started to pour.

Seeing that, all of the villagers threw down their buckets and cheered, while the searing flames were also drowsed by the rain.

“I wonder which monarch has arrived here? I beg of you to show yourself,” a slightly pretty and curvy lady walked out from the rest of the villagers. She was wearing plain clothes, while two children

stood by her hips and looked up into the sky as they bit their fingers.

“Are we really going to go down there?” Zuo Mo bit her lips worriedly. As someone from the Immortal Region, her seniors had educated her about the difference between half-beastmen and humans since she was a very young age.

She had already been reminded again and again while she was younger about places she should not venture into. Both the Endless Beast Region and Mount Biluo were amongst the top of the list.

However, she had already been to the Endless Beast Region, and ended up in Mount Biluo.

“Why not? What’s there to worry about? Look at their ears, they should be the Snow Rabbit clan. Snow rabbits are kind and gentle, what’s more we helped them deal with the disaster of the fire. They won’t do anything to us,” Ye Zichen rubbed Zuo Mo’s hair, then gave Yang Jian a cue before descending.

All of the Snow Rabbit Clan were shocked when they saw Ye Zichen and co. They actually took complete human form!

Half-beastmen are not like the Spiritual Beasts of the Beast Region. They had a lot more trouble than the latter with taking human form.

“I wonder which monarch had helped to save us, the Snow Rabbits just now? Xue Lian would like to express our utmost gratitude here,” the lady placed her hands across her chest and bowed.

Yang Jian merely smiled, “No worries, it was just a piece of cake.”

“That might be so for you, sire. However, it is a fortunate event for the entirety of the Snow Rabbit clan. If it wasn’t for your timely visit, sire. Then us, the Snow Rabbit clan might have to migrate,” Xue Lian sighed with a frown, then pointed towards a

simple house nearby. “My lords, don’t stand here anymore, please come and take a seat inside.”

The room was very simple, it was just a simple house made out of planks. The room was covered in dried carrots and other vegetables, and no meat could be seen in sight.

“Xue Lian should have treated you all to a feast, but such a disaster has just happened, so all I can present to you are these fruits. I hope you will not mind,” Xue Lian brought over a plate of fruits, with some heated dried carrots.

The children beside her bit their lips and reached out to take a piece of dried carrot, only for her to slap the children’s hand away.

“Be a good boy, this is for the monarchs. Mother will get you something else to eat, okay?”

The children continuously swallowed their saliva. Ye Zichen smiled, then handed the plate on the table to them, “Have some.”

“Sire!” Xue Lian wanted to say something, but Ye Zichen shook his head and stopped her.

“Children their age should eat more. We don’t mind.”

The children wanted to reach their hands out, but they didn’t dare and merely looked towards Xue Lian timidly.

Seeing that, Xue Lian said helplessly, “Shouldn’t you thank His Grace?”

“Thank you, Your Grace,” the children shouted clearly.

“Good kids,” Ye Zichen ruffled their hair, and handed the plate over to them.

Seeing them excitedly run away, Ye Zichen couldn’t help but smile.

I wonder how Tiantian is. Is she frozen in the Modern Realm, or did she come over to the Three Realms?

If she came, then...

Creak.

Ye Zichen clenched his fist. As both a husband and father, I have failed to protect the safety of my wife and daughter.

The change in Ye Zichen's gaze from a soft and gentle one to a self-reprimanding one all fell into Zuo Mo's eyes. For some reason, her heart tingled when she saw him act like that. It seems like he's someone with a story.

"My lord, you have witnessed something unsightly," Xue Lian was clearly talking about the children asking her for food.

Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile, "It's normal for children. Everyone was once that age. There is nothing to mind."

"Sire, you are very forgiving," Xue Lian spoke carefully as she always had. It was not her fault. The Snow Rabbits were amongst the weakest half-beastmen. Due to their personalities, they disliked fighting with others, and gave a feel of being accepting to everything, which caused them to become the targets that other half-beastmen picked on.

Ye Zichen looked out the window. The villagers had already started on the reconstruction of the village.

Any kind of hint of a grudge were unable to be found on their faces at all. Every single one of them were smiling and filled with energy. Ye Zichen couldn't help but exclaim silently to himself that although this clan was weak, their personality and mindset were good.

"My lords, I wonder why you have come to this place?" Xue Lian couldn't help but ask once more. There was definitely a monarch level powerhouse among them, and the other two were definitely extreme experts. The Snow Rabbit clan had never once hosted someone like that, so she was rather nervous.

"Wouldn't your village have been burnt to dust if not for our

arrival?" Ye Zichen smiled.

As he saw Xue Lian repeatedly nod with a wry smile, he wanted to tell her that there was no need to be so nervous. However, he still held himself back when he realized that it could be a habit she had developed over the years.

Personality was hard to change, what's more, Ye Zichen did understand that it was already very good for Xue Lian to remain like she was after assuming that they were higher-ups of the half-beastmen.

"Actually, we came over here in search of an item," Ye Zichen licked his lips and said after some brief chitchat,

"Sire, what are you searching for? We, the Snow Rabbit clan, will definitely help you with everything we can," Xue Lian answered with a smile.

Ye Zichen shook his head, "Never mind the help. The Snow Rabbit clan is too weak. I only need you guys to provide me with some clues, we can go and search for it ourselves."

"My lord, please."

"Have you seen Beast Fire? It's the flames shed by spiritual beasts," said Ye Zichen.

"Beast Fire..." Xue Lian frowned, then shook her head. "No..."

Just as she was about to say that she didn't know anything, she suddenly ran out, then brought the two children back into the room.

"Tell Sire whether you kids saw a bluish green flame several days ago."

# Chapter 551 – Strange Seal

---

The child Xue Lian brought in had a ponytail on her head. Her eyes twinkled in confusion as she bit down on the carrot slices.

Bluish green flames.

According to Yue Lao's description, the Beast Fire over here was indeed a bluish green color. It was the flames shed by a Niflheim Dragon.

Hearing that the child had actually seen the flames, Ye Zichen asked nervously, "Little one, can you tell Uncle where you saw the fire?"

"Hmm..." The child scratched his chin and muttered. "I saw it in front of the village when I was playing with big brother. That fire was so pretty, it flew around the sky. There was also a little girl with very strange clothing on it. Big brother and I chased her for so long, but we couldn't catch her."

There was a girl sitting on the fire?

Ye Zichen's eyebrows locked together.

Could that fire already have a master?

He licked his lips. No matter what's on the fire, since I came here for the fire and got information about it, I have to go check it out.

"Where did you guys last see the fire?"

"It was in the forest really far away. Big brother and I have often been there to pick fruits. However, when we wanted to follow the fire after it entered, we couldn't get in," the child pouted.

"There might be a seal," Yang Jian raised his eyebrows.

Ye Zichen nodded. Since the two children were blocked outside, then it was clear that there was a seal on the forest.

Ye ZIchen squinted his eyes and raised his eyebrows, "Then can

you take me over to have a look?”

The girl looked towards Xue Lian.

Ye Zichen added, “Clan Master Xue, don’t worry, we will protect your children’s safety.”

“Then... alright,” Xue Lian nodded after a brief hesitation. “You must listen to Sire, and not run around, okay?”

“Okay,” the girl smiled sweetly.

...

Approximately ten-odd minutes after they were led away from the village by the little girl, they arrived at the place where the little girl had last seen the fire.

“It’s this place?”

It was an endless forest, which seemed unusually plain from the outside.

The little girl nodded in certainty and pointed at a pile of rocks on the ground, “My big brother and I left it here. We wanted to come again when we have the chance to.”

Ye Zichen took a glance at the small rock pile, then nodded and walked towards the forest.

Bang.

All of a sudden, he fell onto the ground with a trace of blood at the corner of his mouth.

“Zichen,” Zuo Mo ran over and helped Ye Zichen up.

Yang Jian squinted his eyes and took out his weapon to carefully prod forward.

A wave appeared in the space in front of them, then a powerful wave of spiritual energy shot back at them.

“Hah!” Yang Jian stabbed his lance into the ground and punched forward with both hands.

Dong.

A huge explosion sounded out.

The first thing Ye Zichen did was to grab the little girl and shield her, but the residue of the spiritual energy fluctuation caused him to cough up another mouthful of blood.

“Yang Jian, what are you doing!?” Zuo Mo shouted out as she ran over to hug Ye Zichen.

Yang Jian also ran over as he looked at Ye Zichen with a frown, “Bro, you alright?”

“He already coughed up blood earlier, why did you have to mess with that spiritual formation?” Zuo Mo’s eyes watered.

Yang Jian frowned, “I feel like there’s something wrong with this seal.”

“Even if there is a problem...”

“Never mind, it’s my problem,” Ye Zichen wiped away the blood from the corner of his mouth, then sat cross-legged as he looked at the barrier in front of them. “This seals seems to only attack me.”

“What?” Zuo Mo exclaimed.

“Yeah, I wanted to try because I felt like that was the case,” Yang Jian couldn’t help but frown. “I proactively attacked it, yet Ye Zichen was still the one who was hurt!”

“How come? Could the attack be locked onto the first person who attacked it?” Zuo Mo asked.

“Possibly!” Yang Jian nodded.

“You two are both wrong,” Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile, then took out a key. “I feel like it has something to do with this key.

“What is this?” Zuo Mo asked.

“Ruan Qingtian gave it to me, then from what I found out later, it

should be the key to enter Mount Supreme,” Ye Zichen replied.

“Mount Supreme!” Yang Jian frowned. “I seem to have heard of it from the Jade Emperor before!”

“Naturally,” Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile. “Earth Traveler Sun, who was inaugurated as a deity along with you, is waiting outside Pond City for the appearance of Mount Supreme. I saw him a few days earlier. He said that it was a task the Jade Emperor gave to him.”

“He actually came over here!” Yang Jian was stunned. “Jade Emperor told us that he went to execute a special mission, and said that we are not permitted to contact him.”

“The Jade Emperor told you guys so!? Earth Traveler Sun told me that you guys forgot about him,” said Ye Zichen.

“How could that be? Deng Chanyu asked us about Earth Traveler Sun’s location no less than a thousand times these few hundred years. She wanted to come over as well, but the Jade Emperor stopped her,” Yang Jian replied, then looked at the key in Ye Zichen’s hand solemnly. “Mount Supreme... Jade Emperor actually cares about it so much! But why does the seal only attack you, who has the key to activating Mount Supreme. Could it be that this place...”

“Is Mount Supreme!” Zuo Mo exclaimed.

“Although I’m not a hundred percent certain, but there is a sixty percent chance that that is the case,” Ye Zichen licked his lips.

“But why did it attack you, who has the key?” Zuo Mo frowned.

“Probably because it is not time for it to open up yet,” Ye Zichen replied, and handed the key to Yang Jian. “How about you try it. I’ll place the key with you. Let’s see if it’ll attack you.”

“Okay.”

...

Approximately half an hour later, Yang Jian foamed in his mouth and had a spasm on the floor. Everything happened like Ye Zichen had thought. The seal's attacks were only targeted at people with the key.

"Stop playing dead. The rebound wasn't that severe," Ye Zichen pulled on Yang Jian's sleeve to wipe the foam from Yang Jian's mouth and dragged him up.

Yang Jian immediately stuffed the key back into Ye Zichen's hands like he was getting rid of some unfortunate object, "I'll give you this crappy thing again. I don't want someone to touch the seal and end up with me attacked again."

"Look at your damn face," Ye Zichen rolled his eyes and placed the key back into his pocket. Then, he looked towards the forest meaningfully. "C'mon, let's return!"

"Hey, we're going to return!? Are you going to stay at the Snow Rabbit's?" Zuo Mo raised her eyebrows.

"Of course," Ye Zichen nodded. "Mount Supreme and the fire from the Niflheim Dragon are both here, so I naturally have to stay."

"But we came for the Jade Pendant!" said Zuo Mo.

"Jade Pendant? I have a feeling that it'll appear here as well. This place will end up in a mess very soon," Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and smiled. "Let's just stay here and treat it as we're protecting the Snow Rabbit Clan. Is that alright?"

# Chapter 552 – Staying at the Snow Rabbit Clan

---

“Sire, did you manage to find anything?” The first thing Xue Lian did after Ye Zichen and co. returned to the village was check on her children, then she walked over to Ye Zichen with a smile.

“We didn’t get anything, but we can be certain that the thing we want is within that forest. However, there is a seal on the outside of it. We wish to bother you here for a few days, I wonder if it is possible?” Ye Zichen asked humbly.

“Sire, you staying here is the honor of the Snow Rabbit Clan, but...” Xue Lian took a look over at the burnt houses in the surroundings and revealed a troubled expression.

“No worries!” With that, Ye Zichen gave Yang Jian a cue.

“I knew you would make me work,” Yang Jian twitched his mouth, then pointed at the wooden pillars that would take several people to lift up.

“About this...” All of the surrounding Snow Rabbit clan members were shocked.

At the same time, Yang Jian glanced over at them. “Tell me how I should place it.”

...

Through Ye Zichen and Yang Jian’s cooperation, they were able to complete a project that would have taken several days in just a short while. More importantly, due to Ye Zichen being the director of the construction, it did give off a slight feel of the Modern Realm.

“Clan Chief Xue, can you please arrange a room for us?” Ye Zichen smiled.

“Sire, thank you so much for your help. You are too courteous to

tell me to arrange a room for you. You were the one who built all the houses, so choose whichever one you desire,” Xue Lian did not dare to arrange a room for them at all. From what Yang Jian had done just moments prior, she was already certain that he was the Lord Monarch.

But this Lord Monarch seems to obey the words of the other Sire, and that other Sire is very scared of the woman.

That was enough for her to see that the Lord Monarch was at the very bottom of the pyramid! Since the monarch was at the bottom, she naturally did not dare to say anything reckless.

“The guest should do as the master says, but since Clan Chief Xue said so, then we’ll pick this one,” Ye Zichen randomly pointed at a wooden house with three rooms within.

Xue Lian freaked out after seeing that, “Sire, this house is too small for you all to live in!”

“No worries, I feel like it’s quite nice. Alright, Clan Chief Xue, don’t mind us. Everybody’s tired after a day of hard work. Go and take care of your clansmen.”

With that, Ye Zichen walked towards the wooden hut.

Yang Jian and Zuo Mo shrugged as they looked at each other and followed.

Yang Jian was a rather insensitive person, so he quickly fell asleep when he got to the room.

Meanwhile, Zuo Mo looked out of the window in the living room, and muttered, “I really didn’t expect myself to actually come over to where the half-beastmen are. I had thought that I would never come to such dangerous places in my entire life, and would definitely not live here.”

“There are plenty of other things you don’t expect would happen. Think about how old you are... There is still a long road ahead of you,” Ye Zichen smiled.

“It’s all because of you,” Zuo Mo rolled her eyes. “My life has changed ever since I got to know you.”

“It became more colorful, right?” Ye Zichen pursed his lips and smiled, then took out his phone.

His chat with Yue Lao was at the very top with ten-odd new messages.

Yue Lao: Sky Sovereign.

Yue Lao: Sky Sovereign?

Yue Lao: Sky Sovereign, please reply after you see this message!

Yue Lao: Sky Sovereign, um, did you guys enter. If you did, then can you return the Divine Stones to me?

Yue Lao: Sky Sovereign, can you not act like that monkey? We’re civilized people!

Ye Zichen could tell that Yue Lao wanted to get the Divine Stones back. But the stones seemed to have been taken away by that person after he broke the seal.

“The Divine Dragon’s envoy took the Divine Stones away. I didn’t take them for myself! If you want, then go and collect them once again!”

“Sky Sovereign, your excuse is too terrible!” Yue Lao replied instantly. “Envoy of the Divine Dragon. Are you kidding me?”

“Why would I lie to you? I used the Dragon Balls to summon the Divine Dragon. The Divine Dragon sent his envoy to break the seal. After fulfilling my wish, he took the Dragon Balls away so that they would wait for another person to collect them all once again to summon it!” Ye Zichen replied seriously.

“What Dragon Balls? What Divine Dragon!?” Yue Lao was completely stunned. “Sky Sovereign, I used several tens of years to collect those Divine Stones...”

“Do you still not believe me? You’ve never watched Dragon Ball,

right? Wait a moment!”

With that, Ye Zichen scrolled through the videos on his phone, and sent Yue Lao one of the Dragon Ball episodes he had downloaded.

Dingdong.

You will be charged a 130000 cultivation experience streaming fee to send this video. Would you like to proceed?

...

Since when did I have to pay a streaming fee!?

Ye Zichen cursed the system a few times in his heart, but he still chose to proceed with it.

Whoosh.

The video was directly sent over with no upload time.

“Sky Sovereign, what did you send me?” Yue Lao asked.

“Dragon Ball. You’ll know what the Dragon Balls and the Divine Dragon are after watching it. Remember to ask me for the following episodes after you finish.” With that, Ye Zichen returned his phone to his pocket.

As he turned around, he saw that Zuo Mo had already sat down beside him, and was staring at where he put the phone away.

“You...”

“Can you let me have a look?” Zuo Mo blinked.

“Look at what?” Ye Zichen shook his head. “If you want to see my social network, then no way!”

“No, I want to see the Dragon Ball you talked about.”

...

Since Ye Zichen was unable to withstand Zuo Mo’s pestering, he still ended up handing his phone over and opening the first episode

of Dragon Ball for her.

After reminding her over and over again not to click into other places, he returned to his room.

Beast Fire. Mount Supreme. The jade pendant, which appeared on Mount Biluo.

Although they seemed totally unrelated, it really was intriguing for them to appear at the same time at the same place.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but sigh with a shake of his head.

System, did you set this up?

Also, Ye Zichen was no foolish enough to believe that the black robed person who helped them break through the formation was truly an envoy of the Divine Dragon. Just who was he?

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen felt like everything became far more complicated.

Thus, he gradually fell asleep while being deep in thought.

...

When the night passed by in the blink of an eye, Ye Zichen walked out of his room, only to notice that neither Yang Jian nor Zuo Mo was around.

Ye Zichen looked out the window. Everyone in the Snow Rabbit Clan were running towards the outside of the village with brooms and hoes in their hands.

...

"Lord Envoy, this is the village closest to the place you talked out," a cat-eyed man smiled coyly and stood beside a humanoid man.

"That's right," the man nodded in satisfaction. "Then let's choose this place to be our camp."

The cat-eyed man walked over to the village with the man's

support and snorted with a savage sneer, “Xue Lian, go and rest elsewhere. We, the Emerald Leopard Clan have taken this spot.”

“On what ground? We, the Snow Rabbit Clan has lived here for several hundred years. What right do you have to make us leave!?” Xue Lian bit her lips angrily, but what she felt more of was resentment...

Why does every single race want to bully us snow rabbits? We merely don't want to fight with others, but is endless insults all we're going to get in return for repeated concessions?

Her eyes gradually watered, but at that very moment, Ye Zichen walked over with a meaningful smile.

“Call yourself Emerald Kittens when that's all you are. Leopard? Are you even worthy?”

# Chapter 553 – Gathering

---

“Sire!” Xue Lian bit her lips.

Ye Zichen smiled, and signaled her to not worry, then walked a few steps over and squinted his eyes, “From this moment onwards, this sovereign shall protect the Snow Rabbit Clan. Whoever dares to challenge that, die!”

“You really are good at pretending...”

Bang.

Just as someone from the Emerald Cat Clan spoke, the person imploded before he was able to finish his sentence.

“This sovereign doesn’t want to waste my breath. Whoever dares to challenge what I said will end up just like him!” Ye Zichen’s eyes flashed with a cold light.

The leading Emerald Cat male gulped.

At that moment, someone patted him on the shoulder and pulled him back.

“Envoy.”

“This isn’t something you can take care of. Leave it to me.” The envoy smiled and walked forward.

He took out a key, which was shining with an intense light. “Hmm, a candidate, it seems like you came ahead of me.”

Ye Zichen smiled, then also took out a key.

The moment the two keys were shown, both shimmered with an even brighter light, as if each one was trying to outshine the other.

“You took it out just like that? You’re not afraid of me snatching it from you?” The man smiled.

Ye Zichen merely raised his eyebrows, and took a step back, while Yang Jian walked over with his lance.

Boom.

The spiritual pressure of a Sky Immortal shot out, and the powerful spiritual energy caused the surrounding people to not be able to help but kneel.

The man raised his eyebrows, then took a step back like Ye Zichen had, revealing a buff man beside him.

The man also released the spiritual pressure of a Sky Immortal, causing both Xue Lian and the first Emerald Cat man to gulp subconsciously.

Two monarchs.

“It seems like you are prepared since you’ve dared to come here. Alright, since this friend has already made camp with the Snow Rabbits, then I won’t be a pest. If I make camp at the forest opposite the Snow Rabbit clan’s village, you won’t mind right, brother?” the man asked with a smile.

“Do as you wish! As long as you don’t come and cause trouble with the Snow Rabbit Clan, I don’t care what you do!” With that, Ye Zichen turned around and walked back into the village.

Both Yang Jian, Zuo Mo as well as the Snow Rabbit tribesmen also followed.

“Envoy!” The Emerald Cat man called.

“We’ll be taking this forest for our camp. Iron Bull, I’ll leave it to you,” said the man.

The Sky Immortal leveled man nodded, then conjured up a gigantic blade of air in his hands and hacked at the forest.

The forest, as well as the hill underneath it was sliced through very easily.

The man smiled, then slapped the ground with his right hand, causing a huge manor to appear on the newly emptied flat ground.

“C’mon, let’s go, but this garden might be a bit too small.

There'll be other guests later!" the man shook his head with a smile, then raised his eyebrows. "Whatever, I'll think about that later."

With that, he walked towards the manor.

Meanwhile...

"Sire, thank you for your help," Xue Lian continuously expressed her thanks.

Ye Zichen glanced at her and couldn't help but shake his head, "Clan Chief Xue, I can help you now, but I can't help you for your entire life. I can tell that you're very strong. At least Human... Ahem, very strong. That Emerald Kitten was weaker than you, but you only argued and cried when facing him. How long do you think your clan can actually live in the village?"

"But we Snow Rabbits dislike fighting," Xue Lian bit her lips.

"Your dislike only gathered the disdain of others, and merely made them act even more outrageously. Wanting peace is good, but you have to have enough strength to make the others wary, and make them not dare to do anything to you. Only then will you have real peace," Ye Zichen didn't actually want to say something like that initially, but he didn't expect someone else to arrive so soon.

He had no idea how many keys there were, but he was certain that the area will become a place where people fought over it.

Perhaps he might be able to help the Snow Rabbit Clan to chase away the provoking people, but what about after he leaves?

If the Snow Rabbit Clan continued avoiding like that, then all that awaited them was a genocide.

"Zichen!" Zuo Mo frowned.

Ye Zichen sighed softly, and shook his head, "Clan Chief Xue, no need to mind us, just keep doing what you were doing earlier!"

“Yes, Sire!” Xue Lian continued to maintain her timid look.

“Why did you say that? Didn’t we come here because we liked the peacefulness of the Snow Rabbit Clan and their pureness? But weren’t your words just forcing them to change?”

“What do you understand? Have you been through war? Do you know despair!?” Ye Zichen shouted angrily with a frown. “When your cowardice causes you inextinguishable pain... When you face despair and are helpless against it... Do you know what that feels like!? I’m saving them. Do you get it!?”

“Fine, I don’t get anything! I’ll leave!” Zuo Mo bit her lips and left the room, leaving Ye Zichen to hold his head and close his eyes.

“Bro,” Yang Jian patted Ye Zichen on his shoulders. “Others might not get you, but I do!”

“So annoying!” Ye Zichen shouted with a frown.

“What’s annoying about everything? Just take everything as it comes. You still have me, don’t you?” Yang Jian smiled. “Just now, the person’s key seemed to have resonated with yours. Is the key to Mount Supreme as well?”

“Mhmm,” Ye Zichen nodded. “There are already five keys according to what I know about. I have no idea how many there are in total.”

“There are twelve keys in total!” A reply suddenly sounded out in the room.

Ye Zichen looked up, and saw Ruan Qingtian appear at the entrance in a green robe and a fan in his hand.

Meanwhile, Lil’ White, Jail King, Zhuge Hong and Zhuge Kongming all followed him.

“Boss!” Lil’ White shouted cheerfully.

“Big Brother Ye,” Zhuge Kongming also waved.

“No, why did you guys all come?” Ye Zichen stood up and

exclaimed.

Ruan Qingtian smiled, “We met on the way here and chatted a bit. I never expected for us to all know you.”

“Then how did you guys know that I’m here...” The moment Ye Zichen said that, he remembered Zuo Mo who had stomped out of the door.

“Hmmp!” Zuo Mo entered from the entrance with a cold snort, then turned around and left with a pout.

“Brother Ye, you are the first person who managed to bully Young Lady Zuo so!” Ruan Qingtian gave Ye Zichen a thumbs-up. “But Brother Ye is indeed amazing. I didn’t tell Brother Ye anything about Mount Supreme, yet you actually found your way here, and made camp at this sort of place. Wow.”

“It was just a coincidence. But since you guys are all here, doesn’t that mean...” Ye Zichen frowned.

Ruan Qingtian nodded, “Mount Supreme is about to appear!”

# Chapter 554 – Chosen One

---

“Young Master,” Iron Bull walked over.

The man standing in front of the manor nodded, then pointed at the Snow Rabbit Clan’s village, “Three keys entered just now. They already have four keys over there.”

“Does Young Master want Iron Bull to snatch them over?” Iron Bull opened his eyes wide.

“Why should we? We already have two keys on hand. That’s completely enough. What’s more, those people over there are not weakling. The person with the lance earlier should be Yang Jian from the Heavenly Court. He is already equal to you without opening his third eye. You won’t be able to match him if he opens up his third eye,” the man cracked his neck. “Also, the ones that came later... The Tiangou Clan, the Phoenix Clan... Both of them are top clans in the Beast Region. I didn’t think that that brat would have such a huge network. Truly interesting.”

“So what? As long as Young Master asks Master to remove Iron Bull’s first layer of seal, then they’ll all die,” Iron Bull snorted in disdain.

“Your way of thinking is unacceptable,” the young man frowned. “It wasn’t easy for us to come over here. Do you want to make those old guys notice by opening your seal? Father already said that I should not open the seal unless I have no other choice.”

“This subordinate was just saying,” Iron Bull smiled coyly. “But is Young Master going to allow them to gang up? That’s not good for us.”

“Hehe, so what, not everyone who comes here will have a key,” the young man smiled meaningfully.

Iron Bull nodded, “Young Master wants to use other people...”

“Heh, disaster is caused by what a person has. Anyone would be

envious when they have four keys,” with that, the young man shrugged. “C’mon, let return, there’s nothing to look at. The next time we come out, it’ll be when we watch the show.”

...

“My lords, the Snow Rabbit Clan...” Xue Lian smiled apologetically as she brought up the dishes of food, which were all vegetables without any hint of meat.

“Alright, stop blaming yourself. I feel like it’s pretty good. We’ve troubled you Clan Chief Xue,” Ye Zichen nodded with a smile. “My words might have been too severe early, please don’t take it to heart.”

“I don’t dare. What’s more, sire was just speaking the truth,” Xue Lian nodded with a smile. “If you have any other requests, then just shout for me. I won’t be interrupting your meal, my lords.”

As Xue Lian left the room, Ruan Qingtian glanced over and couldn’t help but shake his head “Her personality is really unsuitable for living in this era!”

“I feel like it’s pretty good. I made up my mind already, if it really doesn’t work, then I’ll take them back to the Treasure Tower. I’ll take care of them,” Zuo Mo snorted.

Ruan Qingtian raised his eyebrows, then frowned without saying anything.

“Why are you shaking your head!” Zuo Mo frowned.

“I feels like you’re being childish,” said Ye Zichen. “You want to take the Snow Rabbit Clan back to the Treasure Tower, but don’t forget where it is. It is in the Immortal Region! Ignoring the Sacred Lands, you guys are indeed amazing, but will those from the Sacred Lands allow half-beastmen to settle on their territory? If that really is okay, then do you think half-beastmen will live in a subdimension like this one?”

“You... I...” Zuo Mo bit her lips.

“Alright now, there’s nothing to argue about,” Ruan Qingtian said. “But Brother Ye is not wrong, Young Lady Zuo’s ideas are indeed questionable.”

“You guys are bullying me together!”

“Stop arguing, we didn’t gather here for the Snow Rabbit Clan,” Zhuge Hong frowned. “Wait till after Mount Supreme to decide how to settle the Snow Rabbit Clan. Those of us sitting here are peak forces from various realms, we will be able to get them somewhere to stay.”

“My mother is right. If it really doesn’t work out, then they can come to the Fire Phoenix Clan. My mother’s words are of us in the clan,” Zhuge Kongming chuckle.

“You kiddo,” Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile, then raised his glass. “It’s not easy for us to all gather. Cheers!”

“Can I drink?” Zhuge Kongming pouted. When he saw Zhuge Kong nod, he raised his glass up excitedly. “I haven’t seen Big Brother Ye for so long. This is for you.”

...

After a while, the dishes were pretty much finished.

Lil’ White and Zhuge Kongming both went out to play with the Snow Rabbit children.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen sat on his chair and looked at the others in the room, “How long until Mount Supreme activates?”

“Nobody is certain,” Ruan Qingtian raised his eyebrows with a smile. “We merely know that it is about to activate through the keys, but it’ll only activate when the Chosen One arrives! But since it still hasn’t activated, then it is clear that none of us are the Chosen One.”

“Chosen One?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“The person who left Mount Supreme behind is a Sky Sovereign

expert of the God Race, his true form is that of a Nifheim Dragon. He left all his power as the inheritance within Mount Supreme right before he died. At the same time, he also said told others that when the Chosen One appears, so will the mountain,” Zhuge Kong explained.

“So there’s a story like that,” Ye Zichen nodded. “Then your keys...”

“The Endless Beast Region gained four keys when the Lord Ice Dragon died. They were under the control of the strongest clan in each of the Four Continents,” Zhuge Hong explained.

“Then does that mean the key of the Central Continent is with...”

“The dragons,” said the Jail King. “The Fox Yao Clan is indeed strong, but they are still not of the Sacred Beast clans. Our key is from the Black Tortoise Clan. They have no interest in warfare, nor do they wish anything from Mount Supreme. The final key is with the White Tigers.”

“The fact that a commotion had happened with Mount Supreme clearly means that the Chosen One has already gained the key. What we have to do now is wait for the Chosen One to come. Of course, we also have to choose...” Ruan Qingtian raised his eyebrows. “We can choose to befriend the Chosen One, or we can kill him after finding him. If we do, then the inheritance will naturally belong to everyone else. Anyone who enters will have a chance to grab it. If we befriend him, then we can only get some of the Ice Dragon’s treasures. But then again, those treasures are definitely not simple items.”

“This little brother is right, but us, the Tiangou Clan is not very interested inheritance. Whether we kill the Chosen One is up to you guys, especially you...” Jail King set his gaze upon Ye Zichen. “Young Master will definitely make the same choice as you!”

“Why are you saying in such a roundabout manner!?” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes.

Zhuge Hong also spoke up, “The Phoenix Clan will also follow your choice. It is up to you whether we kill the Chosen One or not!”

“Since everyone has decided so, then I’ll do the same. I’ll listen to Brother Ye as well,” Ruan Qingtian also said with a soft smile.

When he saw how everyone reacted, Ye Zichen suddenly felt like...

His pressure increased tenfold!

# Chapter 555 – Rules of the Black-Robed Person

---

A wry smile covered Ye Zichen's face. So I became their leader just like this? And now I have to decide on whether the Chosen One lives or not?

Let's be honest, the person who is the Chosen One has got to have some level of strength and luck, right?

It's impossible for that person to act like a retard and just allow others to do whatever they want with him.

"Don't act like this. You're putting pressure on me."

"What's there to feel pressured about? But it is really too early to speak about all this. We have no idea who the Chosen One is, and don't know whether they are friend or foe," Ruan Qingtian said with a smile.

"I don't care about so much. I'm going to do whatever Young Master tells me to," Jail King shrugged.

"Pavilion Head Ruan is right. It is indeed still too early," Zhuge Kong nodded with a smile.

"But then again, we still have to pay attention to any information about the Chosen One. I'm sure all of you saw it while coming over here..." Ruan Qingtian looked towards the Emerald Cat Clan with a meaningful smile. "Those people also came for Mount Supreme, and do not seem to be on our side."

"That kid has at least two keys!" Jail King squinted his eyes. "I want to go over and snatch them from him while I was coming over, but I didn't do anything because I sensed an expert."

"Speaking of that, then I'll just say it right now," Ruan Qingtian stood up and shut the door. "Everyone here is related to Brother Ye, so we can act as an alliance. Since that's the case, it means that

we will have four keys on hand. Mount Supreme is an inheritance that even Sky Immortals and Immortal King level experts would rush over for, but there are only a few keys. This means that not everyone will get one. When you consider snatching... We really will become everyone's target!"

Ye Zichen suddenly fell into deep thought. He actually had thought of all that as well.

Since it was an inheritance that even the Jade Emperor wanted, then it clearly was an extraordinary one. If there was no surprise, then all Three Realms would send people over to get it. The Sacred Land of the Immortal Region, Underworld and Heavenly Court...

These three factions were alright, since Ye Zichen was able to actually talk to those from the Heavenly Court, Underworld and even the immortal Region.

What he was afraid of was not those from these Three Realms, but the experts from the other places.

Ye Zichen had always accepted that the treasures should be gotten by those who are more capable than others. However, he was worried about the Snow Rabbit Clan.

The Snow Rabbit Clan was initially away from all the fighting in the world, and was only involved in it now due to Mount Supreme. If people really end up fighting for the keys, then it'll be a terrible fight. When that happens...

"How about we retreat from here?" Ye Zichen licked his lips.

Zhuge Hong shook her head, "No!"

With that, she spoke up once again, "I know you don't want to affect the Snow Rabbit Clan, but the location of their village made it so that their following days will not be in peace. Although us staying here will cause trouble for them, but it is also a layer of protection."

"I agree with Phoenix Sis's opinion," Jail King nodded. "Mount

Supreme is right beside their village. Someone else will take this place for themselves even if we leave. The majority of the people in the Three Realms are not kind-hearted people.”

“Then let’s stay here and take a look, I feel like us staying here is pretty nice,” Yang Jian couldn’t help but speak up. “Did you already forget what happened this morning?”

“Then... let’s do as you guys said,” Ye Zichen nodded.

Ruan Qingtian smiled as well, “During this period of time, we have to pay attention to the teleporting point to come here. Our main mission is observing and identifying who is the Chosen One, after all, those who knows their enemies are victorious. We have to pay attention to all those who arrive, and try to befriend all those with keys, while staying on guard against all those without.”

...

At the same time, a group of people appeared on Mount Biluo. They were no other than the entirety of Zuo Mo’s second uncle’s Zuo Hongxin’s subordinates.

Since they had ended up in Earth Traveler Sun’s hands, Zuo Hongxin had to give up a huge chunk to ransom them back.

At that moment, he was already putting everything on the line to kill Zuo Mo on Mount Biluo. As long as Zuo Mo died, then everything would be fine for him.

“It’s Lady Zuo Mo’s carriage,” the driver noticed the earth dragon carriage Ye Zichen and co. had left outside Mount Biluo right away.

Zuo Hongxin gave a cue to a guest chamberlain beside him. However, the man shook his head towards him after taking a look.

“It seems like my disobedient niece has already entered,” Zuo Hongxin snorted sinisterly, then raised his eyebrows towards the surrounding guest chamberlain. “Success or failure depends entirety on this. Don’t disappoint the money I paid for your

ransom.”

“We definitely will not disappoint master,” everyone cupped their hands towards Zuo Hongxin.

However, just as they were about to enter, a black-robed man holding a piece of dog-tail grass appeared at the teleportation point.

“There’s too many of you. If you want to enter, then... Choose four of you!” The black-robed man said with a hoarse voice.

“Who’re you to decide what we are to do?” the driver frowned.

The black-robed man looked up, then snorted.

Heh.

Ugh.

The driver felt the blood in his chest boil as he coughed up a mouthful of blood.

“If you want to enter Mount Biluo, then do as I said. If you continue wasting your breath, then stay here!”

A terrifying spiritual pressure spread towards them like a tsunami.

Zuo Hongxin’s expression drastically changed as he lifted his hand with a frown, “What do you mean, sir?”

“Was I speaking a dialect just now?” The black-robed man scolded. “If you want to pass, then choose four people. If you don’t, then all of you can stay here. I’m pretty bored here myself.”

A pitch-black tentacle shining with a purple light reached out from underneath the black-robed man’s robe. The moment it touched a Sky Immortal level expert beside Zuo Hongxin...

Bang.

Crack.

“I’ll give you some time to consider, but I will help you reduce

your numbers by one every ten seconds until only four of you remains,” the black-robed man smiled.

Seeing that, Zuo Hongxin felt his heart bleed.

Sky Immortal.

That was a devoted servant of his that he had nurtured using uncountable amounts of money and fortune, but this black-robed man had killed him just like that. What’s more, he said that he will continue to...

Just who is he? Why have I never heard of such a powerful person in the Immortal Region?

He had instantly killed that Sky Immortal expert.

“Hey, why are you guys still here? Do you want Grandpa Ma to capture you all once again?” At that moment, Earth Traveler Sun passed through with his disciples and the other bandits. The person who spoke was no other than Ma Teng.

“It’s you guys!” Zuo Hongxin frowned. It was those people who made him spend nearly his entire fortune that he had saved up for nearly a hundred years.

“Ten seconds are up,” the black robed man snorted. The tentacle appeared once again and grabbed hold of another Sky Immortal expert...

“Don’t!”

Bang.

Crack.

“Oh my f\*cking god!” Ma Teng shivered and subconsciously glanced towards the black-robed man.

The man merely said with his hoarse voice, “If you’re going to enter, then hurry.”

“Yes, yes, yes!”

Earth Traveler Sun and Ma Teng immediately left the teleportation point.

At this moment, Zuo Hongxin frowned, “Why were they...”

“You want to argue?” The black-robed man smiled. “I decide my own rules. You still have three seconds to consider! Three...”

## Chapter 556 – Third Fatty Jin’s Return

---

At that moment, Zuo Hongxin had finally noticed that the black-robed man was intentionally making things difficult for him.

But I’ve never offended an expert of this level... I’ve always been careful. Don’t even talk about angering him, I would speak extremely carefully to an expert of this level all the time...

However, the black-robed man did not care about so much. He merely continued to count down.

“Two. One!”

Whoosh.

The tentacle appeared from the black-robed man’s shoulder area once again.

Zuo Hongxin also shouted out, “Don’t, I’ll choose!”

Crack.

The moment Zuo Hongxin shouted out, the tentacle had already crushed one of the people he had brought over.

It was clear from the few times the black-robed man killed that he was killing Zuo Hongxin’s helpers according to their strength.

He was killing them from strong to weak. At that moment, only one Sky Immortal expert remained amongst them, and he was only at the early stage of the Sky Immortal level.

“You spoke too slowly. You only spoke up after I finished the countdown...” The black-robed man shrugged with a smile, then looked towards Zuo Hongxin, who already had a pale expression. “Choose. Hurry up this time. If you’re too slow, then I will continue.”

Creak.

Zuo Hongxin clenched his teeth, then eventually let out a long

sigh, and asked the Sky Immortal level expert to walk over. At the same time, he also chose two other guest chamberlains who were rather capable in the fields of formation and fortune telling.

“Sir, I finished choosing,” Zuo Hongxin lowered his head humbly.

The black-robed man glanced over with a satisfied nod, “Not bad, you know that the four people includes yourself. I thought you would choose one more, making me eliminate one for you again. Alright, it’s just you four. Enter!”

“Master, then we...”

“You guys stay here. When that black-robed person leaves, then...” Zuo Hongxin whispered, and wanted to give more instructions, but the black-robed man, who sat on the ground, snorted unhappily.

“Hurry up. Or do you want this sovereign to send you over!?”

Hearing that, Zuo Hongxin and the guest chamberlains beside him trembled.

Zuo Hongxin gave a silent signal to the brighter guest chamberlains amongst them, then cupped his hands towards the black-robed man, and departed through the teleportation point.

“You guys...” The black-robed man patted away the dust on his robe and stood up after Zuo Hongxin and co. left.

All of the guest chamberlains who had seen how fast he killed the others gulped subconsciously and took a few steps back.

“Don’t be nervous. As long as you guys don’t piss me off, I won’t kill you guys.”

With that, he casually threw a couple of rocks on the ground, marking out a ten meters by ten meters square. “Enter yourselves, don’t make me force you.”

Tap, tap, tap...

All of the guest chamberlains immediately jogged over.

When they all entered, a barrier immediately erected from the stones, and trapped them within.

“Stay in there properly. You guys will be naturally let out, alive, when everything’s over, but that’s if... you haven’t starved to death by then!”

...

Xue Lian had intelligently passed the Snow Rabbit Clan’s meeting halls to Ye Zichen and co. The past few days for her had been frightening.

Monarch.

And another one.

She already lost count of how many monarchs she had seen in the past few days, but she had definitely seen more monarchs than she had in her entire life before.

“It seems like there are more and more people entering Mount Biluo these few days,” Ruan Qingtian held a cup of floral tea in his hand. It was floral tea that Ye Zichen had kept in his phone while he was in the Modern Realm. “Brother Ye, your floral tea is pretty nice.”

“Haha!” Ye Zichen smiled. He was unable to remain as calm as Ruan Qingtian did under these sorts of circumstances. “Have you heard any news on Zuo Hongxin recently?”

“No,” Ruan Qingtian twitched his mouth and shrugged. “I saw them enter the other day, but I have no idea where they went afterward, nor have I seen them around these few days. But they shouldn’t have any interest in Mount Supreme, they came to...”

With that, Ruan Qingtian raised his eyebrows at Zuo Mo.

“Stop putting on that look. Do you think I have no idea that he’s coming for me?” Zuo Mo rolled her eyes. “They are making a final

stand, and want to finish me here, but there's no way he'll get that lucky."

"Don't underestimate them."

Ye Zichen did realize that they had plenty of experts around with Yang Jian, Jail King and Zhuge Hong, so it was impossibly difficult for Zuo Hongxin to deal with Zuo Mo.

However, he still couldn't help but to remind Zuo Mo not to be too careless. After all, nobody could guess just what sort of nasty tricks Zuo Hongxin might pull.

"I know," Zuo Mo pursed her lips and smiled. Then she raised her eyebrows. "Are you worrying about me?"

"Mhmm, the temperature outside seems pretty nice. Brother Qingtian, let's go for a walk," Ye Zichen stood up from his chair and stretched lazily.

Ruan Qingtian raised his eyebrows towards Zuo Mo with a smile, then nodded towards Ye Zichen, "I feel like this is a pretty good choice."

"Ugh, they're pissing me off!" Zuo Mo stomped her feet with a pout as she watched the two leave.

...

"I sensed someone go over there," Ye Zichen, who was strolling outside the Snow Rabbit Clan's village, glanced at the manor on the opposite side.

"Some people indeed went over, but none of them have any keys," Ruan Qingtian replied.

"We have to pay attention to those without keys. They might come and try to snatch it from us," Ye Zichen squinted his eyes.

"Naturally, that's something we can't avoid. It is just a matter of time," Ruan Qingtian's mood was unusually good, and he has not been troubled by the issue at all.

“You’re optimistic,” Ye Zichen said.

“I just came here for some treasure. I don’t care about the inheritance at all. I already took the worst-case scenario in mind, even if my key gets snatched, since each key can take three people excluding the key holder, you can take me inside, right?” Ruan Qingtian smiled.

“We’ll see,” Ye Zichen couldn’t help but chuckle at Ruan Qingtian’s carefree words. At that moment...

“Ahh, are you guys bandits? I’ve already ran so far, and yet you’re still f\*cking chasing me!” A fatty with a sweatshirt ran in the front at a distance not that far away. Meanwhile, two men with eyepatches chased behind him.

Although the fatty was being chased by them, the fatty was extremely agile, and the two weren’t able to catch up as well.

If it wasn’t for the fatty stopping to throw insults, he would have lost the two ages ago.

“Do you still care about your face? Who’s the bandit here!?” the two men with eyepatches wanted to cry. “Hurry up and return the key to us. Otherwise, the Three Swordsmen of Mount Tang will never be done with you!”

“Three Swordsmen? You guys are just two!” the fatty raised his eyebrows and mocked. “What? You lost your swords, so you have to go and buy some?” the fatty ran forward with a giggle, while revealing his disdain towards them.

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but raise his eyebrows when he saw that. This familiar fatty, and the cocky tone...

“Third Fatty Jin!”

# Chapter 557 – Triggered

---

Third Fatty Jin had left behind a note saying he returned to the Immortal Region due to orders. I didn't expect to meet him again here at Mount Biluo. I guess he came for Mount Supreme as well.

“C'mon, chase me. If you manage to catch me, then I'll let you... Hehehe!”

Third Fatty Jin would stop shamelessly every few steps and mock the pursuers behind him. The two men could only clench their teeth and try their hardest to catch up.

“Junior Brother, enough is enough. Haven't you messed around enough?”

A man appeared in the sky with a longsword in his hands. The man had completely white hair, but looked to be only twenty-something years old.

“It's not my fault. What can I do when they are chasing after me with everything they've got?” Third Fatty Jin shrugged, then raised his eyebrows at the two eye-patched pursuers. “Stop chasing me!”

“Grandson, don't let us catch up,” the eye-patched men continued to chase him relentlessly.

The man holding the sword in mid-air couldn't help but speak up when he saw that, “Then keep playing with them, but I'm going to remove the technique from their legs.”

He pointed towards the two men.

Seeing that, Third Fatty Jin shouted out, “Don't!”

However, he was too late. The man holding the sword had already dispelled the technique from the two men, causing them to instantly feel like their legs became a lot lighter. At the same time, the smiles on their face also brightened.

“Fatty, come and die.”

“Oh mama mia,” The reason he was able to mess with the two was because of his Senior Brother’s technique, now that it was dispelled, he immediately became nervous.

As his fat body moved forward, he passed by Ye Zichen. At that very moment, Ye Zichen patted him on the shoulders, and stopped him, before stomping on the ground.

Crack.

Cracks surfaced on the flat earth. The two eye-patched men also subconsciously stopped and looked vigilantly in front of them without daring to make any reckless actions.

“Boss Ye,” a hint of joy surfaced on Third Fatty Jin’s face when he saw Ye Zichen.

It looks like the two eyes who have been chasing me are very wary of Ye Zichen. Under this sort of situation, Third Fatty Jin felt like he really was wasting the opportunity if he doesn’t act cocky.

“C’mon, chase me, aren’t you guys amazing and determined? Look, the key is in my hand, come...” Third Fatty Jin took out a key. When he saw the blinding light from it..

Oh my f\*cking god, just how many keys are nearby?

“Don’t you feel wrong for doing this? You snatched the key from us, and now you’re mocking us now. That is extremely unsightly,” the man with an eye-patch on his right eye said sullenly.

Third Fatty Jin quickly put his key away, then looked around vigilantly before snorting, “The keys to Mount Supreme go to the capable. Since you guys managed to get your key snatched by me, all it means is that you guys aren’t strong enough. Even if I didn’t snatch it from you, someone else would still do the same here. Since that’s the case, I rather benefit myself rather than someone else.”

“Just leave,” Ye Zichen said. “It is great fortune for an Earth Immortal to be able to find the key, but this is not a place for you guys to be. You might get killed.”

“You guys are too much!” the man with an eye-patch on his left eye roared. Then, a sword appeared in his hand as he started to muster up the celestial spiritual energy in his surroundings.

The man with the eye-patch on his right eye also did so. Moreover, for some strange reason, the spiritual energy of the two began to synchronize.

“Slash!”

“Heh, break!” Ye Zichen lifted his hand. A faint light appeared forth from his palm and broke the blade of light the two brothers swung.

Then, he stepped forward with his left foot, and swung his right fist.

A tremendous amount of spiritual energy surrounded his fist.

Seeing that, the two eye-patched men immediately raised their swords to block it off....

Oomph.

Blood flowed down the corner of their mouths.

At the same time, Ye Zichen also scolded them, “Scram.”

Third Fatty Jin was completely dumbfounded. He never expected Ye Zichen to have grown so much in a few months.

I was already an Earth Immortal in the Modern Realm, and Ye Zichen was merely at the False Spiritual Body level.

Now, I just entered the Sky Immortal level, but it seems like Ye Zichen at the very least has the strength of a late-stage Sky Immortal.

Should I say, as to be expected of the Yellow Emperor’s

reincarnation?

“Friend, your actions are not so good, are they?” Just as the two eye-patched men fell onto the ground, a young man flew out of the manor opposite the Snow Rabbit Clan’s village.

It was the young man who wanted to take over the Snow Rabbit Clan’s village initially.

“Long time no see,” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes with a smile. There was nothing wrong with what Ye Zichen said at all. After all, it had already been an entire week since the last time they had met.

“It hasn’t been so long. Maybe you haven’t been paying much attention to me, but I have to you,” the young man smiled, then cupped his hands. “I don’t seem to recall us having exchanged our names yet. Bian Tianrui!”

“Ye Zichen!” Ye Zichen replied with a faint smile.

“Brother Ye,” Bian Tianrui nodded, then walked beside the two men and held them up with a smile. “Brother Ye’s friend took the key of these two friends, that’s not quite right. I wonder if Brother Ye can...”

“No!” Ye Zichen interrupted with a meaningful smile. “Don’t being the peacemaker here. Everyone who comes here knows that holding the key now doesn’t mean that they’ll be holding the key when Mount Supreme appears. It’s way too normal for one to take someone else’s key or get their own snatched away. The reason you haven’t done anything yet is because you aren’t confident that you’ll succeed!”

“Brother Ye sure is confident,” said Bian Tianrui.

“I’m merely speaking the truth,” Ye Zichen smiled. “I’m sure the people on your side must be feeling sad that the people holding the keys actually all know me. My team is increasing in number day by day, and what can you do about it even if you keep on taking in those without any keys?”

“Brother Ye’s words are...” Bian Tianrui smiled, then nodded. “That’s right. Currently, we have already become the two different sides that are going to enter Mount Supreme. But Brother Ye is too confident, in fact you’re so confident that I have to test you to see where your confidence comes from.”

Clap. Clap.

Bian Tianrui clapped his hands, then a group of people flew out of the manor and stood behind him as they stared intently in front of them.

At the same time, the experts staying in the Snow Rabbit Clan also flew over, and stared back coldly.

The atmosphere became unusually tense...

“It seems like it can’t be avoided!” Bian Rianrui smiled.

“More bullshit is useless. We have the keys. If you want them... Then come and get it, but be careful. Don’t let your two keys fall into our hands!”

# Chapter 558 – Undefeatable

---

Third Fatty Jin was rather confused.

What's going on? Are they going to fight because I got the key? This doesn't look like it's going to just be a small skirmish.

However, what caught more of his attention was Ye Zichen's side!

Heavenly Court, Beast Region... If I count myself in, that's all three factions.

All three factions do not get along, yet Ye Zichen actually managed to get on good terms with all of them, and have them not fight amongst themselves.

Amazing!

"I thank Brother Ye for your worries. I am keeping the key rather safely," Bian Tianrui smiled, then snapped his fingers.

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, "Go!"

"Damn, I've been waiting for this for a long time. It's finally happening," Jail King charged at the very front, and nimbly moved through the enemies.

All those below the Sky Immortal level got beaten down wherever he passed through.

"Soldiers against soldiers, generals against generals. Do you not feel ashamed of yourself by lowering your status to attack Human Immortal level youngsters?" An elder walked over with a gloomy expression.

Jail King glanced over, and hooked his fingers at the elder, "Come and die!"

As the fight broke out, rays of spiritual energy fluctuation continuously tore at the surrounding space. Since they were in a sub-dimension, the surrounding space began to get shredded apart

by the residues of the large-scale battle.

From first glance, Ye Zichen's side seemed to have the advantage.

Although Bian Tianrui had gotten together some people who had come for the keys, they were not as strong as those on Ye Zichen's side.

Even though they were numerous, there was still a huge gap in strength.

"Young Master!" Iron Bull rubbed his fists. He was a warmonger, and if he didn't get to fight in a situation like the one they were in now, he would feel extremely terrible.

"Go, be careful," Bian Tianrui could tell that relying on his mash-up crew was impossible, but he himself had no issues with keeping himself safe.

"Oh yeah!" Iron Bull rotated his shoulders, then charged towards the crowd.

"Yang Jian," Ye Zichen shouted with a frown.

Yang Jian glanced over at Iron Bull, who was about to enter the fray, and smirked, "Got it!"

With that, he heavily wounded the Human Immortal level expert in front of him, then slowly walked over with his lance.

As the two experts met.

Iron Bull subconsciously stopped, while Yang Jian did the same.

Both of them were able to sense a different feeling from the other despite being several tens of meters away.

"Yang Jian!" Iron Bull called sullenly.

"Yo, so you know your grandpa's name. Since that's the case, then shouldn't you kneel down and beg for mercy? Otherwise, don't cry like a baby when grandpa beats the shit out of you," Yang Jian said playfully.

“Heh, I’ve wanted to see what the number one war god of the Heavenly Court is capable of since ages ago. Bring it!” Iron Bull put on an anticipating stance.

Yang Jian glanced at him, and the light in his hands shimmered, “Since you’re so desperately wanting to get killed, then... I’ll grant you your wish!”

With that, Yang Jian dragged the lance along the floor and charged forward. A crack appeared on the ground that the lance traced over... “Die!”

Even though both sides sent out their strongest warrior, neither Ye Zichen nor Bian Tianrui looked over. Instead, both of them stared straight at one another.

“Brother Ye, are you not worried?” Bian Tianrui said.

“Since you’re not worried, then why should I be?” Ye Zichen smiled.

Suddenly, Yang Jian, who was fighting Iron Bull in the sky, coughed up a mouthful of blood and fell downwards.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen’s expression drastically changed.

“It seems like your guy is worse than mine,” Bian Tianrui smiled.

Right before hitting the ground, Yang Jian slapped the ground, and managed to land stably.

“Ugh,” Yang Jian spat out a bit of blood, then wiped the stains away from the corner of his mouth. “I underestimated you.”

“Zhuge Hong, go and help Yang Jian!” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes said angrily.

Zhuge Hong, who was fighting the group of Human Immortal level experts looked over, then squinted her eyes. She sent a ball of fire to engulf the experts in front of her and hurried over.

However, Zhuge Hong’s actions caused an opening in Ye Zichen’s formation.

“F\*ck!”

Ye Zichen gave Bian Tianrui the evil eye, then charged towards the Human Immortal experts without any hesitation.

“Brother Ye, I won’t make a move if you don’t. Wasn’t it nice for us to just stay still for a while?”

The moment Ye Zichen moved, Bian Tianrui also caught up like his shadow.

“Scram,” Ye Zichen swung his fist, but Bian Tianrui caught it with a playful smile.

“Are you very worried right now? Sorry, you aren’t leaving.”

He flung Ye Zichen back to where he was, then stood in front of him with a soft smile.

At that moment, the Human Immortal level experts had already begun to fight Zhuge Kongming and co...

Creak.

Ye Zichen clenched his fist tightly.

Although Bian Tianrui seemed to be of a similar strength to Ye Zichen, for Ye Zichen, his spiritual energy felt extremely strange. It was as if his spiritual energy naturally countered Ye Zichen’s own.

What’s more, the young man had very strange movements, and he was just like a shadow that Ye Zichen couldn’t get rid of.

I have to find a chance to get over there. Or perhaps, if I can get some help right now...

...

“Wei Chen, I didn’t expect you to be the White Tiger’s Body Double,” Xia Keke smiled casually at the teleportation point within Mount Biluo, while several dragon elders followed behind her.

“Yeah!” Wei Chen smiled.

“Ai, do you know what Mount Supreme is for? My tribesmen forced me to come, but refused to tell me anything,” Xia Keke pouted.

“Mount Supreme is where someone can become a supreme,” Wei Chen replied with a smile. “But whether a person can get the inheritance will be all up to fate. We didn’t get any message about being the Chosen One, so it probably isn’t any of us.

“Then what did I come here for?” Xia Keke frowned in annoyance, then said to the dragon clan elder beside her. “I don’t want to go to whatever Mount Supreme. Send me to Maple City, I want to go and find Zichen-gege!”

“Young Lady, don’t throw a tantrum. Since we’ve already come here, then let’s continue the journey,” said an elder.

Wei Chen’s expression shifted for a moment, “Boss Ye is in Maple City?”

“Yeah, he said that he would come and play with me at the Dragon Clan when he has time, but he still hasn’t come. Susu didn’t reply any of my messages either. When I went to look for her, her older sister didn’t let me enter. I’m so bored!” Xia Keke swung her fists angrily.

However, at that very moment, all of them heard the clash of spiritual energy.

“A fight is up ahead. Did Mount Supreme... appear?”

# Chapter 559 – Helper

---

“Secret art of supernaturality!”

Zhuge Hongming shouted solemnly. After journeying around in the Three Realms, he was no long the pitiful child staying at Ye Zichen’s supermarket for cup noodles and sodas.

He looked forward seriously, then ten wooden stakes appeared on the ground with his shout.

“Transform!” The stakes turned into puppets with wooden shields and metal swords with Zhuge Kongming’s call, then charged towards the enemies as if they possessed their own consciousness.

“I, grandpa, have my own tricks as well!”

Three huge dice appeared in the sky. Third Fatty Jin used his spiritual energy to roll the dice, causing them to rotate intensely in midair.

“Cougar, cougar, cougar...” Third Fatty Jin held his hands together and murmured.

When the enemies in the surrounding saw him, they immediately rushed over.

Just when one of those who were about to launch a surprise attack on Third Fatty Jin got in front of him, Third Fatty Jin suddenly opened his eyes.

“[Five, five, six. Big!](#)”

Third Fatty Jin’s fist instantly enlarged by several times, while a feeling of endless energy coursed through his body. All he needed was a point of release.

Thus, the surprise attacker got the brunt of it all.

“Eat grandpa’s fist!”

Bang.

As the fist pounded the attacker, the person shot out like a cannonball. However, during so, he completely knocked over and destroyed Zhuge Kongming's wooden figures.

“What are you doing!?” Zhuge Kongming coughed up a mouthful of blood.

Third Fatty Jin scratched his head with a coy smile, “That was a mistake.”

Yet, since he had gotten too excited earlier, he completely used up all of the power the dice gave him.

When he saw the enemies charge towards him, he immediately threw the dice up in mid air once again. “Cougar, cougar...”

The enemies all stopped vigilantly, the image of the person getting sent flying by the fatty's punch was still fresh in their mind.

“One, three, three. Small!” the fatty's face instantly darkened.

The people opposite him looked up at the numbers on the dice, then glanced at the fatty's expressions. “This grandson failed. Get him!”

“F\*ck!” Third Fatty Jin immediately ran backwards, while he cursed quietly...

This shitty thing is supposed to be a legendary artifact? Isn't this just messing with me!?

“Kiddo, help me block them off for ten minutes,” Third Fatty Jin ran behind Zhuge Kongming.

However, since his wooden men were destroyed, Zhuge Kongming was in a weakened state...

“Scram!” At that very moment, Lil' White stood in front of them.

“Bro, you truly are reliable,” Third Fatty Jin chuckled, while Lil'

White clenched his teeth and forced himself to continue on...

...

“F\*ck off!” Ye Zichen felt like he was going mad. He never expected Iron Bull’s entrance to cause such a huge butterfly effect.

Although the Sky Immortal level expert who was fighting Jail King was just killed, Jail King was in no shape to help Lil’ White and co.

At that moment, Iron Bull was fighting the combination of Yang Jian, Zhuge Hong and Jail King. Yet, the combination did not gain the upper hand, in fact, Iron Bull was the one who had a slight upper hand.

“F\*ck off!” Ye Zichen had already summoned Xuan-Yuan Sword. He had tried to breakthrough from Bian Tianrui, but Bian Tianrui just stuck onto him.

“Brother Ye, stop trying. You aren’t leaving.”

With that, Bian Tianrui’s body suddenly split in half. His true body took a step backwards and waved towards Ye Zichen, “I’m taking the key!”

A proud smile covered Bian Tianrui’s face. Ye Zichen repeatedly cut apart the avatar, but it merely regenerated itself over and over again, and stuck onto Ye Zichen.

“Heh, don’t even think about breakthrough for my Profound Energy Avatar without a destruction talent on the level of a Sky Immortal,” Bian Tianrui smiled, then slowly walked towards Lil’ White.

The fluctuation of the key on his chest became even more intense. It seems like they’re all holding keys.

“Hand them over. As long as you hand the keys over to me, then I can ensure that you guys aren’t killed,” Bian Tianrui reached out his hand with a smile.

Lil' White and co. all subconsciously covered their chest.

Third Fatty Jin snorted in disdain, "Stop pretending. Give me three minutes if you dare. If I roll a cougar, then you're all dead."

"Heavenly Spirit Die. I heard that it is a legendary artifact that has its effect based on the possessor's luck, but I see that your luck is rather poor right now," Bian Tianrui smiled.

Third Fatty Jin cursed, "Grandson, I, your grandpa, possess tremendous luck. My master, the Great Emperor Qingming, said that my luck is ridiculous. You f\*cking dare to say that my luck is poor?"

Third Fatty Jin intentionally mentioned Great Emperor Qingming to make Bian Tianrui wary.

However, he didn't care at all.

"Your mouth is too stinky. I've decide to kill you," Bian Tianrui squinted his eyes, then reached towards Third Fatty Jin.

Third Fatty Jin gulped. Then...

"So bloodthirsty at such a young age is terrible!"

A person grabbed Bian Tianrui's hand. Bian Tianrui looked up, and saw Wei Chen smiling at him with a faint smile.

He tried to muster up strength, only to find that Wei Chen had locked his hand around his wrist, so he was unable to move at all.

"Who are you!?"

"Guess. If you guess it right, then I'll tell you."

Dong.

A fist slammed into Bian Tianrui's back.

Ugh.

Blood flowed out of Bian Tianrui's mouth. At the same time, he could also heard a voice from behind him.

“Tiger Fist!”

Wei Chen let go of Bian Tianrui’s arm. Then, a young man ran past him. The young man looked like a completely delinquent.

He smiled towards Wei Chen, “Dad, how was it?”

“Not bad, you improved,” Wei Chen smiled, then looked towards Bian Tianrui on the floor. “What are you blanking out for? Screw off. Don’t think about your sheep to come and save you. They have trouble even staying alive right now.”

Bian Tianrui looked over at the rest of the battlefield, but what he saw only made him open his eyes wider.

Several Sky Immortal level experts popped out of nowhere, and fought Iron Bull alongside Yang Jian and co. Although Iron Bull was strong, but two hands were unable to fight against four, not to mention the fact that there were way more than four hands attacking him.

Meanwhile, there were people hunting down Human Immortal level experts as well.

Thus, he could only look towards Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen’s the backbone of the group, as long as I capture him, then I still have a chance.

Bian Tianrui chanted silently in his heart to control his avatar, but noticed that he had already lost contact with it.

“Bian Tianrui, you lose.”

Ye Zichen walked over with a smile as Bian Tianrui was completely confused about what was going on. Meanwhile, a cute girl followed beside Ye Ziche, and wrapped her arms around Ye Zichen’s.

“You actually got out,” Bian Tianrui exclaimed. “Impossible, you couldn’t have possible escaped from my Profound Energy Avatar. Just how did you do it? Where is my avatar!?”

“Avatar?” At that moment, the girl beside Ye Zichen tilted her head, and licked her lips as if she wanted more. “I ate it!”

# Chapter 560 – Defeat

---

Bian Tianrui opened his eyes wide in shock.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen couldn't help but shake his head with a smile when he saw Xia Keke's little glutton like look.

The situation back then...

“Cutting it over and over again is so damn annoying!”

Although the avatars did not possess much defense, and had basically no attack, what was annoying was their regenerative powers. No matter how many times Ye Zichen hacked it to pieces, the avatars would recover to their former glory.

Yet, it just stuck onto him like glue!

“Xuan-Yuan Xiang, do you have a way to get rid of these avatars?” Ye Zichen frowned.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang replied in his consciousness, “I’m trying, don’t be so anxious.”

Don’t be anxious?

Bian Tianrui already went over to where Lil’ White and co. is, how could I not be anxious?

“Zichen-ge,” Just as Ye Zichen was getting extremely frustrated, Xia Keke ran over with a giggle.

Although she was excited to see Ye Zichen, she did not forget to order the experts by her side to go and attack Iron Bull.

“Keke, why did you come over here?”

Ye Zichen wanted to go and welcome her, but the avatars stuck onto him once more.

“Seriously...”

Ye Zichen could only try to hack them to pieces once again, but they only regenerated over and over again.

Xia Keke walked over with a blink and looked at the two avatars, “What are they for?”

“I don’t know,” Ye Zichen frowned. “Ignore me, go over to where Lil’ White is, they...”

“Don’t worry, Wei Chen already went over.”

“Wei Chen?”

“Yeah, I came here with him,” Xia Keke giggled, then licked her lips, and gulped when she saw the avatars. “I don’t know why, but subconsciously, I want to eat them.”

“Huh?” Ye Zichen was confused.

“One sec,” with that, Xia Keke grabbed one of the avatars and bit down.

After she swallowed, her eyes lit up, as she begun to feast.

In mere moments, she finished the two avatars.

“Burp,” Xia Keke patted her tummy. “Is there more? I want to eat some more!”

“I don’t think so, but... that brat might have some!”

Thus, Ye Zichen and Xia Keke flew over to where Bian Tianrui was.

At the same time, Xia Keke reached out her hands, “Do you have more of those avatars? I didn’t have enough!”

“No!” Bian Tianrui replied with bloodshot eyes. My luck is terrible. Why did I bump into a freak like this who can eat Profound Energy?

“Be more courteous! Can’t you tell what sort of situation you’re in?”

Third Fatty Jin kicked Bian Tianrui. It was all to be expected, after all, Third Fatty Jin can’t get by even a second without acting cockily when he has the chance.

“Do-Do you know who I am!?” Bian Tianrui said angrily with a frown.

Third Fatty Jin rolled his eyes and snorted, “Who cares. You’re our prisoner right now, so stop pretending. Otherwise, grandpa will slap you!”

Third Fatty Jin raised his hand up as if he was going to hit Bian Tianrui. The latter subconsciously closed his eyes, only to hear Third Fatty Jin chuckled, “Look at this grandson, he’s scared!”

Creak.

Bian Tianrui clenched his teeth.

At that moment, Iron Bull, who was fighting Yang Jian and co. was also hit, and fell down from the sky.

“Young Master!” Iron Bull’s eyes gradually turned red.

Seeing that, Bian Tianrui quickly shook his head and call out, “Don’t.”

With that, he stood up and stared at Ye Zichen, “What do I need to do for you to let me go?”

“The keys!” Ye Zichen reached out his hand.

Xia Keke also added, “And the profound energy you mentioned.”

“Here’s the keys!” Bian Tianrui clenched his teeth, then yanked the two keys off his neck and chucked them to Ye Zichen. After that, he created another avatar...

“I gave you all that you wanted. Can you let me leave now?”

“Please!” Ye Zichen moved aside.

When Bian Tianrui walked over to Iron Bull’s side, Iron Bull frowned, “Young Master, let Iron Bull undo the seal. All of the people here should be killed!”

Bian Tianrui shook his head, then helped Iron Bull off the ground with a smile, “Let’s go.”

As they disappeared quietly from the battlefield, Yang Jian and co. hurried over.

He glanced at where Bian Tianrui and Iron Bull left, then raised his eyebrows, “Letting them leave like that is like allowing a tiger to return to the mountains!”

“In desperation, a dog would jump over a wall, and a rabbit will bite. If we really pushed them against the corner, then we won’t be able to endure the backlash,” Ye Zichen said calmly. “There’s more to them than what meets the eye.”

“Indeed, especially that Iron Bull!” Jail King panted heavily. “I haven’t used so much effort in fighting for a long time. We clearly had the advantage in numbers, yet we were still dominated by that bastard. If it wasn’t because he had his mind on something else, we might not have been able to beat him!”

“Yeah, that grandson is stronger than the monkey,” said Yang Jian.

“He’s that strong?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. He saw that Iron Bull had the strength of a Sky Immortal, and everyone present are powerhouses amongst Sky Immortals. Yet, he actually dominated his opponents...

“Could he be an Immortal King?”

“No, he’s still a Sky Immortal,” a dragon elder shook his head. “But the purity of his spiritual energy is a lot purer than ours, so it has a suppressing effect on our own spiritual energy!”

“I felt the strangeness of his spiritual energy as well,” Yang Jian squinted his eyes. “But I don’t get it. Just where could he be from to have spiritual energy even purer than mine!”

“Where else? Up there,” Wei Chen walked over with a smile and pointed to the sky. “Don’t forget, there’s still people up there.”

“They’re from the Upper Three Realms!?” The dragon elder exclaimed.

“Most likely,” Wei Chen nodded. “Mount Supreme is no simple matter. It’s rather normal for someone from the Upper Three Realms to come down. Let’s not think about so much, and take it as it goes. Oh yeah, what do we do about these people?” Wei Chen pointed at the trembling people on the floor.

Ye Zichen glanced at them, then shook his head, “Tell them to scram!”

“You hear that? Boss Ye told you guys to scram!” Third Fatty Jin immediately took the chance to act cockily. When he passed by one of the people who attacked him, he kicked the person and cursed. “Try bullying me again!”

After cleaning up the battlefield, Ye Zichen subconsciously looked at the enlarged team...

I don’t think the Snow Rabbit Clan’s village can fit us all!

...

“Young Master, are you alright?” Iron Bull helped Bian Tianrui walk over to a piece of boulder and sat down.

Bian Tianrui shook his head and smiled, “I didn’t expect us to fall into his trap.”

“Young Master, why didn’t you let Iron Bull...”

“If we undid your seal and slaughtered everyone, then all of the antiques of the Three Realms will come out. When that happens, are you going to fight and die, while I run?” Bian Tianrui frowned and scolded angrily.

Iron Bull scratched his head, “Then what do you think we should do? Our key got taken by them.”

“Mount Supreme haven’t opened up yet, who can be sure of where the keys will end up?” Bian Tianrui snorted.

“Young Master, you want to...” Iron Bull raised his eyebrows.

Bian Tianrui smirked, “Go and contact those people who sought

us out. Tell them that I agree to his terms!”

# Chapter 561 – Those who think too highly of themselves will not prevail

---

“Sire...” Xue Lian smiled wryly as she looked at the group of people behind Ye Zichen.

Their territory wasn't so big. When it was just the our group prior, it was already a bit cramped, and now that another group came...

“It's a bit too many people isn't it?” Ye Zichen smiled wryly.

Xue Lian bit her lips, “Don't worry, I'll just tell my tribesmen to squeeze a bit.”

“What for? The manor opposite the village's quite nice,” Jail King pointed at the manor and raised his eyebrows. “I had my eyes on that manor for a long time, let's just snatch that over as well.”

Ye Zichen smacked his fist against his palm.

Oh yeah!

Ye Zichen couldn't help but nod with a smile, “Jail King is right. Let's just snatch that away.”

All of them ran to the manor opposite the village. When they arrived, they saw the Emerald Cat Clan run out.

“Sires, we were threatened, we're leaving right now...” All of the Emerald Cat Clansmen nodded with coy smiles, then before Ye Zichen and co. entered, the one in the lead waved his hand towards his clansmen and they all departed from the manor.

“See? Now we have enough space, right? Take your pick. I'm knackered after that fight, so I'm going to rest,” Jail King selected a room and ran over to it.

Ye Zichen smiled, and said to the others, “Everyone, do as you please.”

He walked over to the pavilion in the center of the manor. I didn't expect Bian Tianrui to have such elegance. His design of the manor is quite good.

But we took over it before he even stayed for too long. I wonder if he would cough up blood if he finds out.

“Brother Ye, why did you guys come over?”

Ruan Qingtian walked in from outside with a chuckle, while a expressionless man holding a celestial sword stood behind him.

That person was Third Fatty Jin's senior brother!

“I wanted to look for you. Why didn't I see you just now?” Ye Zichen frowned. If Ruan Qingtian had been there, then the situation might not have turned so dire.

As the Pavilion Head of the Azure Sky Pavilion, he definitely had many abilities that would turn that mustered-up army into not that much of a threat.

“I...” Ruan Qingtian glanced at the man behind him stealthily.

At that moment, Third Fatty Jin walked over. When he saw his senior brother, he immediately frowned, “Senior Brother, where did you go off to just now? Your junior brother nearly got killed!”

“Unskilled, and worse than others. It's not my fault!” The man continued to remain cold.

Meanwhile, Third Fatty Jin smiled coyly, then introduced him to Ye Zichen. “Boss Ye, this is my Senior Brother, [Bi Shengtian](#), he is the disciple my esteemed master is most proud of. He is of the early stage of the Sky Immortal level!”

Then, he turned to Bi Shengtian in an attempt to introduce Ye Zichen, only to be mercilessly interrupted, “No need to introduce him to me. I have no need to know him.”

Ruan Qingtian smiled and took a few steps to the side when he saw Bi Shengtian's arrogant look.

Third Fatty Jin looked at Ye Zichen and his senior brother for a few moments, then walked away as well.

“Wow, so cocky,” Ye Zichen chuckled, but did not stand up from his chair. Instead, he crossed his legs and snorted. “but to be honest, I don’t want to know you either. Since we aren’t friends, then please.”

Bi Shengtian turned around indifferently to pick a room, but Ye Zichen stopped him.

“What?” Bi Shengtian frowned.

Ye Zichen pointed at the door, “Your way is that way.”

“You...”

“What? Did you think that you can stay on my turf even though you acted so arrogantly with me?” Ye Zichen smiled.

Bi Shengtian laughed in disdain, “No problem, I don’t want to be with beastmen either!”

“Youngster, say what you just said once again!? Beastmen!?”

Yang Jian and Jail King walked out together.

Bi Shengtian’s expression turned dark, “Heh, and the Heavenly Court’s trash...”

“The f\*ck, grandson, you’re damn cocky!” Yang Jian raised his eyebrows and walked forward.

Bi Shengtian immediately moved. He raised his hand and drew his sword, then pointed the tip at Yang Jian’s throat... “I’ll kill you if you move anymore!”

“Senior Brother,” Third Fatty Jin was in the most awkward position. He was on good terms with Ye Zichen, but Bi Shengtian was his Senior Brother.

Who am I supposed to help if they really end up fighting?

“Kiddo, you’re just a little strong. You won’t live long if you

continue to be so cocky,” Wei Chen walked back into the manor with a fruit in his hand. He leaned onto the arch and raised his eyebrows, then flicked his fingers towards Bi Shengtian’s blade.

A wave of air directly flicked Bi Shengtian’s sword to the side. He looked over at Wei Chen in surprise...

“Hmmp!” He sheathed his sword, then left the manor.

“This grandson is so cocky, I want to slap him to death so much!” Yang Jian raised his eyebrows and said angrily.

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but tease him, “The tip of his sword reached your neck just now. You really want to teach him a lesson?”

This Bi Shengtian is seriously strong. He actually managed to reach Yang Jian’s weak point as an early stage Sky Immortal without Yang Jian being able to react at all.

It seems like the Immortal Region is able to oppose the Heavenly Court and Underworld due to their actual strength!

“Boss Ye, all you other bosses, don’t get angry,” Third Fatty Jin walked over with a wry smile. “My Senior Brother has never left the sacred land of the Immortal Region. He has been taught that everyone from outside the Immortal Region are all his enemies, don’t mind it so much.”

“Little fatty, aren’t you from the Immortal Region as well? Why aren’t you like him?” said Jail King.

“Didn’t I follow Boss Ye for a while? What’s more, I think that peace is the best. Only in peace can we build a wonderful home. Fighting is too much!” Third Fatty Jin rubbed his hands with a smile.

Jail King nodded, then walked beside him and patted him on the shoulders, “Not bad. Your mindset is so much better than your Senior Brother’s. The outrageously intelligent will be hurt, the outrageously strong will be shamed, the outrageously stubborn

will not prevail, those who fall too deeply in love will get not live long. Your Senior Brother will end up getting into huge trouble.”

With that, Jail King smiled, shook his head, then left with his arm around Yang Jian’s shoulder.

Huh? I wonder what happened between those two. They actually get along so well now.

“Since there isn’t a show anymore, then I’m off,” Wei Chen also shook his head, and left from the arched gate.

When Third Fatty Jin saw that everyone had left, he said worriedly, “Boss Ye.”

He wasn’t familiar with all the powerhouses, and they seemed to have a terrible impression of his senior brother.

If they were to let out their anger on him, he wouldn’t dare to fight back since he lacked his senior brother’s might.

“They won’t let out their anger on you, but what they said was right. Those who think too highly of themselves will not prevail. Your senior brother is simply too proud. His arrogant personality will sooner or later cause him to fall over and never be able to get back up.”

Bi Shengtian (毕胜天) is homophonic with the phrase “必胜天”, which means “will triumph over the heavens”

# Chapter 562 – Profound Art – Sundering Lightning

---

Bi Shengtian maintained his cold expression as he walked out of the manor. His sword was held tightly like a baby in his parent's arms.

“Heh, this place is filled with the stench of wild beasts,” Bi Shengtian snorted, then raised his eyebrows. “I wonder when is the so-called Mount Supreme appearing. I hope it appears quickly, so I can leave this foul place soon.”

He found a nearby outcropping of rock and laid down. As a cultivator, he was already used to camping in the wild.

Ssss.

Zing.

The sword in his arms instantly unsheathed itself, then shot outwards, before finally stopping in front of Bian Tianrui's eyes.

“Good sword.”

“Heh, what did you come here for!?” Bi Shengtian retracted his sword, then said arrogantly.

“Brother, why aren't you staying with the Snow Rabbits?” Bian Tianrui did not yet know that his manor had been taken over, so he had thought that Ye Zichen and co. were still staying with the Snow Rabbit Clan.

“How can a gentleman side with wild beasts?” Bi Shengtian said cockily.

“Brother is right. A gentleman should not side with wild beasts,” Bian Tianrui smiled.

Bi Shengtian checked him out for a moment, then put aside his sword with a snort, “You don't seem like beastmen, so I'll leave

you alive. Scram!”

With that, he hugged his sword, and laid back onto the stone.

“Brother!” Bian Tianrui’s expression tensed, but he still maintained his smile. “I actually came here to talk about a deal with you.”

“I didn’t get back at you for harming my junior brother yet. A deal? Using your life!?”

Bi Shengtian sat up from the stone with a sullen look, then pointed upwards with his fingers, causing the celestial sword to instantly unsheathe itself and enter his hands. Grabbing the sword he immediately thrust it towards Bian Tianshui.

“You truly don’t take respect when given it!” Bian Tianrui took a step back.

Iron Bull had already waited for a long time in the woods...

Bang.

Iron Bull’s fist smashed into the sword.

What surprised Bi Shengtian was that Iron Bull’s fist was completely unscathed.

“Heh!” Bi Shengtian leaped backwards. His sword flew into the air, then multiple images of swords shot out from behind him towards Bian Tianrui and Iron Bull.

“A sword immortal!” Iron Bull smiled, then twitched his mouth. “Little fellow who hasn’t even gotten a sword immortal’s profound art, you merely have the body of a sword immortal, but don’t have the heart of one...”

Iron Bull covered his right fist with his left hand tightly. Then after the time of a breath, “Shatter!”

Raging winds were released from his fist. The sword images and the wind from Iron Bull’s fist found themselves at a standstill right at the center between the two.

This is a bit tricky.

Bi Shengtian's expression darkened. He had wanted to end the battle quickly, so he directly used the sword manipulation technique his master had taught him. He did not expect the dark-faced man to be able to actually defend against it.

How can a mere barbarian compare with me!? Bi Shengtian roared angrily in his heart. He was prideful, truly too prideful just as Ye Zichen's group had said.

He was the center of attention in the sacred land of the Immortal Region, there, he was the most outstanding amongst the younger disciples. He was born in the sacred land, and everyone who were not of the sacred land were barbarians in his eyes...

He felt like his name. He will triumph against the heavens!

Even the heavens can't do anything to me, so it would just be a joke for me to be defeated here.

"Ha!"

He repeatedly made a few weird gestures with his hands. Then all of a sudden, the sword images became stronger. Yet, Iron Bull continued to maintain a faint smile, which only irritated the arrogant Bi Shengtian even further.

"Go!"

Ding, ding, ding....

The sword images became more powerful. Yet, Iron Bull did not back down. Instead, it was the sword images which seemed to wobble.

"Go!"

Bi Shengtian shouted once again. Sweat began to appear on his forehead. Actually, he could choose to retreat. With the sword manipulation technique that his esteemed master taught him, Iron Bull and Bian Tianrui could not catch up if he chose to flee.

However, he was proud!

Arrogantly proud!

“Iron Bull, if you’re finished playing around, then hurry up and capture him. That brat is the leading figure of the sacred land of the Immortal Region. He is extremely useful for our plan,” Bian Tianrui spoke softly.

Iron Bull chuckled, “The sword immortals from our place are all too powerful. I finally met a young sword immortal, so I couldn’t help but bully him a bit. But since Young Master has said to, then I’ll stop playing with him!”

Playing?

He actually said that he was playing with me!?

Bi Shengtian was outraged. He pointed two of his right fingers upwards, causing the sword to soar into the sky.

...

Rumble.

Third Fatty Jin and Ye Zichen, who were in the courtyard of the manor, looked up in confusion.

“It was a sunny day, why did the weather change?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

Third Fatty Jin exclaimed with a frown, “Crap, my Senior Brother is in trouble.”

“Huh?” Ye Zichen replied.

“My Senior Brother is in trouble. This is the profound art he spent ten years learning. He wouldn’t use it under normal circumstances because using it would cost him ten-odd years of cultivation. Since he used it, it means that he’s definitely facing some sort of tricky opponent,” Third Fatty Jin paced around anxiously, then set his gaze upon Ye Zichen. “Boss Ye, I apologize to you on my Senior Brother’s behalf. Can you...”

Yet, before he finished, Ye Zichen already called out loudly in the courtyard, “Yang Jian, Jail King, Auntie Zhuge, Old Wei...”

Whoosh.

The experts appeared together, and looked up towards the sky.

“Sundering Thunder, a sword immortal’s profound art!” Wei Chen frowned.

Ye Zichen spoke up, “That brat, Bi Shengtian, is in trouble. Let’s go over and take a look.”

“That grandson...” Yang Jian shook his head. “I’m not going. Everyone else can go. His life or death has shit to do with me. Why should I ignore my dignity to go and save him?”

“Stop bullshitting. Saving him is more important!” With that, Ye Zichen rushed towards where the thunder and lightning was.

Yang Jian could only put on a helpless expression.

Wei Chen raised his eyebrows with a smile, “C’mon, let’s go over to take a look. Being able to witness a sword immortal’s profound art is a lucky thing!”

...

Rumble.

Dark clouds covered the sky.

Bolts of lightning arced down, and were absorbed into the sword, causing the sword itself to sparkle with lightning.

“Profound Art – Sundering Thunder!” Bi Shengtian grabbed his sword.

A white ball of lightning appeared on the tip of his sword.

“He’s still a bit worse than the sword immortals from our place,” Iron Bull twitched his mouth.

Bian Tianrui looked up with a nod, “It’s not just a bit, okay? Alright, hurry up and capture him. I’m tired!”

“Alright!” Iron Bull smiled, then ran over.

“Explode!” Bi Shengtian sent the lightning ball flowing towards Iron Bull.

However, the following scene only turn into one that was scorched into his memories for life.

Iron Bull opened his mouth until it was several meters wide, allowing the lightning ball to land in his mouth. Not long later, he patted his stomach and burped, while a slither of smoke escaped from his mouth.

“Haha, the lightning isn’t pure enough. Brat, your skills as a sword immortal still need more training!” With that, Iron Bull shook his head helplessly. “But before that, you have to come with us!”

# Chapter 563 – Great Emperor Qingming Appears

---

Faint traces of ash filled the surroundings.

When Ye Zichen and co. arrived on the scene, they could not see anyone there, but the surrounding traces screamed out to them that a huge fight had occurred.

“We’re too late,” Ye Zichen surveyed the surroundings, then raised his eyebrows. “The person who attacked was an expert. The suppression of spiritual energy is dense around here.”

“Crap,” Third Fatty Jin slapped his head. “When we came over, Master had told me never let Eldest Senior Brother be alone. It seems like he already foretold that something like this would occur with Eldest Senior Brother. What should I do now? What am I supposed to tell Master!?”

Zoom.

A space-shattering sound rang out. Yang Jian raised his eyebrows, then subconsciously shoved Ye Zichen behind him.

Not long later, a middle-aged man appeared in front of the group.

“Esteemed Master,” Third Fatty Jin smiled wryly when he saw the person, then quickly went up with his head lowered. “Esteemed Master, punish me. I didn’t keep an eye on Eldest Senior Brother properly...”

“I’m still too late,” Great Emperor Qingming shook his head with a sigh, then patted Third Fatty Jin on his shoulders. “It doesn’t have anything to do with you. This was fated to happen.”

With that, he nodded towards Yang Jian and co, then walked in front of Ye Zichen with a smile. “You came.”

Ye Zichen naturally understood that Great Emperor Qingming was referring to how he had arrived in the Three Realms, so he

nodded. “I already have been here for several months. Don’t act like you just found out. The information gathering abilities of the Immortal Region can’t be that terrible.”

“Haha...” Great Emperor Qingming chuckled.

Third Fatty Jin asked, “Esteemed Master, do we need to save Eldest Senior Brother?”

“No need,” Great Emperor Qingming shook his head. “Letting him experience some trouble is good. The path in the future belongs to you all, I can’t always be there to pave the way for you. Since I didn’t make it in time, then it must be fate.”

“Then...”

“No need to say anymore,” Great Emperor Qingming stopped Third Fatty Jin, then turned to Ye Zichen. “After Mount Supreme, come to the Immortal region when you have time. The Three Sovereigns want to see you.”

As Great Emperor Qingming floated away, Jail King raised his eyebrows, “Which one of the Immortal Region’s Three Suzerain was that?”

“Great Emperor Qingming,” Ye Zichen replied with some annoyance.

Seriously, these guys from the Immortal Region. No matter what, I am the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor. They need me to breakthrough to the Immortal King level, but look at their attitude. They don’t give a rat’s ass about me at all. They even told me to come over to the Immortal Region after Mount Supreme.

Ugh, shouldn’t they be coming over to invite me?

“Esteemed Master left, but what about my Senior Brother!?” Third Fatty Jin paced around worriedly.

Jail King wanted beside him, and raised his eyebrows meaningfully, “Your master said not to care about him anymore,

so why are you so worried? What's more, that brat is so arrogant, he needs to suffer some setback.”

“Yeah, it's like he's flying above the rest of us. Isn't he amazing? Then let him escape by himself,” Yang Jian twitched his mouth and snorted.

All of the powerhouses only came over due to giving Ye Zichen's face, otherwise, they really could care less about the brat's situation.

“Great gods, don't be like that. That's my Senior Brother, he's actually quite nice to me,” Third Fatty Jin smiled wryly.

“And what does that have to do with us?” Yang Jian twitched his mouth.

Third Fatty Jin frowned even more.

Ye Zichen sighed, “Alright, stop arguing.

“Boss Ye,” Third Fatty Jin looked towards Ye Zichen pitifully. He knew that as long as Ye Zichen spoke up, the great deities following him would definitely help.

“Don't get so worked up,” Ye Zichen looked towards Third Fatty Jin. “We don't know who took your Senior Brother away yet. Let's go back first. We'll discuss his rescue once we get news of him.”

“Then... Alright!” Third Fatty Jin understood that what Ye Zichen make sense. Him getting anxious was not going to help with anything.

...

Back in the manor, Zuo Mo's face was covered in a worried expression as she waited at the entrance alongside Ruan Qingtian.

When they saw Ye Zichen return safely, Zuo Mo rolled her eyes at him, then left.

When Wei Chen and co. returned to their own rooms, Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, “How did I piss her off this time?”

“She’s a woman, it’s normal for her to throw a tantrum,” Ruan Qingtian raised his eyebrows. “You left with such a huge party just now, who did you fight? That commotion just now did not look like the appearance of Mount Supreme.”

“Bi Shengtian got into a fight with someone. When we got over there, they were already gone. He was probably captured, but him running away is not out of the question,” Ye Zichen answered as he walked into the courtyard alongside Ruan Qingtian.

Ruan Qingtian replied as they walked, “We have to be more careful in coming times. Most of the keys to activate Mount Supreme is already in our hands. Although we aren’t weak, it doesn’t mean that we can continuously protect these keys. Also, I saw the people from the Fire Cloud Gate come over earlier. I’m just unsure of where they went.”

Speaking of the key.

We got the four from the sacred beasts. Ruan Qingtian and I have one each, adding those onto the two we got from Bian Tianrui and the one from Third Fatty Jin...

There’s only twelve keys in total, and we already have nine.

That’s three quarters of the total number of keys.

As for the Fire Cloud Gate, Ye Zichen didn’t really care. It was impossible for them to become allies anyways, since they would definitely become enemies if they met.

“Ai, speaking of which. I don’t think many of the Six Pavilion and Three Gates here for Mount Supreme?”

The seals of Mount Biluo have already been broken for nearly a month, but they had only seen people from the Azure Sky Pavilion and the Fire Cloud Gate.

“They definitely will come here, it is just a matter of time. You will naturally see those people when Mount Supreme finally appears,” Ruan Qingtian smiled, and replied with certainty.

I suppose he's right. Mount Supreme is able to catch the attention of even the Heavenly Court. It really wouldn't make sense of these peak forces don't come here.

"They'll all come," Ruan Qingtian patted Ye Zichen's shoulders, then indicated to the side before leaving with a shrug.

Ye Zichen looked up and saw Xia Keke sitting in the pavilion at the center of the courtyard with a pout as she held her phone. Ye Zichen walked over with a smile, "What happened? Who made our cutie unhappy?"

"It's Susu," Xia Keke wrinkled her nose and complained. "I have no idea what happened. She isn't replying my messages. When I went over to play, her older sister told me that she was in closed cultivation, and just now... Look. I just sent a message to her, and it's clear that she deleted me."

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and took Xia Keke's pink phone in his hands.

The entire screen was filled with her messages to Su Yan, but the most recent one...

Xia Keke really did get deleted.

This makes no sense. It's impossible for Su Yan to have deleted Xia Keke with how their relationship is.

There is definitely more to it!

# Chapter 564 – Su Yan the Runaway

---

At the Fox Yao clan...

Su Liu'er held Su Yan's phone in her hand. It was her who had chosen to delete the annoying dragon from Su Yan's friend list.

"Sis, no matter what, that is still lil' sis' personal belonging. What you just did wasn't really right," Su Zhu couldn't help but raise her eyebrows when she saw it happen.

Su Liu'er merely snorted indifferently as she chucked the phone onto her bedside table, "It keeps on beeping, and is destroying my peace!"

"Then return the phone to her. She has been a good girl recently, and hasn't caused any trouble," Su Zhu spoke on Su Yan's behalf.

Su Liu'er merely snorted, "That's what she shouldn't do. What she needs to do right now is calm herself down, and accept her past memories. Look at just how long she has returned! Her strength isn't increasing at all!"

"Liu'er-jie, you're in too much of a hurry. Lil' Sis's current life doesn't belong to our realm. You need to give her some time to accept it all!" Su Zhu smiled.

Yet, at that very moment...

"Mistress, Second Mistress, something bad has happened..." A servant called out...

Su Liu'er and Su Zhu quickly went over to Su Yan's room. When they entered, they saw that there was a hole with half a meter radius in the corner.

"When I came to bring the medicinal bath for young lady, I noticed that she disappeared. I looked around the room, then found this hole," the attendant bit her lips and said.

Su Liu'er snorted her eyes and snorted, "Second sis, this is the

good girl you were talking about. This is the not messing around you mentioned. Just look at what she did. All she does is mess around! She was like this ten thousand years ago, and is still like that right now!”

However, Su Zhu’s expression had already changed from a smile to a sullen one.

“There’s the scent of outsiders! Lil’ sis might have been tricked by someone. It isn’t time to discuss about how she acts, hurry up and lockdown the entire fox mountain. We have to find her!”

Zz...

A wave of spiritual energy radiated out with Su Liu’er as the center, and locked down the entire mountain.

“You want to take lil’ sis away from me in front of my eyes? You really are daring!”

...

“She deleted me as well,” Ye Zichen looked at the notification on his phone in confusion. He merely wanted to test and see if Su Yan deleted him.

“What happened to Su Yan?” Xia Keke muttered.

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, then returned the phone to his pocket and twitched his lips. “It’s impossible for Su Yan to have deleted us. I suppose, it was most likely done by her big sis.”

“Big Sister Liu’er?”

“Yeah, her,” Ye Zichen nodded. “It’s very possible that she confiscated Su Yan’s phone!”

“But what did she take Susu’s phone for?” Xia Keke blinked.

“Perhaps it’s for talking to Yuan Hong,” Ye Zichen said evilly. “Perhaps Yuan Hong told his big bro to buy him a phone, and since that spinster Su Liu’er was desperate to get married, she took her little sister’s phone to chat with her lover. Don’t worry, Su Yan is

definitely safe with the fox yaos. Let's go over there and take a look after Mount Supreme comes."

"Then okay. I suppose you are right, Susu wouldn't be in any danger with the fox yaos," Xia Keke giggled, and nodded. Then, she returned her phone to her pocket. Just as she was about to leave, she stopped for a moment upon noticing the bone Ring on Ye Zichen's finger, then skipped away without saying anything.

"She should be fine," Ye Zichen couldn't help but sigh as he took out his phone to look at the notification once again. Su Liu'er is with the fox yaos. Although that woman's kinda cold, her strength is absolute.

What's more, Su Yan is her little sister, she'll definitely protect Su Yan.

"Alright, I'll wait till Mount Supreme is over with. Then, I'll definitely go over to the fox mountain."

...

Late at night.

While everyone was about to rest, Bi Shengtian walked in from the outside covered in wounds.

"Senior Brother," Third Fatty Jin was the first to go over. However, before he could reach Bi Shengtian, the latter already collapsed on the floor. Yet, he still clung onto the sword in his hands. "Senior Brother!"

...

In the bedroom, Bi Shengtian laid on a bed with his eyes closed. Yang Jian used his celestial spiritual energy to check over his body once before lifting his hand.

"Great Deity, how is my senior brother?"

"They'll all external injuries. His spiritual energy is in a bit of a mess internally. I helped him smooth it out, so he should wake up

pretty soon,” With that, Yang Jian couldn’t help but twitched his mouth. “I really am too damn kind. How nice could it be if this grandson died. Why did I save him?”

Third Fatty Jin directly filtered out Yang Jian’s later words, and merely repeatedly thanked him.

Yang Jian waved his hand, and left the room, only to find Ye Zichen look at him with a cigarette in his mouth right outside the room itself.

“How is he?”

“I didn’t notice the presence of any types of spiritual energy. It seems like he escaped,” Yang Jian received the cigarette Ye Zichen passed over and lit it for himself.

“That’s good, but I’ve been having a really bad feeling that something’s going to happen,” Ye Zichen frowned.

“Just be a bit more vigilant. But haven’t we been having someone on a security shift all the time, nothing should...”

Boom.

A huge explosion occurred in the place opposite the manor before Yang Jian finished.

The two of them looked over, and saw the Snow Rabbit Clan’s land go up in flames. Dense smoke rose up. It was just like when they had first arrived.

...

“Mom!”

“Don’t be scared,” Xue Lian hugged her children tightly in her arms, and placed a seal on the room with a frown. “Stay here properly and don’t run around, okay?”

“Mhmm!” The children nodded repeatedly.

Xue Lian grabbed her jacket and pushed open the door...

Ugh.

A huge hand grabbed her by the neck and lifted her up. The moment the two children saw that, they immediately ran over and hit the person on his legs.

“Let go of my mom. Bad guy, let my mom go!”

“Didn’t I... say, Not. To. Come. Out!?” Xue Lian looked down at her children painfully.

The man grabbing her by the neck smirked, then kicked the children aside, then flew over to the entrance of Ye Zichen’s manor.

“The people in there, listen up. If you want to save this woman’s life, then use your keys to exchange for it. My patience is limited. You have five minutes... If I don’t see you all in five minutes, then this woman is dead. Heh, no matter what, she has taken care of you all for so long. You can’t be this merciless!”

“Iron Bull!” Ye Zichen and Yang Jian, who were about to rush out, stopped. It was clearly Iron Bull’s voice.

“F\*ck, so despicable!” Ye Zichen looked ahead with a dark look. Iron Bull grabbed Xue Lian by her neck tightly, while the Snow Rabbit Tribesmen occasionally let out terrible screams.

“Two and a half minutes left!” Iron Bull reported the time like a ticking clock.

Ye Zichen clenched his teeth, then made up his mind, “Yang Jian, go and contact the others. Tell them... to give me their keys!”

## Chapter 565 – Back Up

---

“It seems like they are planning to discard you!” Iron Bull grabbed Xue Lian by her neck and mocked her with disdain. “Look, so what if you were nice to them? You’re nothing compared to Mount Supreme’s key.”

Ugh...

Xue Lian grabbed Iron Bull’s arm tightly, and repeatedly kicked him. Everyone had a will to live, and she was no exception, especially because she had two children.

She looked towards the manor. She understood very well that the keys must be extremely important.

But I want to live...

“So you are really going to discard her. What a pity. She’s just going to die like this for you,” Iron Bull laughed maniacally, then tightened his grip...

“Stop!” Ye Zichen walked out with Yang Jian and co., as he held a small pouch in his hand.

Xue Lian’s eyes immediately lit up when she saw that.

Iron Bull also snorted, “Haha, I really didn’t expect you to come out. But don’t think about grabbing her from me. You guys do have more people but I only need to move my finger in order to kill her.”

“Put her down. You want the keys, right? We brought them over,” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes.

Iron Bull laughed, “Don’t treat Old Bull as an idiot. Do you think I’ll believe you just like that?”

“Yang Jian,” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

Not long later, Yang Jian walked over with nine shiny keys in his hands, which he placed into the pouch, “The keys are here. We’ll

do the exchange simultaneously.”

“Toss the keys over, and we’ll let her go,” with that, Iron Bull put Xue Lian down, but still maintained a firm grip on her shoulder.

“Here you go.”

Yang Jian threw the pouch into midair...

Dong.

Another huge commotion sounded out. Iron Bull immediately turned back, then saw a spiritual formation appear above the Snow Rabbit Clan’s village.

Zoom.

Several tens of figures were kicked out. At the same time, a black-robed man appeared above the Snow Rabbit Clan’s village, and made an “ok” sign towards Ye Zichen.

It’s that black robed man again.

Ye Zichen frowned, but he did feel like the person was helping them.

“Go!”

Bang.

Yang Jian punched Iron Bull, causing the latter to skid backwards, then reached towards the pouch in the air. Ye Zichen also used this chance to grab Xue Lian.

“You alright?”

“Thank you sire!” Xue Lian thanked Ye Zichen as she covered her neck.

At the same time, Bian Tianrui also roared, “Don’t care about it so much. Grab the keys!”

“You actually dared to use tricks!?” Iron Bull glared with a cold snort. His right arm also suddenly turned thick, as he turned to fight with Yang Jian.

“Bro, catch!” Yang Jian chucked the pouch of keys towards Ye Zichen.

Then, Jail King and co. also charged towards Iron Bull. “Grandson, I didn’t beat you until I’m happy yet. You actually dared to come!”

“Heh,” Iron Bull merely twitched his mouth with disdain. “Do you think you guys are the only one with numbers? We came prepared this time as well.”

“Fire Snake Dance!” A loud roar sounded out from the sky, then, a few snakes made of flames hissed as they slid across the ground.

“It’s Fire Cloud Gate,” Ruan Qingtian smirked. “I didn’t expect them to go to that side.”

“That’s way too normal,” Ye Zichen smiled.

A red-robed man suddenly appeared in front of him.

“Hey, old dog,” Ruan Qingtian. “So Fire Cloud Gate actually sent you over. What? Does Fire Cloud Gate have no more people?”

“Ruan Qingtian, don’t get so cocky,” the red-robed man smiled sinisterly, then looked towards Ye Zichen. “It’s you right? You’re that brat on the Fire Cloud Gate’s blacklist – Ye Zichen.”

“Oh? My name’s on a list? I’m so honored,” Ye Zichen laughed meaningfully. Then, when he saw where the person was looking, he shook the pouch. “You want them?”

“I’m not foolish enough to use spiritual energy recklessly before Mount Supreme appears. I can deal with you after we after,” the red-robed man said with disdain.

“You don’t even have a key, and you want to enter?” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth.

“Haha,” the red-robed man merely maintained his look of disdain.

At the same time, Bian Tianrui also walked over, “Brother Tian,

why bullshit so much with them? Just snatch it from them directly.”

“I said it already, I won’t waste any spiritual energy before entering Mount Supreme,” the red-robed man shook his head. “What’s more, don’t you still have backup?”

“I don’t want to use it this early!” Bian Tianrui revealed a troubled expression.

“It’ll be difficult if you want to snatch the keys over,” the red robed man smiled. “We, the Fire Cloud Gate, already have a key, and the fire snake was already my duty. It’ll be up to you to see whether you can get a key.”

With that, the red-robed man turned around and departed. Bian Tianrui’s expression instantly darkened as he squinted his eyes with a chuckle, “So everyone in the Lower Three Realms are so cocky.”

“It’s not that we’re cocky. It’s just that you’re too weak,” Ruan Qingtian twitched his mouth. “See? Even old dog dares to bully you. Say, just what can you do? Hurry up and go back to the Upper Three Realms, this place is unsuitable for you.”

...

Bang.

Iron Bull also fell onto the ground with Jail King’s punch.

In the end, he still lost while being outnumbered.

“Bian Tianrui, what more do you have to say? Even your allies don’t want to help you. You want to deal with us just by yourself...” Ye Zichen shook his head. “What are you going to pay for your life this time?”

“I feel like you should give me the keys,” Bian Tianrui shook his head and smiled.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, “Are you being delusional?”

“Just look behind yourself to see whether I’m being delusional,” Bian Tianrui smiled.

Ye Zichen turned around...

Bang.

Ye Zichen grabbed Bian Tianrui by his collar, and roared darkly, “Bian Tianrui, do you have no limits!?”

“Young Lady!”

“Young Master!”

“Zuo Mo!”

“Kongming!”

The expressions of Ruan Qingtian, who was on the ground; the dragon elder, who was in the sky; Jail King; as well as Zhuge Hong all changed drastically.

Iron Bull took this chance to leap up into the air, and punch all three of the ones fighting him.

“Shouldn’t you let me go now? That brat is very obedient right now. Do you want something to happen to them?”

Heh.

Ye Zichen pushed him onto the ground, then saw Bian Tianrui hold his sword in his hands, while Zuo Mo and co. walked in front of him. What’s more, he still kept another sword on their necks.

“Bi Shengtian!” Ye Zichen clenched his fist tightly.

Bi Shengtian subconsciously avoided his gaze, and went over to Bian Tianrui, “I’ve done as you asked. Give me the cure!”

## Chapter 566 – Mount Supreme Appears

---

Bi Shengtian's gaze was completely dark, while Xia Keke, Zuo Mo and co. all looked innocently towards Ye Zichen.

"Zichen-ge, look at this guy, what's he doing?" Zhuge Kongming said in confusion, as if he didn't yet realize he was being held hostage.

"Don't be an idiot okay? We're being held hostage," Lil' White frowned. "Look, this brat wants to use us to exchange for a cure for something."

All four people who were held hostage chatted amongst themselves, and did not show any of the expected nervousness of being held hostage.

They understood very well that Ye Zichen would definitely save them.

"Brother Bi, look at those people you captured. They aren't taking you seriously at all!" Bian Tianrui smiled.

Bi Shengtian frowned, "I brought them here. Give me the cure."

"Who knows if you'll turn on me as soon as I give you the cure!" Bian Tianrui replied.

"Stop challenging my bottom line," Bi Shengtian drew his sword and pointed it at Bian Tianrui's neck. "Give me the cure!"

"Put down your sword if you still want the cure," Bian Tianrui's expression darkened.

At that very moment, the dragon elder, Jail King, Yang Jian and the rest all hurried over.

Bi Shengtian immediately moved closer to Zuo Mo and co. with a frown, "Don't come over here. If you even take one more step forward, then I'll kill them all!"

"I told you guys this grandson would be trouble, but you insisted

on saving him!” Jail King roared angrily. “Ye Zichen, I don’t care what you do, but if anything happens to Young Master, then I’ll hold you accountable!”

“They want the keys, so give them the keys. You mustn’t let them harm Young Lady,” said the dragon elder.

“No!” Bi Shengtian roared out. “If you give him the keys, then what about my cure! Give me the cure! I don’t care what sort of deals you two strike, but I want my cure!”

“Grandson, you...” Jail King tried to take a step forward.

Bi Shengtian’s eyes immediately turned a bit redder, and moved his swords closer towards Lil’ White and co.’s necks.

As blood flowed down their necks, Bi Shengtian said with bloodshot eyes, “Don’t force me!”

“Senior Brother!” Third Fatty Jin hurried over with a large bruise on his head. From the looks of it, Bi Shengtian had hit him, causing him to fall unconscious before taking Lil’ White and co. hostage.

“Senior Brother, what are you doing!?”

“I want my cure!” Bi Shengtian disregarded everything and roared.

Yet Bian Tianrui merely maintained a calm smile, and did not show any intention of giving out the requested cure.

“Get me the cure, if you don’t get it for me, then I’ll make them die with me!” Bi Shengtian shouted towards Ye Zichen and co. with bloodshot eyes. Also Jail King and the rest were unwilling to be ordered around by him, they still took a step forward for their young master and young ladies.

“Hmph, don’t think about doing anything to my Young Master,” Iron Bull also stepped forward.

All of a sudden, the atmosphere became unusually tense.

“Everybody, calm down,” Ye Zichen let out a sigh, then lifted the pouch with the keys. “The keys are over here with me. Bi Shengtian has the people I want to save, Bian Tianrui has the cure he wants. Then, I’ll give the keys to Bi Shengtian, then you guys exchange...”

“No!” Ruan Qingtian shook his head. “Are you sure that the two of them are not working together and putting on a show? What do we do when we have neither the keys nor the people?”

“Then I’ll exchange with Bian Tianrui...” Ye Zichen reached the key pouch over as he spoke, then opened the palm of his other hand. “Give me the cure.”

“Here is the cure,” Bian Tianrui took out a jade vial, then opened up his other palm as well. “Put the keys over here, then I’ll give it to you...”

Buzz.

The keys in the key pouch all started moving. All of a sudden, the ground trembled...

A opening was torn in the sky. Rainbowed colored lights poured down, and a mountain slowly descended amidst the holy lights...

“Mount Supreme!” Bian Tianrui’s eyes lit up.

Bi Shengtian immediately snatched the vial in his hands over as Bian Tianrui was caught off guard, then pushed Zuo Mo and co. towards Ye Zichen.

“Keys!” Bian Tianrui didn’t care about Bi Shengtian anymore. What he needed right then was the keys to enter Mount Supreme.

He immediately reached over and grabbed for the pouch in Ye Zichen’s hands. At the same time, Ye Zichen also reacted, and yanked the pouch backwards.

Rip.

The pouch was unable to withstand the pulling, and was torn

apart, causing the numerous keys to fly into the air.

“Iron Bull!”

“Yang Jian!”

Ye Zichen and Bian Tianrui both shouted towards their strongest fighting force at the same time.

Grab the keys!

“F\*ck off!” Yang Jian kicked Iron Bull on the shoulders, while the others also reached towards the keys in the air.

“Heh,” Iron Bull disregarded the attack. He merely forcefully grabbed three keys, then landed on the floor and disappeared with Bian Tianrui.

Yang Jian and co. also quickly put the keys in the air away. Yet, at that very moment, a single key struggled out of Jail King’s hand and flew towards the north.

“Don’t bother chasing. That’s the key of the chosen one. It seems like... The Chosen One has entered the mountain,” Wei Chen stopped Jail King from chasing flying key.

Jail King could only shake his hand bitterly, then went over to Lil’ White’s side, “Young Master, are you alright?”

“How could I not be?” Lil’ White shrugged indifferently. “Was what landed just now Mount Supreme? It landed really slowly.”

“Indeed, let’s head back. We’ll just go over when Mount Supreme activates properly. But we definitely can’t lose anymore keys during this period of time!” Ruan Qingtian said. “We also need to keep a watch of the area around Mount Supreme to see if we can find the Chosen One.”

“You guys head on back, I have other matters to take care of,” with that, Ye Zichen hurried over to where the Snow Rabbit Clan was. He had to find out just who exactly the black-robed person was, and why he was helping him.

...

“Hey, stop!” When Ye Zichen got over there, the black-robed man had already gotten ready to leave.

When he heard Ye Zichen, he stopped, then asked with a hoarse voice, “What is it?”

“Who exactly are you?” Ye Zichen frowned, then stared intently at the person’s face.

However, the person’s hood covered their face completely, so Ye Zichen wasn’t able to see a thing.

“It doesn’t matter who I am. We met by chance, I merely felt like it was destiny for us to meet, so I wanted to help you. That’s all there is to it!” The black-robed man replied in the coarse voice once again.

Yet, Ye Zichen did not believe his words...

Since he knows about Dragon Ball, he’s definitely someone from the Modern Realm.

“Who exactly are you? Are you Ol’ Three?”

The black-robed man’s body stiffened when he heard that.

“I don’t know what you’re talking about. Alright, Mount Supreme will land three days later. Here is the internal map of Mount Supreme. Good luck.”

He took out a piece of beast skin and threw it towards Ye Zichen, before leaping up and disappearing into the darkness of the night.

## Chapter 567 – Just try and hit me!

---

Although the number of keys had been separated by both sides, the number remaining did not affect whether the important members of Ye Zichen's side could enter Mount Supreme or not.

At that moment, all of them sat in front of a square table, where the beast-skin map was spread out.

"You're sure this is a map of Mount Supreme?" Wei Chen sat opposite Ye Zichen, and looked over the map several times, before scratching his chin with a frown. "To be honest, I haven't yet comprehended it."

"Me neither," Ye Zichen replied, then glanced on a fire symbol on the map.

"Who cares whether we can understand it or not, but having this map is definitely useful for us. I think we'll get the purpose of this map when we enter after Mount Supreme lands," Wei Chen pushed the map back towards Ye Zichen's side with a smile, then raised his eyebrows. "But where did you get the map? How are you so certain that it is Mount Supreme?"

"That's none of your business," Ye Zichen didn't want to tell anyone about the black-robed man. Although he still doesn't know who the black-robed person was, there was this feeling in the back of his mind telling him that the black-robed man would not screw him over.

Is he Ol' Three? Ye Zichen sighed silently, then picked the map back up, and returned to his room to lie down.

...

It took three days for Mount Supreme to finally land.

During the three days, the brilliant radiance from the sky illuminated the mountain. There was no difference between night and day on Mount Biluo at all. The half beastmen living on Mount

Biluo all looked up, to see the mountain descending in a shower of holy light.

...

“What business do the three Yao Emperors have to do with this sire?” A man in a daoist robe said to the two men and a woman with their backs towards him on a steep cliff. They were the three yao emperors who have protected Mount Biluo for tens of thousands of years, and were the strongest of existences.

“We just want to ask sir whether we should fight for Mount Supreme or not,” One of the muscular men turned around. His eyes were rather like that of a cat’s, and there were several long whiskers at the side of his mouth.

“That would depend on what you want, but you require a key to enter Mount Supreme. If you have any, then let the youngsters go, what use is asking me?” the daoist-robed man responded with a smile.

“You are very capable are fortune-telling, so we want to ask you to help us see... Whether us half-beastmen have a chance at turning the tables,” the woman then turned around with a smile.

“No,” the daoist-robed man replied with certainty. “I have foretold the landing place of Mount Supreme, and had intentionally sealed Mount Biluo. However, the fact that the formation was broken meant that such is fate. You half-beastmen are not the ones fated for Mount Supreme.”

“Then sir, what should we do?” the black-robed man standing in the middle of the man and woman turned around and asked sincerely.

The daoist-robed man raised his eyes and smiled, “Find a person called Ye Zichen. Whether you kill him or befriend him is up to you!”

...

On the path outside Mount Supreme's seal...

"If nothing happens, then Mount Supreme will land here within two hours' time. The seals over here should open up as well," Ruan Qingtian's eyes were filled with a heated gaze. Although he wanted to hide the excitement in his heart, he still couldn't help but mention it.

"I can feel that the area around here became its own space, and I'm unable to use my spiritual energy," Wei Chen mentioned.

The moment he said so, Ye Zichen and co. all tried to muster up spiritual energy...

"Stop trying. The place around where Mount Supreme is landing will become its own zone. Perhaps Mount Supreme's owner did this to prevent people from fighting before Mount Supreme activates!" Ruan Qingtian smiled.

Jail King couldn't help but twitch his mouth, "Ha, but won't people still fight after it lands? What's more, it's not like we didn't fight when getting the keys!"

"We won't understand the thoughts of those great people!" Ruan Qingtian chuckled.

Boom.

A huge wave of spiritual energy spread out like a tsunami. Yang Jian stood at the very front and blocked off the entire wave, then pushed his hand forward.

"The seals have disappeared, let's enter."

They all begun to run towards Mount Supreme, and it took them around ten-odd minutes...

What stood at the end of the path was a medium-sized mountain with a stone door at the very front with twelve key-holes.

Those were most likely the places to enter the keys, and Mount Supreme would only activate properly after the keys are inserted.

“Ye Zichen!” Bian Tianrui clenched his teeth and shouted out when he saw Ye Zichen after walking out from the woods with a dark expression.

Enemies will always get angry when they see each other, so Ye Zichen wasn’t surprised about his tone at all.

“Why are you clenching your teeth and looking at me like that? What? Do you want to fight me here?” Ye Zichen laughed.

Zzz!

Footsteps sounded out in the woods, causing everyone to look over.

“Zuo Hongxin!” Zuo Mo frowned.

“Such disrespect, shouldn’t you call me Second Uncle right now?” Zuo Hongxin smirked, then waved towards her. “Come over where Second Uncle is. Young Master Mu is here as well. Aren’t the two of you engaged?”

“Mu Chengtian?” Zuo Mo squinted her eyes, then heard another round of footsteps coming from the woods.

Not long later, a handsome looking man with skin so white that it seemed sickly, walked out of the woods. When he saw Zuo Mo, a hint of redness returned to his look-looking face in his excitement.

“Mo’er!”

Ye Zichen, Ruan Qingtian and co. felt like puking when they heard the nickname.

Zuo Mo also glared at him with a snort, “Why did you come?”

“Our dad told me to. I didn’t expect to see you here,” Mu Chengtian walked over with a smile. Then, a sinister look flashed across his eyes when he saw Ye Zichen, who stood beside her. “Who is he?”

“Brother Mu, that brat is called Ye Zichen. He’s been very close to your fiancé recently!” Bian Tianrui chuckled.

Mu Chengtian frowned, “Ye Zichen, that sounds familiar.”

Not long later, he smiled, then twitched his mouth at Ruan Qingtian, “Isn’t Ye Zichen the one who wrecked havoc in the Azure Sky Pavilion? The woman breaking off the engagement caused the pavilion to turn into a joke. Ruan Qingtian, I didn’t expect you to be able to endure so much, and actually stayed with him.”

“Oh well,” Ruan Qingtian smile.

“Heh,” Mu Chengtian snorted in disdain, then looked towards Ye Zichen sinisterly. “You actually dared to become so close to my Mo’er. You really are daring.”

“Bastard,” Ye Zichen shook his head with a snort.

Mu Chengtian’s expression turned dark for a moment, before he smiled, “You’re just throwing out insults. Just try and hit me!”

Slap.

Bang.

Ye Zichen slapped, then roundhouse kicked Mu Chengtian onto the floor.

At the same time, Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, “Sure, I’ll try.”

## Chapter 568 – Yang Jian and the Great Sage’s Friendship was Exposed.

---

“Young Master,” Mu Chengtian’s lackey hurried over worriedly. “Young Master, are you alright? Are you hurt anywhere? Let me help you up, the ground is cold and dirty, your body...”

“Move aside, I can get up myself,” Mu Chengtian pushed his lackey away, then struggled to stand up several times, before finally reaching his hand out to the lackey.

Ye Zichen and co. were completely speechless. Just how weak is he to be unable to even stand up by himself?

Even Bian Tianrui looked at him as if he was looking at a monster, as he muttered silently to himself...

Is this ally actually okay!?

“Brat, you’ve got guts!” Mu Chengtian roared angrily and pointed towards Ye Zichen after he got up. Meanwhile, his lackey squatted behind him and tried to get the dirt off his clothes.

“Do you know who I really am? You actually dared to hit me! I can blow you over with a sneeze, and you...”

“Achoo,” At that moment, Jail King suddenly sneezed.

Mu Chengtian’s body wobbled a bit, then fell back to the ground.

“Young Master, what happened? Young Master!” The lackey squatted on the ground and sobbed.

Mu Chengtian glared at his lackey, “I’m not dead. Hurry up and pull me up!”

“Is this grandson made out of paper? How did you end up in an engagement with him?” Ye Zichen pointed incredulously at Mu Chengtian.

Zuo Mo glanced at Mu Chengtian and snorted, “It’s all thanks to

some people's intentions.”

With that, she looked towards Zuo Hongxin.

Zuo Hongxin smiled when he noticed her gaze, “My darling niece, why are you looking at second uncle like that? Your dad agreed with this wedding arrangement as well. Are you trying to say second uncle had a reason for setting that up? Regardless, this is a good marriage. After you get married to Young Master Mu, then the position of the Treasure Tower will only become more secure.”

“Then why didn't you tell your darling daughter to marry him?” Zuo Mo laughed. “What use is all this bullshit?”

It was clear that Zuo Mo was truly angry. Otherwise, she wouldn't have used any profanity.

I don't blame her. Even I feel like this brat is weird. Even a sneeze caused him to fall over! He's definitely made of paper!

Mu Chengtian stood up once again with his lackey's support.

“Achoo!”

Yang Jian also sneezed.

Mu Chengtian wobbled, but his lackey supported him in time, “Are you guys having fun messing with me!? You truly are daring!”

All of a sudden, a gust of wind blew pass. Mu Chengtian, who couldn't even withstand a sneeze, naturally could not stand still in the wind.

Within seconds, he fell onto the ground like a piece of paper blowing in the winds, then was pushed back quite a ways.

“Young Master, why did you run again?” Seeing that, the lackey immediately followed him with a sob.

This time, nobody retorted. They merely looked towards the sky.  
Whoosh.

Three figures descended from the sky, each with a young person beside them. However, what surprised them was that although the young man in the middle was of human form, the two girls carried beastmen-like features.

Ram clan.

Tiger clan.

The young man in human form had eyes as sinister and poisonous like that of a...

Snake clan.

From the looks of it, all of them were local half-beastmen. What's more, the three elders by their sides carried a suffocating aura amongst them.

What was worth noting was that Mount Supreme clearly had a barrier which suppressed spiritual energy around it.

Despite that, they still emitted a chilling pressure, which only went to note how strong they are.

“Yao Emperor!” Yang Jian yanked Ye Zichen aside.

The three elders looked towards Yang Jian, “War God!”

“So the three Yao Emperors came as well? Are you also interested in Mount Supreme?” Yang Jian smiled.

The only female amongst the Yao Emperors replied, “Didn't War God come as well? How could we not be interested in what even interests the Heavenly Court? But War God, there is no need to be so vigilant, we won't be able to enter.”

With that, she walked in front of Ye Zichen, “Key.”

“Are you asking me for a key?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

The woman nodded, “You have the most keys, and only Human Immortal leveled people or below can enter Mount Supreme. Having so many keys is a waste, so how about selling one to us?”

“Only Human Immortals and below can enter?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“Yes,” the muscular man nodded. “I see that you only need three keys, so sell us one please!”

His attitude is quite good. At least he didn’t come and try to snatch the key off us just because he’s strong.

Ye Zichen looked at the people around him, and saw Yang Jian nod towards him.

“I can’t be certain whether what you said is true. When Mount Supreme activates, if it is true that only Human Immortals and below can enter, then I can give you guys one. If not...”

“Then we’ll leave with our juniors,” the only women amongst the three Yao Emperors smiled. “War God and the Great Sage are always together. We don’t dare to fight both at the same time.”

Ye Zichen nodded. The three immediately took their juniors to a place not that far away from Ye Zichen.

“How did you get to know them?” Ye Zichen asked Yang Jian quietly.

“I fought them before, but I didn’t win or lose. The main thing was that monkey said he was tired halfway in the middle, so he went back to Mount Huaguo,” Yang Jian yammered in annoyance. “But the three of them are very strong. They can be counted amongst the strongest in the Three Realms.”

“Then are we really going to sell them a key later?”

“Sell it,” Yang Jian raised his eyebrows. “The three of them have been strong for a long time. Isn’t it better for you to use a key in exchange for some treasures? What’s more, they think the monkey’s here, so they’re very wary of us.”

“Haha. Oh yeah, they said that you and the monkey are always together. You really do get along!”

“Tsk, I’ll never be done with the monkey!”

As Yang Jian and Ye Zichen chatted with smiles, Bian Tianrui frowned. He could tell very clearly that the situation was becoming worse for him.

Zuo Hongxin said no more either. He was no fool, and could naturally tell that the situation favored Ye Zichen’s side more.

“Which grandson actually caused such a large wind, you nearly blew me apart...” Mu Chengtian walked over with his lackey, but before he could finish what he said...

“Hmmpf,” The female Yao Emperor snorted, causing Mu Chengtian to be blown away again.

“Young Master, why are you flying again?” the lackey chased after him with a sob once more.

At the same time, the female Yao Emperor also stood up and raised his eyebrows, “What are you guys waiting for? Why aren’t you opening the gate!?”

## Chapter 569 – Entering the Mountain

---

Actually Ye Zichen had wanted to ask the question already. They had stayed there for quite a while already, but nobody mentioned anything about opening the gate. However, since he didn't understand, he merely stay quiet.

“How are we supposed to open it when we don't have all the keys?” Jail King twitched his mouth. “When all twelve keys appear in front of the gate, it'll let out a red light, then the gate will open automatically.

“I see,” the female Yao Emperor nodded, not feeling ashamed for her ignorance at all. Normally speaking, people of their level cared a lot about their face, but her reaction merely showed that the Yao Emperors had a decent personality.

“I wonder who's so slow,” Bian Tianrui muttered.

At that moment, a white-robed man walked out of the woods with a spiritual monkey on his shoulders. “Everyone's here, so are you all waiting for me?”

“Bai Hai!” Two voices called out.

Ye Zichen and Bian Tianrui looked towards each other, and revealed mocking smiles.

Bian Tianrui immediately spoke up, “Brother Bai, we descended together, so we should get closer with each other.”

“But I'm not the same kind of person as you,” Bai Hai smiled, then walked in front of Ye Zichen and raised his eyebrows. “Brother Liangchen.”

“Liangchen!?” Bian Tianrui mocked. “Bai Hai, you don't even know his real name right? He's not called Liangchen. He's called Ye Zichen!”

“Hmm?” The three Yao Emperors all looked towards Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen!

They clearly remember what the sire told them. Either kill him or befriend him.

“Big bro, don’t act recklessly. We have no qualms with each other right now. At the very least, we got off to a good start. Sire said that we can befriend him, so let’s not do anything to him unless we absolutely have to,” the female yao emperor pulled on the muscular man’s arm and shook her head.

The man nodded, but maintained his gaze on Ye Zichen.

“Brother Zichen, so I did make you rather wary that day,” Bai Hai smiled, and completely disregarded what Bian Tianrui said. “But it looks like I’m not the last one. Someone’s later than me.”

“Let go of me. Ma Teng, why are you always around. I already came here, and you still captured me!” An angry roar sounded from the woods.

Soon, everyone saw that Ma Teng walked out of the woods with a captured Qiu Yuan in his hands, and obviously, what was binding Qiu Yuan was an Immortal Binding Rope.

Buzz.

At that moment, the keys in everybody’s hands suddenly released a blinding red light.

The lights shot towards the gate, and the twelve holes which corresponded to the twelve keys began to turn as well...

Boom.

As the dust from the mountain finally settled down, the gate slowly opened.

“The gate’s open, let’s go in!”

The moment the gate opened, a group of people suddenly appeared out of nowhere, and furiously rushed towards the gate.

Bang.

Yet, before they could reach the entrance, they were rebounded backwards.

“Keys, get the keys!” Someone shouted.

The people who were rebounded backwards immediately rushed towards Ye Zichen and the other key possessors.

“You’re seeking death!” Iron Bull opened his eyes wide and swung his fists, sending the people around him into the nearby trees.

Yang Jian and co. also did the same, and opened a path for Ye Zichen and the younger ones to reach the cave.

Bang.

Jail King, who was about to enter with Lil’ White, was suddenly rebounded. However, Lil’ White disappeared into the entrance.

“It’s true, only those of the Human immortal level and below can enter,” Jail King frowned.

At that moment, the three Yao Emperors also walked over, and said to Ye Zichen as they sent the people trying to snatch up the keys flying, “Now do you believe us?”

“Alright. I’ll sell a key to you,” Ye Zichen handed a key over to the Yao Emperors. The Yao Emperors immediately handed the key over to their three juniors, and told them to enter together.

“Brother Ye, let’s enter quickly. It’ll only become more disadvantageous for us the later we enter!” Ruan Qingtian said.

Ye Zichen nodded, then shouted towards Zuo Mo and co., “Come to my side!”

As Zuo Mo and co. raced over, Ye Zichen looked towards the three Yao Emperors, “Let’s discuss the deal when we return.”

“No problem, we’ll wait for you to come out here,” the female

yao emperor smiled.

Ye Zichen held up his keys, causing a barrier of light to appear and surround them, before they disappeared from the entrance.

“Young Master, you go in,” Iron Bull grabbed Bian Tianrui by his foot and tossed him towards the cave.

Bian Tianrui held a key tightly in his hand.

At that very moment, Mu Chengtian coincidentally walked out of the woods under the support of his lackey.

“Why are they still fighting...”

Bang.

Before Mu Chengtian could finish his sentence, Bian Tianrui smashed into his stomach. A barrier of light instantly appeared around the three, causing them to disappear together.

Cling.

The two extra keys fell down from the sky...

“Get them!”

The surrounding people all leaped towards the two keys.

Bai Hai shook his head with a smile as he disappeared into the cave, “What a group of pitiful people.”

At that moment, Earth Traveler Sun also shouted towards Ma Teng, “Hurry up and get in!”

“You hurry up and get in. Let me go!” Qiu Yuan kicked his legs.

Ma Teng snorted, “Brat, don’t think about running away. I still have to exchange you for money at the city lord’s manor when we come out.”

“Ahh...”

What they didn’t notice was that the moment the two of them entered, several other young men also entered with them.

As key holders entered Mount Supreme continuously, the two extra keys were still being fought over.

Whoosh.

A ghost-like figure suddenly appeared in the crowd, and snatched one of the keys, before disappearing into the cave.

As for the final key...

“What happened? Why can’t I move?”

Someone shouted angrily in the crowd.

At that very moment, a black-robed man appeared in front of the person momentarily holding the final key.

Just as the person was in completely shock was what was going on, the black-robed man yanked the key out of his hands, “Thanks.”

Then, when the black-robed man finally entered the cave, the surrounding people regained their freedom.

“My key! My key!”

The elder, whose key was snatched by the black-robed man, cried out. He had already been stuck at the complete stage of the Human Immortal level for too long, the end of his life was nigh. He had wanted to try his luck with Mount Supreme, but since his key was snatched away, he had already lost his chance.

“The candidates, and the Chosen One has already entered. Please leave!” An ancient voice sounded out in from the sky.

Soon after, a soft wind blew against the people around Mount Supreme. When they realized what was going on, they had already appeared outside of where the seals were.

“The person who left Mount Supreme behind was truly an expert. He actually managed to throw us out without us realizing it,” the three Yao Emperors couldn’t help but shake their heads and exclaim.

Yang Jian and co. also couldn't help but nod.

Meanwhile, the others who did not manage to get in either cried out in depression, or began to rage at the world...

Wei Chen shook his head, "Let's go back. It's all up to their luck now!"

Yet, at that very moment...

Boom.

A beautiful figure appeared in front of them like a comet. Her eyes fluttered as worry and anger filled her eyes. "Where is Ye Zichen!?"

## Chapter 570 – The Enraged Su Liu'er

---

“Ye Zichen!” The beautiful figure roared angrily like a madman, while she released her spiritual pressure around her continuously, causing all of those at the Human Immortal level or below to cough up a mouthful of blood.

“Who are you!?” Yang Jian stepped forward with a frown.

The woman in front of him was too terrifyingly strong. Even he felt an intense sense of danger.

The other people all looked towards the lady.

The lady squinted her eyes, and looked towards Yang Jian, “That’s none of your business. Now, where is Ye Zichen?”

“Master of the Fox Yaos,” the dragon elder took a step forward and raised his eyebrows. “I wonder what business do you have with little friend Ye?”

“Dragon, you seem to know where Ye Zichen is. Tell me, or else I will commence the slaughter!” The lady frowned at the dragon elder’s question.

Iron Bull twitched his mouth, “This girlie is rather bold. Slaughter? Who do you think you can handle here?”

“You’re too loud!” The woman sent a ray of cold air towards Iron Bull.

Within mere moments, Iron Bull, who Yang Jian and co. had trouble defeating as a group, was frozen into an ice sculpture.

The surrounding people couldn’t help but raise their eyebrows.

They could sense that the woman’s cold aura had nearly reached the level of an Immortal King.

“Speak!”

Boom.

Bone-chilling cold air filled the surroundings. Although it was not targeting anyone, everyone couldn't help but muster up spiritual energy to defend against it.

"Liu'er-jie," a charming voice called out from the air, and an armored man with a staff stood next to her.

"Yuan Hong," Yang Jian revealed a surprised expression.

The man also raised his eyebrows, "Big Brother Yang Jian."

"I have no time for your chitchat. Tell me... Where is Ye Zichen!?"

Boom.

Su Liu'er's face was covered in a cold expression as a thunderous noise sounded out in the air.

"Liu'er-jie."

"I'll ask one final time. Where. Is. Ye. Zichen!" Su Liu'er stared intently in front of her, while her dark pupils were slowly turning into a crystallized blue.

Yuan Hong couldn't help but gulp when he saw this. Then, he turned towards Yang Jian, "Big Brother Yang Jian, where exactly is Little Brother Ye? Hurry up and say it. If Liu'er gets angry, no one in the entire Beast Region dares to try and calm her down!"

"He already entered Mount Supreme," Yang Jian shrugged. "You guys were just a tad bit too late. If you were ten minutes earlier, he'd still be here."

"Damn it!"

Bang.

Su Liu'er stomped, causing a huge crack to appear on the ground.

Yuan Hong nudged Su Zhu on her shoulders and gave her a cue. Su Zhu nodded, and just when she wanted to approach her older sister...

“Move!” Su Liu’er roared angrily. Everyone in the surroundings subconsciously made way for her.

“Break!” Su Liu’er punched onto the seal. The powerful rebound effect caused her to cough up a mouthful of blood. Yet, she completely disregarded her injuries and rained punches onto the seal like a madman.

“Say, even if you continue like this until next year, you might not be able to open it,” Yang Jian couldn’t help but speak up. “This is a seal left by a supreme, you...”

“Shut up!” Su Liu’er wiped away the blood from the corner of her mouth, then charged towards the seal once again.

Dong.

This time, the rebound seemed even more powerful, causing Su Liu’er to stagger a bit before climbing back up.

“Sis, don’t you,” Su Zhu hugged her from behind.

However, Su Liu’er clenched her teeth, while blood dripped from the corner of her mouth to the ground, “I have to destroy this seal. I have to capture Ye Zichen.”

“But, we can’t break this seal!” Su Zhu smiled wryly.

“We have to break it even if we can’t. Or else, what’s are we going to do about lil’ sis!” Su Liu’er stared at the seal, then snorted. “I’m definitely going to shatter this seal!”

...

Whoosh.

After Ye Zichen entered the cave, he was directly teleported into a hall within what seemed to be a palace.

“It seems like everyone lands in different places,” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, then looked around.

From what he could see, the people who he entered with were

not around. He was the only person within the palace hall, and it was so quiet that when he walked around, he was able to hear the echo of his own footsteps.

“Welcome to this old man’s kingdom of games,” an ancient voice sounded out throughout the palace. Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. This is should be the who left Mount Supreme behind, but just what exactly does kingdom of games mean? “There are twenty-three participants each time. It’s slightly different to what this old man had envisioned, but is more interesting this way with odd numbers. Starting from right now, you have three days to form your teams. The method of that is very simple. Each one of you should have a jade pendant in front of where you are.”

Ye Zichen looked up, and saw that there was indeed a white jade pendant glowing not so far away.

Ye Zichen picked up the jade pendant. It was slightly cold, and the moment he touched it, he instantly felt like he was a lot calmer.

“So it actually has the effect of clearing the mind!” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. “But so many people entered. I actually expected less than fifteen.”

“This pendant shall be the item for you to form your teams. Find your teammates and exchange it. The person who has not found a teammate after three days will fail, and be killed! Okay now, I wish you all a good time. I will tell you the next step after three days.”

Killed!

What’s Mount Supreme trying to do!?

“The Niflheim Dragon loved all sorts of games before becoming a god. He even treated the Heaven’s Will and fate itself as games. It isn’t surprising for him to be able to do this,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang came out of the sword with a smile. “I just didn’t expect the rules of his game to be so extreme. The losers will actually be killed.”

“What’s he trying to do? Is he treating us like puppets?” Ye Zichen frowned. “He’s not treating our lives seriously at all.”

“At this level, he is already treating lives of other people like that of ants. He doesn’t care if a few people die in front of him. What’s more, cultivation is going against fate itself. The lives of every single successful person are piled with bones. If you die while testing your luck here... Then it can only mean that you weren’t lucky enough,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang smiled in response. It was clear that she didn’t feel like anything was wrong with the game.

“I still feel like it isn’t right.”

“Youngster,” Just as Ye Zichen held the white jade pendant in dissatisfaction, the voice transmission of an ancient voice sounded out in his mind. It was the person who gave the gaming instructions earlier.

“What happened?” Xuan-Yuan Xiang noticed the change in Ye Zichen’s expression.

Ye Zichen shook his head to signal her to be quiet, then replied in his mind, “You’re talking to me?”

“You’re very lucky to actually gain the map of this game, but you’re not the Chosen One. It really is a shame. In order to compensate you, you can choose right now. There are thirty of the best treasures in the God Realm in front of you.”

Whoosh.

An altar covered in divine items suddenly appeared in front of Ye Zichen.

“Choose one and quit, or participate in the game to try and gain the final treasure. Of course, if you choose the latter, then you will face the danger of death like all the other contestants. Now... What is your decision?”

## Chapter 571 – The Great Deity with a Disgusting Sense of Humor

---

“I can choose any of them? Ye Zichen replied calmly in his mind, then stepped forward to look.

Jade hairpin, jade pendant, dagger, short sword, long sword...

Every single one of the treasures glowed with a rainbow light. They did indeed look like treasures from their appearance.

“Of course, this is the reward for you for acquiring the map while you’re not the Chosen One,” the ancient voice chuckled in Ye Zichen’s mind.

At that very moment, Ye Zichen took a step backwards.

“Are you not interested in any of them? These are all top treasures of the God Realm. Any one of them would allow you to deal with Immortal Kings as a Human Immortal safely,” as the elder spoke, a green jade pendant flew over. “I got this jade pendant from an ancient mountain. It has surprising defensive abilities. Back when I fought the ten top experts of the Demon Realm, it was able to make me essentially invincible.

Then, a short sword glowing with a rainbow colored light flew over, “Siderite Sword. I gained this sword while I was journeying in the mortal realm. It was crafted by a top weapon refiner at the very beginning of the world using otherworldly metal. What I like about it is the sharpness and how delicate it is. What’s more, there are ten-odd attack spiritual formations on it as well. It is one of the rare offensive treasures.”

Whoosh.

The several tens of other treasures all flew over and spun around Ye Zichen, “These are all treasures I spent my life’s effort into getting. Every single one of them can make you shoot up to the top. That is so much stronger than taking the risk to join the game, but

you're actually not interested?"

Disaster is caused by what a person has.

That was a saying that Ye Zichen had listened to since a young age. Perhaps the great ice dragon was not lying to him, and these were real treasures, but so what?

If I choose an offensive treasure, then a complete stage Sky Immortal expert can just slap me to death.

If I choose a defensive treasure, if an expert of the Three Realms come to fight me, then I'll just hide like a turtle?

That's pointless.

"I don't want any of them," Ye Zichen shook his head and smiled.

The treasures in front of him instantly flew back to the altar, then several hundred cultivation manuals flew out. "These are top cultivation techniques of the God Realm. There are ones for every single attribute. Cultivating using any one of them could allow you to get to the Earth Supreme level, and even have a chance at reaching Sky Supreme."

"No," Ye Zichen shook his head. These manuals weren't even as alluring to him as the treasures.

He didn't possess any of the elemental affinities, so even if he chose one of these powerful techniques, he wouldn't be able to cultivate them.

"You don't want this, nor that, then what exactly do you want!?" The voice was clearly a bit annoyed, so it shouted in Ye Zichen's consciousness.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows when he noticed the person's attitude. Why is this guy forcing me to choose?

There's definitely something wrong with this all.

"I don't want any of it. I want to join in the game."

“Foolish. You can clearly gain these treasures easily, but you actually said you want to join in the game? Don’t you know that even if you pass the final test, these are still your choices?”

“But I still don’t want them,” Ye Zichen shook his head determinedly, then turned around.

Only then the voice in his sea of consciousness chuckled, “Haha, you are lucky. Take a look at what they really are...”

Hiss...

Ye Zichen turned around, and saw that the altar was filled with hissing snakes. This caused Ye Zichen to subconsciously take a step back.

“These are Lethal Snakes unique to the God Realm. If you even touched them once, then you would definitely die!”

Creak.

This guy!

Ye Zichen clenched his teeth tightly. He was actually trying to make me choose to do me harm!

“Lucky youngster, it’s pretty nice that you can refuse allure. But remember, your future path will not be easy. Hahaha...”

As the laughter in his sea of consciousness seemed to go further and further away, Ye Zichen looked forward with a dark expression.

At that very moment, a poisonous snake hissed at him, causing him to step backwards and clench his fist even tighter.

Mount Supreme.

Wow, Mount Supreme.

The guy’s final words told youngsters to come and seek their fortune, but his real purpose was actually to treat those people as his tools for entertainment.

“This is strange, although there are rumors of the ice dragon being playful, but I’ve never heard of him having such a disgusting sense of humor,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang frowned. Ye Zichen looked at the table of snakes with a dark expression, then raised the Xuan-Yuan Sword...

“What are you doing!? They might poison me!” However, she had spoken too late. Ye Zichen had already lifted her and sliced towards the snakes.

Slash.

Several ten poisonous snakes were cut in half, and fell to the ground.

At that moment, Ye Zichen also squinted his eyes and snorted, “Perhaps he became more perverse after he died.”

Considering that he was still in a game, and he needed to find a teammate, he immediately walked out the hall.

Mount Supreme is truly huge. Ye Zichen walked forward as he looked at the map in his hands.

He noticed that the map was very detailed as he walked towards the north. Yet, even walking for nearly half of the day, he noticed that he didn’t even make his way through a tenth of the map.

I wonder where they are and how they are doing!

Ye Zichen frowned. Mount Supreme was not as amazing as others thought. All of them who had entered were only players.

People had to pass through the levels in order to get that treasure.

I wonder how that you’re supposed to get that inheritance. Of course, Ye Zichen was definitely not going to take it. After all, he didn’t care much for the inheritance of such a perverse person.

What’s more, there was still issue of the Chosen One!

Ahh, I shall give a very short moment of silence for the Chosen

One.

He passed through a small path, and turned around to see an ancient tree. He could see someone there.

Ye Zichen slowly drew out his sword. Not everyone within Mount Supreme was on his side.

He was definitely not going to have mercy if he bumped into someone like Bian Tianrui.

Ye Zichen carefully walked towards the ancient tree. When he got closer, he saw that the person was actually tied to the tree, and from the looks of the person's tilted head, he looked to be unconscious.

What's going on? Did the guy meet a thief? Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, then walked a bit more forward...

Gou Yuzhan?

Why's this brat here? I didn't see him when I came into Mount Supreme!

Ye Zichen hurried ran forward, then shook Gou Yuzhan by his shoulders.

“Wake up!”

“Ouch.”

Gou Yuzhan raised his hand and rubbed the back of his head, then revealed a painful expression. After a long while, he returned to his senses, and looked towards Ye Zichen...

“Hurry up and untie me.”

So aggressive.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, but still used Xuan-Yuan Xiang to cut Gou Yuzhan loose.

“Why did you come over here?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“You're asking me?” Gou Yuzhan suddenly opened his eyes wide

and cursed. “You brought me here!”

# Chapter 572 – A Bit Older, and Been Through a Bit More

---

Ye Zichen couldn't help but hesitate when he saw Gou Yuzhan's angry look.

What did he just say?

I brought him over!?

Stop kidding me. I haven't even seen this ahoge ever since we parted ways in the Beast Region? How could I have brought him over here?

“You tricked me and told me that there's going to be good food after coming here. That's why I followed you so excitedly. When we got here, you smacked me unconscious. You're actually asking me how I got here? Are you trying to go back on your word!?” Gou Yuzhan's ahoge wobbled back and forth. His look of absolute certainty completely shocked Ye Zichen.

“You're sure?” Hearing his certain tone, Ye Zichen was starting to even doubt himself.

“Of course I'm sure,” Gou Yuzhan pointed at his own eyes. “I've carefully protected my eyes since a young age. I'm not far-sighted nor short-sighted, nor do I have astigmatism. I could clearly tell that the person who led me here was you.”

What the hell?

I'm sure that I've never went to find Gou Yuzhan, but where did the 'me' who went to find him come from? He actually knows Gou Yuzhan, and knows Gou Yuzhan's weakness, and even brought him here!

“When did you come here?” Ye Zichen asked.

“How would I know? You smacked me unconscious with a stick the moment we arrived. I've only just woke up and you're asking

me for the time?” Gou Yuzhan rolled his eyes, then stretched out his hand.

“What?” Ye Zichen frowned.

“What else? Give me the good food. You said that you’d give it to me when we arrive,” Gou Yuzhan replied in a matter-of-fact manner. “If you give it to me now, then I can pardon you for your wrongdoings!”

Ye Zichen’s expression immediately darkened.

He let out a sigh, then took out his phone and clicked on the WeChat app.

Data connection failed. Please check your network settings.

No connection?

Ye Zichen glanced at the signal bar, and noticed that the wave, which was usually there, was not.

“Wait till we get out of here. I’ll definitely give you enough good food!”

“You’re trying to lie to me,” Gou Yuzhan wore an expression of disbelief, but his wobbling ahoge exposed his true thoughts.

“Why would I lie to you? When have I ever lied to you?” Ye Zichen said.

“You lie quite often to me,” Gou Yuzhan twitched his mouth, then licked his lip. “But I’ll still believe you. I want to have lollipops after we get out. The same ones that cost 0.5 yuan like before.”

What a dreamy young man. Since his request is so humble, I can’t exactly say no.

“Sure,” Ye Zichen nodded.

Only then Gou Yuzhan smiled. Then he blinked and looked around, “What is this place?”

“I don’t know,” Ye Zichen answered, then looked at the map in his hands.

Not long later, Gou Yuzhan scratched his head, “Boss Ye, someone said in my head that I should team up with someone. What’s that for?”

“You’re a player too!?”

Ye Zichen was surprised, but he quickly understood. So everyone in here are part of that guy’s games. But then again, this is good, since I don’t need to worry about getting a teammate.

“Check if you’ve got any jade pendants on you?”

“What jade pendant? I don’t know any jade pendant,” Gou Yuzhan shook his head. At that very moment, a jade pendant fell down from him.

Ye Zichen smiled, then picked it up from the ground, but Gou Yuzhan immediately tried to snatch it away.

“What?” Ye Zichen asked.

“My mom left me that jade pendant. Hurry up and give it back,” Gou Yuzhan reached out his hand and snorted. He recently learnt how to swipe treasures from his dad over on Mount Huaguo. The pendant was something he picked up from the floor when he just woke up. He had noticed that it was no ordinary item immediately.

It’ll definitely sell for a lot when I bring it back. I can buy plenty of nice food.

That was why he was rather anxious when it fell into Ye Zichen’s hands.

“Your mom left it for you?” Ye Zichen shook his head speechlessly. Then he took out his own jade pendant, and continuously swapped them around before opening his hands towards Gou Yuzhan.

“Say, which one of these is the one your mom left you?”

Gou Yuzhan's ahoge stood up. The two jade pendants were identical, so he really couldn't differentiate them.

"Seriously, your mom gave it to you...?" Ye Zichen shook his head with a wry smile, then chuckled the jade pendant that belonged to him into Gou Yuzhan's hands. "This jade pendant's for you. Your mom left it for you, so you have to keep it safe."

"Congratulations. You have completed the team-forming mission. You were seventh place in this game. There are still nine players who are alone. Please wait for the others to finish before the second task begins. It is your free time now. There are some normal divine artifacts in Mount Supreme. Good luck."

An announcement popped up in Ye Zichen's mind. When he came back to his senses, he saw that Gou Yuzhan was looking at him.

"So you received it too."

Gou Yuzhan nodded, "Boss Ye, what's going on? Why don't I get it? What team-forming? What divine artifacts?"

Ye Zichen didn't really have a proper answer for Gou Yuzhan either.

He'd only found out briefly about Mount Supreme, and only got involved after getting a key from Ruan Qingtian. He doesn't really know anything about it. However, according to his understanding as an otaku, they were playing a game.

A game where they could be killed at any moment.

"Let's take it as we go. You'll get it eventually. What's more, weren't you an otaku in the modern realm as well? Just treat it as a gaming test, and pass the levels to reap the rewards," Ye Zichen smiled, then squinted his eyes. "I'm more interested in whether you are really sure that I brought you over here? Can you tell me what was going on at the time?"

"I'm not so sure either," Gou Yuzhan scratched his head. "I was

playing cards with the monkeys on Mount Huaguo. You... It should be you, suddenly showed up, and told me to come with you. You told me that there was going to be food when we arrived, so I followed, excited.”

“You’re not entirely sure?”

“Yeah. That person looks exactly like you, just a bit older, and been through a bit more. It looked like you were discarded by the entire world,” Gou Yuzhan wrinkled his brows. “But he looked very much like you. Seriously!”

“A bit older, and been through a bit more,” Ye Zichen knitted his eyebrows tightly.

Just who is he?

# Chapter 573 – Enemies Only Get Angrier When They Meet

---

Ye Zichen and Gou Yuzhan wandered around Mount Supreme a bit more using their free time.

They managed to use the map to determine that they had already walked through a tenth of Mount Supreme. It was very fortunate that the map had indicated all the dangerous locations on the map as well.

As for how they managed to confirm it...

It was because Gou Yuzhan didn't believe it at first, and insisted on going over to see it.

Yet, he was already scared speechless before taking a few steps in. Ye Zichen had tried to question Gou Yuzhan about what was inside, but the latter merely shook his head in a dazed manner.

Although Ye Zichen was curious about what was there, he chose not to go for safety's sake.

"If the skulls represents danger, then doesn't the treasure chest mean treasure? The old guy did say that there are normal divine artifacts to be found in the surroundings..." Ye Zichen held the map and frowned. The position they were on was where the map showed a treasure chest.

There were steep walls on either side, and only a meandering path forward which seemed endless.

Tsss...

"Seriously, you sickly bastard, why did you stick yourself onto me?" An unwilling voice complained sounded out from a nearby place.

Ye Zichen turned around, and saw Bian Tianrui walk over along the path with Mu Chengtian.

The world is truly tiny. I actually managed to bump into them here.

“Hey, do you think I want to? What’s more, you lack any potential to become a subordinate. You didn’t even help me up when I fell down just now,” Ye Zichen could tell that it was Mu Chengtian speaking from the tone, after all, only that sickly bastard spoke like that.

“I’m helping you here. God knows who spoiled you like this. A man like you lived in such a weak manner like a woman. Even a sneeze could make you fall over. You need to fall over and beaten up more, otherwise, you’ll die sooner or later,” Bian Tianrui scolded angrily.

“Bullshit, everyone will die in the end. Your words.

“I want to...” Bian Tianrui raised his hand to hit Mu Chengtian.

Yet, Mu Chengtian stuck his face over shamelessly, “Hit me, beat me to death. You’ll get killed without a teammate. Killed, you get it? Kill me if you dare. I might actually be able to bump into you in the Underworld when I go and drink Meng Po’s soup.

“You...” Bian Tianrui’s expression darkened when he thought of getting killed, then put his hand down.

The reason he could even endure Mu Chengtian along the way was due to the game’s rules. If it wasn’t because of that, then he would have smacked Mu Chengtian to death already.

Seriously, why the hell did I choose someone like this as an ally?

“Infighting now are you? Haha, why didn’t you do it? I want first hand evidence of your crimes,” Ye Zichen held his phone and turned on the flashlight, causing Bian Tianrui and Mu Chengtian to be momentarily blinded. They only noticed who was there when they used their hands to cover the light.

“Ye Zichen.”

Hearing Ye Zichen, the sickly person beside Bian Tianrui stopped arguing with him, and glared at Ye Zichen with snake-like eyes, “It’s you!”

“Achoo!” At that very moment, Gou Yuzhan rubbed his nose and muttered. “Who was thinking about me? Oh I know, it must be the lollipops!”

While Gou Yuzhan muttered to himself, Mu Chengtian, who was about to curse... “Ahhh!”

Mu Chengtian wobbled, then reached out to grab Bian Tianrui to support himself. Yet, Bian Tianrui was sick of him already, Bian Tianrui just directly pushed Mu Chengtian onto the floor, then walked over to Ye Zichen with a smile.

“Seriously, only enemies meet. We’ve walked around for nearly a day. I never expected for the people we bump into to be you!”

“Yeah, it really is fate!” Ye Zichen smiled, then summoned out Xuan-Yuan Sword from his arm.

“You want to fight?” Bian Tianrui smiled.

“Why not? It’s two on one. It looks like I have the edge here,” Ye Zichen also chuckled.

Hearing that, Gou Yuzhan immediately knew that the two of them were on terrible terms.

Whoosh.

He summoned out a staff and walked beside Ye Zichen.

“Boss, how should we hit him?”

“Hit him hard!”

Ye Zichen charged forward with Xuan-Yuan Sword, while Gou Yuzhan leaped into the air to make the first attack.

“Heh.”

Phew.

An person identical to Bian Tianrui appeared from him. Gou Yuzhan's smash landed on the avatar, causing it to turn into a wisp of smoke, only to stick together again not long later.

“It seems like you were hiding something. I thought Keke ate all of your avatars.”

Bian Tianrui trembled in anger. Profound Energy was a rare treasure in the God Realm. Although his father had a bit of a status in the God Realm, it wasn't easy for him to get all the Profound Energy that he had obtained.

Yet, the girl he met actually ate seventy percent of it.

“Heh, if you have time to bullshit, might as well show me what you've got,” Bian Tianrui laughed.

Ye Zichen shrugged, and pointed behind him, “Bro, it's two on one. Didn't you notice someone missing?”

“Take this!”

Bang.

Gou Yuzhan smashed his staff onto the back of Bian Tianrui's head, causing blood to flow down from his forehead.

“Avatar!” Bian Tianrui covered his head and roared.

The profound energy avatar immediately charged towards Gou Yuzhan.

At that very moment, Gou Yuzhan licked his lips, then put away his staff...

“Engulf the world!”

A huge suction force was generated in his mouth, causing the profound energy avatar to disappear in it.

Meanwhile, the pitiful Mu Chengtian...

Just crawled back up from the ground, then wobbled, and flew over to Gou Yuzhan due to the suction force.

“What the hell, I don’t eat people,” Gou Yuzhan frowned, then grabbed Mu Chengtian by his leg and yanked him onto the floor.

Bang.

Mu Chengtian fainted.

“Hey, that messy hair dude over there. Do you have any more of that avatar? It was quite delicious,” Gou Yuzhan licked his lips happily and put on an expression of enjoyment.

Bian Tianrui was furious, his Profound Energy Avatar...

Rummmmmble.

The ground shook.

Everything happened in the blink of an eye. Ye Zichen’s pupils contracted when he saw rocks continuously fall onto the ground from the steep cliffs beside them.

“Run,” just when Ye Zichen called out, Gou Yuzhan had already begun to run.

Bian Tianrui was also troubled. In that situation, he no longer had the time to think about grudges. All he wanted to do was to survive.

“Oh my god!”

Mu Chengtian, who had just fainted, also opened his eyes. When he saw the falling rocks, he immediately jumped up without anybody’s help and begun to run out.

He was the last one, but somehow ended up in the very front.

Then, at the same time, the moment he got out of the danger zone, he smiled coldly.

“Ye Zichen, die!”

He grabbed a rock that weighed nearly a ton, then threw it out with his hands.

“Trying to compete with me? Heh, you’re funny!”

# Chapter 574 – Trouble and Fortune Comes Hand in Hand

---

“Stop messing around!”

Ye Zichen was completely stunned when he saw the boulder. The path itself was already extremely narrow, and the rock itself was wide enough to seal off the entire path.

“Sword Slash Maelstrom!”

Ding, ding, ding, ding.

The blade merely left several white markings on the surface of the boulder, but was unable to damage it at all.

“Heh, Mount Supreme is filled with divine stones from the God Realm. It’s hilarious that you’d think that a puny Human Immortal can cut through it,” Mu Chengtian’s face was covered in a cold smile. He didn’t look sick at all, and the sinister smile caused even Bian Tianrui to shudder.

Boom.

More rocks fell down from the sides.

The entire path was completely blocked off by the falling rocks.

“Boss Ye!” Gou Yuzhan roared with bloodshot eyes after he’d ran into the safety zone, then he turned around as his eyes eventually became the color of blood. “I’ll make you pay!”

You...” Mu Chengtian smirked.

Bian Tianrui also opened his eyes wide in anticipation to see what Mu Chengtian could do.

“Ahh, I’m so dizzy.”

Bang.

Yet, all of a sudden, Mu Chengtian directly fell onto the ground.

“Die!” The staff in Gou Yuzhan’s hand became as thick as a person as he smashed it down towards the ground.

“Why did he fall flat at the critical moment again?” Bian Tianrui frowned, but when he recalled Mu Chengtian’s outburst earlier...

The stones from the God Realm are extremely dense. The boulder earlier weight a ton, and no matter what Mu Chengtian was his teammate. If Mu Chengtian dies, then he would need to find another teammate. What’s more, the sickly bastard had his moments.

I’ll just save him first.

Bian Tianrui picked up Mu Chengtian from the ground, then leaped away using the walls.

“You’re trying to run!? Pay for my Boss Ye’s life!”

...

Within a dark cave, Ye Zichen patted his chest with lingering fear.

“The heavens truly don’t shut off every single path. I actually managed to find this tiny hole.

Everything truly happened in the nick of time. Ye Zichen nearly freaked out when he saw that Xuan-Yuan Sword was unable to cut the boulder.

It was fortunate at that very moment, he noticed a tiny cave.

With his thirst for survival, he somehow managed to get it.

“Xuan-Yuan Xiang, are you actually capable? I’ve trusted you so much, but you nearly screwed me over just now,” Ye Zichen looked at the Xuan-Yuan Sword angrily.

Not long later, Xuan-Yuan Xiang materialized and snorted, “It’s all your fault. I’m a divine artifact that grows with the owner. Are you kidding me when you tried to use me to hack a boulder from the God Realm as a puny Human Immortal!?”

“You’re blaming me now...” Ye Zichen said speechlessly. “You are the Yellow Emperor’s...”

“Yellow Emperor back then was so much stronger than you. Look at how weak you are right now. I don’t even want to mock you.” Xuan-Yuan Xiang rolled her eyes, then looked around the cave. “You really are a lucky person. You actually managed to find a shelter like this. I thought I would get covered in dust and have another owner change again.”

“Seriously, why are you acting like that as an artifact spirit? You’re actually cursing your owner?” Ye Zichen couldn’t help but retort, then snorted as he looked around the pitch-dark cave. “Make this cave brighter.”

“Do you think I’m a lightbulb? Go and use your Fiery Eyes of Truth to see stuff!”

With that, Xuan-Yuan Xiang begun to walk outside.

“What a cocky artifact spirit!” Ye Zichen shook his head speechlessly, but he still activated his Fiery Eyes of Truth obediently.

The cave was very wet, and there was a sickening smell of moisture in the surroundings. What’s more, the surrounding walls were also covered in droplets of water, while was even more evident when he reached out and touched it.

I can’t keep staying here. Yet, the hole had already been shut tight by the falling boulders.

He had to find another exit. However, he wasn’t too worried about there being no other exit. There was plenty of air in the cave, and he could feel a faint breeze, which made it clear that there was another opening.

“Oh? There’s someone staying here?” Xuan-Yuan Xiang, who was walking in front, muttered.

Ye Zichen looked up and saw a door in front of her.

“Push it open?” Xuan-Yuan Xiang asked when Ye Zichen walked over.

“Do you think we should?” Ye Zichen returned the question to her.

“You’re the master, so obviously I have to listen to you,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang twitched her mouth.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen couldn’t help but nod, “Since you listen to me, then go in and help me scout the path.”

“Hey, do you have any conscience!?”

“No!” Ye Zichen shrugged. “You ate it all.”

“You... Heh, fine! I’ll open it, since I’ll turn into my spiritual form, if there are any traps inside, you’ll be the one who dies,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang snorted then pushed open the door.

Bloom.

A fire suddenly lit up in the dark room. Not long later, a voice sounded out.

“Lucky youngsters, so you actually found this place. Your luck is pretty good. There are two boxes on the stone table in the middle of the room. One of them is an armor I used a thousand years’ worth of cultivation to refine, and the other is poison, which will kill you the moment you open the box. Fortune and misfortune are always entwined, so what you choose will depend on your luck. Of course, you can choose to not choose as well, but you might regret this decision in the future.”

Him again!

Ye Zichen frowned. This geezer...

Fortune and misfortune are entwined.

He put it so easily, when the treasure is placed with a poison. But then again, he was like this back then as well, he actually tried to lure me using poison snakes.

“Why are his interests so perverse!?” Even Xuan-Yuan Xiang couldn’t help but frown. “I don’t remember him being like this before!”

“Heh, who knows,” Ye Zichen snorted, then walked to the center of the room.

There were indeed two boxes on the stone table. One red and one white.

“These boxes should contain the armor and poison he talked about. What should I choose?” Ye Zichen glanced over at Xuan-Yuan Xiang.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang looked at him in shock, then couldn’t help but frown, “Don’t tell me that you want me to choose for you. My luck this entire life hasn’t been so good. Every single one of my owners died. I don’t want to choose and kill you as well.”

“Maybe it’s my luck that’s terrible,” Ye Zichen shrugged, then raised his eyebrows. “How about I go out and you open the box? If it’s right, then call me, if it’s wrong, then open the other one. Aren’t you a spirit? You should be fine.”

“Kid, that’s smart!” Xuan-Yuan Xiang did not refuse, and gave Ye Zichen a thumbs-up.

She tried to touch the box...

“I can’t open it!”

Her hand passed right through the box, and could not open it.

Ye Zichen frowned, then tried to touch the top of the box, “It seems like he expected someone to bring an artifact spirit it. This should be the preventive measure.”

“This geezer is rather careful when it comes to this!” Ye Zichen smiled wryly then shook his head. He rubbed his chin and stared at the boxes.

He was still wearing the daoist robe he got from Taibai Jinxing. It

was alright for when he was an Earth Immortal, but it wasn't so good now that he had become a Human Immortal.

If I can get a great armor here...

But what if I make the wrong choice.

At that very moment!

Dingdong.

System Notification: White!

# Chapter 575 – Chief Disciple of the Hundred Flowers Gate

---

My phone has internet now?

The first thing Ye Zichen did was to glance at his WeChat.

Data connection failed. Please check your network settings.

It's not connected!

But there is a system notification.

White.

He's definitely talking about choosing which box, but how would he know?

“You're telling me to choose the white box? That's the one with the armor inside? You sure you not screwing me over?”

System Notification: Hurry up. You don't have much time.

Ye Zichen could tell how desperate the system notification was. Thus, he frowned, then put his hand on the white box.

He shouldn't be sending me a message to screw me over, right?

“The first test is cleared. Congratulations to the eleven teams of successful players, you were fortunate enough to survive. As for the unfortunate youngster, I can only say that you were slightly unlucky. But no worries, I believe your next life will be better.”

System Notification: Hurry up and open it!

The system sent another message. Since Ye Zichen was also worried about Lil' White and co., he immediately opened up the box without any hesitation after seeing the system notification.

What he saw was a glowing silver armor, which seemed to hint at the enhancements of spiritual formations on it.

System Notification: Either put it on, or put it away into the

phone. Hurry!

Ye Zichen used his phone to scan and put the armor away into the Treasure Chest. Just when he managed to do so, he felt the world spin. Then, when he finally recovered, he noticed that he was on an open grassland.

What the heck is with this system? Could it be that he knew that was going to happen?

Ye Zichen frowned, but the system no longer replied to him.

“Zichen-ge,” A chipper cheer sounded out.

Ye Zichen put his phone away and saw Xia Keke and co. ran towards him at the same time.

Lil’ White, Zuo Mo, Third Fatty Jin, Zhuge Kongming, Ruan Qingtian...

This is great, all of them are fine!

“I was really worried about you guys,” Ye Zichen let out a long sigh of relief, while he looked around repeatedly.

Why don’t I see Gou Yuzhan?

“Hehe, we were rather lucky, and landed together, so we just teamed up the moment the mission was issued,” Xia Keke giggled. When she noticed Ye Zichen’s actions, she couldn’t help but raise her eyebrows. “Who’re you looking for?”

“The guy who teamed up with me,” Ye Zichen replied.

At that moment, several people appeared in the area. It was Gou Yuzhan, who hung Mu Chengtian on his staff, and carried Bian Tianrui in his hand.

“Gou Yuzhan!” Ye Zichen waved towards him.

Hearing that, Gou Yuzhan’s expression revealed a brief moment of shock. When he saw that it really was Ye Zichen, he immediately threw Bian Tianrui and Mu Chengtian onto the floor,

then ran over.

“Boss Ye, I thought...” Gou Yuzhan stopped himself.

Ye Zichen felt a bit of warmth in his heart, then patted Gou Yuzhan on his shoulders, “Good brother.”

Yet...

“I thought I would never be able to eat those lollipops. Oh my god, I was so pissed. Look at how much I beat those two grandsons up. I was so angry. Thank god you’re still alive, so I’ll still get my lollipops!”

“Screw off!” Ye Zichen’s expression instantly darkened as he kicked Gou Yuzhan on his bottom.

“Brother Ye, I knew you would be fine,” Bai Hai walked over, while a beautiful lady followed beside him. “I nearly forgot. Allow me to introduce you, this is my teammate. She said she’s the chief disciple of the Hundred Flowers Gate!”

“W-Why... is it you!?” Ye Zichen raised his hand, then looked at the woman in complete shock.

“I didn’t expect to see you here either.”

“Chief Li, you know each other?” Ruan Qingtian said in surprise. This chief disciple had only rose to fame. Although she hadn’t appeared for long, she was shockingly talented.

Apparently, she only used half a month to break through from the Spiritual Body level to the Human Immortal level. What’s more, she didn’t show her face easily, and the only reason he even recognized her was because he had seen her when he visited the Hundred Flowers Gate with his father.

“Pavilion Head Ruan,” the lady nodded slightly. “Yes. We’re very familiar, and are old friends! But, I didn’t expect that... he’d still be surrounded by women here.”

“Zichen-gege, who is she?” Xia Keke pouted.

Zuo Mo's expression also turned rather terrible as she scanned the chief disciple. Even though Zuo Mo was extremely confident in her appearance and body, she actually felt like she was worse than the woman in front of her.

"Li Jiayi, long time no see," After a long time, Ye Zichen finally sighed when he suppressed the shock in his heart.

"I rather we didn't!" Li Jiayi smiled, then turned to Bai Hai. "Keep chatting, I'm going to sit on the side."

"Zichen-ge, who is that woman? Why are you still trying to pick up girls here?" Xia Keke bit her lips and snorted.

"She's my high school classmate," Ye Zichen smiled wryly. "I didn't expect her to ascend as well, and to have such a powerful cultivation level."

"High school classmate?" the surrounding people all exclaimed.

Xia Keke did so out of the surprise of his high school classmate ending up there, while the other people exclaimed because they didn't understand what high school classmate meant.

"Mhmm, never mind, let's ignore that," Ye Zichen smiled, then glanced towards Li Jiayi's back. I didn't expect her to actually discard the 'birth mark' on her face after arriving in the Immortal Region. "I didn't expect so many people to come for Mount Supreme."

"Indeed," Bai Hai nodded. "But each key can only take three people in. Even though they weren't my companions, they would have been able to enter if there was a free spot while we did. Those we haven't seen before might have entered like that."

"They're smart!" Third Fatty Jin twitched his mouth.

"A few of them here are good. There's something wrong with the personality of the owner of Mount Supreme. Some people letting us pass the levels is pretty nice, at least we won't end up eliminating each other and getting ourselves killed," Ye Zichen

smiled.

The others also couldn't help but nod.

“Lucky youngsters, you've had enough rest. I don't have so much time for you to chitchat, we have to start the second game.”

As the voice sounded out, the surrounding people also quieted down.

“This person is truly twisted. If I knew this would be the case, I wouldn't have come,” Third Fatty Jin muttered.

“Although Lord Niflheim likes playing games, I don't recall him enjoying playing games using the lives of others,” Bai Hai squinted his eyes. “I feel like there's more to it.”

“What more could there be too it? He's just twisted. My Boss Ye is right!” Third Fatty Jin conveniently flattered Ye Zichen, but at that very moment, he coughed up a mouthful of blood as if he had been seriously injured.

“If anyone else dares to insult this old one. Die!”

# Chapter 576 – A Test of Strength

---

“Third Fatty!” Ye Zichen immediately grabbed Third Fatty Jin by his shoulders, and pressed him down, while channeling spiritual energy into his body to stop his blood from boiling.

“Boss Ye, I’m fine. I have thick skin,” Third Fatty Jin smiled, but Ye Zichen still chose to leave a bit of spiritual energy behind in his body, before standing up and shouting towards the sky.

“Niflheim Dragon, you set a trap to lure us in to act like toys for your enjoyment. What? Can we not talk about it? You can act in such a dictator-like manner just because you’re a mighty god, and we’re cultivators!?”

“Youngster, you want to challenge me!?”

The atmosphere in the surrounding area became more serious, but Ye Zichen merely looked up with a smile.

“So what if I am? So what if you’re a god? Didn’t you still die? You left behind Mount Supreme and told others that it was for training the juniors, but it is merely a game. I heard that although you loved playing around while you were alive, you never joked around with people’s lives. Did your mind get twisted when you died? A shameless god like you deserved to die.”

“Heh! I have no time for you. I said it already, if anyone else dares to complain, then die! You can try!”

Nobody expected him to say something like that. Although it was still coming off strong, but it kind of seemed like he... gave in.

“It can’t be!” Bai Hai gave Ye Zichen a thumbs-up secretly. Ye Zichen was definitely the first person he has seen who dared to go against a Supreme like that, especially since Ye Zichen was only of the Human Immortal level.

“I really am speechless,” Ruan Qingtian also gave Ye Zichen a thumbs-up in secret.

“Do you want to die!?” Zuo Mo yanked Ye Zichen. She was completely shocked by the conversation earlier. What if the Supreme got mad and killed him?

Ye Zichen didn't mind so much. After all, he was about to change his equipment.

I got the divine artifact, and didn't even get to use it once. If he dares to do anything against me, then I'll blind him!

“Heh, Stage 2, start.”

Boom.

A huge strength-tester-machine like machinery suddenly appeared. Then, the voice spoke up once more.

“As you can see, it is a test of strength. Hit it as strong as you can. The first person in the rankings will have a divine artifact as their reward. As for the order, just follow the order in which you formed your teams!”

A simple test of strength!

The first place can get a divine artifact.

Everyone was excited, and wanted to do their best.

Only Ye Zichen frowned. From how he was nearly screwed over twice, Ye Zichen felt like it was not going to be that simple.

“Don't use your full strength later. Just keep your ranking in the middle for this competition of divine artifacts. There are plenty of divine artifacts waiting for us in the future.”

“Why?” Third Fatty Jin raised his eyebrows. “Boss, I'm really strong.”

“Stop bragging. You want to use spiritual energy even though you got injured so much? Just make sure that you're not in the last place,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes.

“Brother Ye, do you know something?” Bai Hai couldn't help but

ask.

“Why should I tell you. Ugh, oh yeah, we aren’t really close, so why are you moving so close to me?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. “We only met once before Mount Supreme.”

“Brother Ye, don’t kid around. They saw people get familiar the second time they meet. It was our second meeting before we entered the mountain, so this is already the third meeting, so we should be friends!” Bai Hai smiled, then indicated towards Li Jiayi with a smirk. “Brother Ye isn’t even going to tell her?”

“Fine, much wow. But I don’t want to explain in detail. I said don’t use your full strength, so don’t. Believe me if you want. Tell Li Jiayi later. She’ll definitely believe what I said,” Ye Zichen said impatiently.

Bai Hai nodded with a smile, then walked over to tell LI Jiayi something.

Not long later, Li Jiayi glanced over at Ye Zichen. When she saw Ye Zichen wave at her, she turned around coldly once more.

“Brother Ye, the outsiders are gone, so you can tell us now, right?” asked Ruan Qingtian.

“I’m just guessing, but we should be careful,” with that, Ye Zichen told them about what he had encountered right after entering Mount Supreme, and in the cave.

“So that’s the case,” Ruan Qingtian nodded. “Alright, I’ll believe Brother Ye. What’s more, Brother Ye shouldn’t worry so much. There are experts from all the realms here, even if we use our full strength, we might not get first place. Let’s just do as Brother Ye said. After all, staying safe is the key.”

“Group three!”

“It’s our turn,” Xia Keke skipped over, then punched the machine softly.

“17494, currently in first place!”

Everyone was completely shocked when they heard the score Xia Keke got.

Her score was more than twice that of the previous first place.

Yet, Xia Keke frowned when she heard the number, then she looked towards Ye Zichen nervously.

She really didn't put any strength into it.

“Zichen-ge,” Xai Keke walked over with a sob.

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes as he looked at the data, then touched her head, “Don't worry, there are more people after you.”

Bang, bang, bang.

A few more people went up, but their highest score was merely about twelve thousand, and that was when Lil' White hit as hard as he could.

“What should I do!”

Xia Keke stomped her feet anxiously. Then...

“Group Seven!”

“Boss Ye, I'm going first,” Gou Yuzhan ran over, and punched...

“33756, currently in first place.”

“Haha, boss. See? I'm amazing aren't I?” Gou Yuzhan laughed out loud, then walked over. Yet, when he got to where Ye Zichen was...

Dong.

Ye Zichen kicked him onto the floor.

I told them not to get such a high score. Is this guy deaf? He actually nearly doubled Xia Keke's!

“What? Boss. I'm number one. I'll get a divine artifact, it's worth a lot!”

“Worth a lot, worth a lot!” Ye Zichen clenched his teeth. Just what the heck is he thinking? It’s either food or money! Doesn’t he think about anything else!?

“Boss, what are you doing!?”

“Did you treat what I said just now as a joke!? Who can break your record now?”

“Why should I let others break it? Getting first place to get the divine artifact is great. Didn’t you hear what the geezer said? A divine artifact for the first place. Do you know how much that’s worth?” Gou Yuzhan shouted. “The Great Sage’s Ruyi Jingu Bang I apparently worth more than a trillion!”

“Ugh...” Ye Zichen glared at Gou Yuzhan. This money lover!

His only thinking about money!

“Boss, calm down!” Third Fatty Jin quickly yanked Ye Zichen.

Only then did he let out a long sigh, then glared at Gou Yuzhan once more, “This is all your fault.”

He gritted his teeth, then walked forward...

“Wait, I want you to get tested last!”

# Chapter 577 – A Different Ending

---

“You’ve got a problem with it?”

The voice sounded out once more.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, then pondered.

This is actually beneficial for me!

There are six people afterward. If anyone of them can get a higher score than Gou Yuzhan, then I don’t have to risk it to break the record.

“Nope.”

“Then, Team Eight, if you will.”

Suddenly, a huge black shadow appeared, then once again disappeared before anyone could react to it.

“6347.”

It was a very run of the mill score.

A black-robed man appeared afterwards, and this person acted with more simplicity, and merely touched the machine.

“1137.”

A very low score.

Yet, Mu Chengtian managed to get a even lower score after him...

“13.”

This grandson is seriously like paper, he even needs Bian Tianrui supporting him to walk. But he wasn’t like this at all when he lifted the boulder.

Also, when did their relationship get so good?

All the surrounding people were rather confused by these last few groups. All of the people earlier tried their hardest to get the best score to get the divine artifact.

Yet, they seemed to be trying to get the lowest score.

There's definitely something wrong with it!

The more Ye Zichen watched, the more he felt like there was something wrong with the test. Otherwise, the other people wouldn't have hid their strengths as well.

That was especially true for the black figure and the black-robed man. He could clearly feel that they were definitely capable of getting first place.

"It's your turn now."

Hearing that, Ye Zichen licked his lips and walked up.

While he walked over, Gou Yuzhan yammered repeatedly, and told Ye Zichen to get a mediocre score, and not take his first place.

Ye Zichen couldn't be bothered with him anymore.

Hopefully you'll be able to be a rich person in your next life, and live in wads of cash!

A score of more than thirty thousand shouldn't be that easy to beat. Ye Zichen took out a deep breath, then focused all his strength into his right fist, while a faint mirage of a dragon appeared behind him.

"Brother Ye is a dragon?" Bai Hai suddenly asked.

The others all shook their heads. Only Xia Keke understood that Ye Zichen was using the power of the dragon race's secret manual.

Dragons have always been famous for their strength. Of course there were elemental dragons, but dragons were undoubtedly the physically strongest in the Beast Region.

Since he's using it, then it looks like he's going to try and break the record.

"Boss, don't takeover my record!"

"Hah!"

Ye Zichen swung his fist the moment Gou Yuzhan spoke.

Wind whirled around his fist, while Mu Chengtian actually wobbled and nearly flew up into the air.

Ding.

“1. Currently ranked in the twenty second place!”

“You’re screwing me over!” Ye Zichen cursed with bloodshot eyes. My score couldn’t have been 1. This cheat is way too obvious.

“Everything is based on the numbers shown by the machine. What right do you have to say that I screwed you over? Do you have any proof!?” A chuckle sounded out in the air.

Ye Zichen nodded, then walked back to his group.

“Zichen-ge, don’t get mad,” Xia Keke held Ye Zichen’s hand.

Ye Zichen shook his head with a frown, “I just wonder what sort of tricks this old guy will pull this time.”

Buzz.

At that moment, a huge golden bell appeared in the air.

The bell glimmered, and there was an image of a pine on the surface.

“The Sky Trembling Bell. It is a top notch controlling type divine artifact. This is for the one in first place.”

The bell gradually shrank until it became the size of a palm before flying in front of Gou Yuzhan.

Gou Yuzhan grabbed it in excitement.

Ye Zichen wanted to stop him in fear of it being transformed from a poisonous snake, but then realized that it was a real divine artifact.

What’s going on? Ye Zichen frowned. This is different from what I expected.

“Heh, I didn’t expect the chief disciple of the Hundred Flowers Gate to be their cohort,” someone who Ye Zichen didn’t recognize shouted angrily in the group. “There’s a plot behind this competition? Hmph, isn’t it just because you didn’t want us to get first place to get the divine artifact? As the head of the three gates, I can’t believe the Hundred Flowers Gate would do something like this!”

“I saw her walk over with those people just now. Seriously, although she has a pretty face, she thinks about such ploys.”

“Yeah...”

“I agree...”

Plenty of people agreed, including Ma Teng, Earth Traveler Sun’s disciple.

“I didn’t, I really didn’t...” Li Jiayi bit her lips and shook her head as the people around her shouted angrily.

Yet, her actions only made the people around her even cockier.

“Come back,” a hand pulled Li Jiayi by the arm. Li Jiayi turned around and saw Ye Zichen scan the group coldly. “Can you guys be more logical?”

“Heh, you want to speak up for your person now? What a joke!”

“Joke? What I said were merely my guesses. It was all for the sake of getting my friends to pass the stage safely. Li Jiayi told you in good will because she’s kind and didn’t want you all to die. What’s more, you had the choice to believe it or not. You were scared of the danger and didn’t dare to get a high score, but now that you see an actual divine artifact, you are criticizing her. You people seriously know how to thank people!” Ye Zichen smiled mockingly. “Then again, even if we did it for the divine artifact, what are you going to do about it?”

Ye Zichen came off extremely strongly.

When Qiu Yuan noticed him, he tried to sneak over, only to be grabbed by Ma Teng once again, who also snorted. “What? You have to give us an explanation!”

“I’m right here. If you want to say anything, then bring it!”

Raging wind began to blow.

Ye Zichen merely stood straight up in front of Li Jiayi, and looked at the people in front of him fearlessly.

“Who allowed you to fight here? Do you all want to be killed?”

Everybody else turned quiet when they heard the voice.

Ye Zichen snorted, then looked up, “Since this stage has ended, then let’s begin the next stage.”

“Who said it’s over?” the voice said in a meaningful manner. “If the second stage is so simple, then wouldn’t I be at a loss for giving out a divine artifact?”

“Then what do you want!?” Ye Zichen’s eyes twitched. I knew this geezer wouldn’t be so nice.

“Aside from the first place in the test of strength just now, everyone has to participate in this next section of the game – The Hell Test!”

The expressions of the players drastically changed when they heard the name...

“The difficulty will increase the lower down on the rankings for the test of strength. If the one for the second place is dead easy, then it will be at a nightmare difficulty for the last place. Since it’s a game, then it’ll only be interesting when it’s exciting. Challenge the extremes and break through your limits. This might even be able to let you improve your strength.”

Creak.

Ye Zichen gritted his teeth tightly together.

No wonder...

I was wondering why the geezer gave me a “1”. I thought my actions ended up costing Gou Yuzhan.

But no, this was actually what was waiting for me.

# Chapter 578 – Swirling Flash Plate

---

Everyone either showed a solemn expression, or one of self-blame. Yet, some actually blamed everything on Ye Zichen and his group.

“It’s all on you!”

“Why is it on us? There is only one first place, everyone else who’s not first has to go in. I didn’t even say anything when I’m the one in the last place, and having the hardest trial, so what’s wrong with you?” Ye Zichen smiled, then turned around.

Mu Chengtian’s face turned stark white from fear. He grabbed hold of Bian Tianrui’s shoulder with a shudder. I got the second to last place...

“I’m done, I want to go home!” Mu Chengtian sat down onto the floor and whined like a child.

Bian Tianrui looked up him, then chose to disregard him.

It’s one thing him being sick, how did he end up retarded?

“Let me tell you in secret, actually I only just made this decision. If you want to blame anyone, then blame that ignorant young man. It’s all because he was so cocky,” the playful laughter sounded out once more, causing many people to look towards Ye Zichen.

“What are you looking at? If you glance over even one more time, then I’ll dig your eyes out of your sockets,” Third Fatty Jin squinted his eyes and said angrily. Yet, when the group of people looked towards him...

“Ahem. I can’t do it, but Boss Ye can.”

“Ignore them,” Ye Zichen grabbed Third Fatty Jin.

At the same time, an arched door appeared near the strength-testing machinery.

“Go in, don’t make me force you.”

“Your results were all in the upper middle half, so I’m sure you guys will be fine. Don’t be nervous, just act normal.” Ye Zichen repeatedly comforted the others before entering.

Yet, they all shook their heads. Zuo Mo bit her lips, “We’re worried about you.”

“Why worry about me?” Ye Zichen chuckled, then patted their shoulders. “Believe me, it isn’t so easy for me to die.”

“Come back alive!” Zuo Mo and co. called out.

“Come back alive,” Ye Zichen nodded with a smile.

...

Ye Zichen ended up in a dark cave through the teleportation gate. The water in the floor went up to his ankles, and for some reason, the sound of dripping water seemed unusually ear-piercing in the silent environment.

He would occasionally hear terrible shrieks and the creaking of insects and rats.

“This is my last pair of shoes I have from the Modern Realm...

When he finally found a dry place, he immediately took off his shoes, and poured out the dark water alongside a disgusting stench.

“If you have time to think about your shoes, then might as well think about what we should do,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang floated in midair, then frowned at the surroundings. “It is extremely humid here, and there is a lot of cold air. What’s more, even though you’re a Human Immortal expert, those cold air and wetness will still seek into your bones. We can’t stay here for long.”

“It’s that dangerous?”

Ye Zichen had used his celestial spiritual energy to disperse the surrounding cold aura, he did not expect it to be able to seep into

his body at all.

“More importantly, I feel an aura that makes me tremble here,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang looked around repeatedly. She has waged war alongside the Yellow Emperor and slayed countless monstrosities, just how strong is the thing is that can make her tremble?

“The hellish test the geezer set me definitely wouldn’t be simple, but since this is a game, then there’s definitely a way to pass it,” Ye Zichen stretched lazily, then put on the shoes he dried off.

He had no choice, that was his only pair of shoes. If he went barefoot, then got knows what kind of poisonous insects would bite him.

“I didn’t expect the armor the system got me to be useful so quickly,” Ye Zichen clicked open the Treasure Chest on his phone with a smile.

There was the image of a silver armor on the first block on the third roll within the Treasure Chest. Ye Zichen clicked on it.

Name: Swirling Flash Plate

Craftsman: Duan Gu.

Notes: The Swirling Flash Plate was the final work of the primordial refiner, Duan Gu. They say that parts of his soul entered the armor while crafting this armor.

Duan Gu.

Is that the name of the Niflheim Dragon?

Withdraw.

You are about to automatically withdraw the Swirling Flash Plate. It will be directly equipped on you. When you want to remove it, all you have to do is silently think that. It is the same for when you want to put it on once more. Would you like to proceed?

Yes.

The silver armor directly appeared on Ye Zichen. It offered all rounded defense that protected Ye Zichen all the way from his feet to his teeth.

Although an armor like that should feel very heavy, it felt rather light to Ye Zichen. It was as if he wasn't even wearing an armor. What's more, there was a spiritual formation that was able to absorb cleansed spiritual energy on the interior of the armor, allowing the spiritual energy which enters the user's body to become purer.

"Child, did you come to Mount Supreme?" At that moment, an ancient, but gentle call sounded out in Ye Zichen's mind.

"You are..." Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

"The name is Duan Gu. I am the master of Mount Supreme," the elder replied with a powerful tone.

Ye Zichen's body trembled when he heard the reply.

Master.

Then the person outside...

"Old Sir, are you the real Niflheim Dragon?" Ye Zichen licked his lips and his heart raced.

"Child, why are you asking?" the elder was a bit confused. "Could it be... Oh of course, since you have awakened me and gained the Swirling Flash Plate, it means that Mount Supreme has appeared. Are you the Chosen One I spoke of back then?"

"I'm not!" Ye Zichen shook his head. "I entered with a key, but am not your Chosen One. But I do have some questions for you."

"You actually aren't? Ahh, forget it, this is fate. What do you want to ask about?" the elder's tone sounded rather helpless.

It seems like he wanted to give this final work to the Chosen One, but such is fate. Since Ye Zichen had already gotten the armor, it could only be said that the Chosen One was not fortunate enough.

“What was the purpose of your leaving Mount Supreme behind?” Ye Zichen asked.

“Of course it’s to give some opportunities to the youngsters in the future,” the elder replied.

“But why did you set different stages in Mount Supreme and use games to eliminate the participants?” Ye Zichen frowned.

“I don’t know how strong the people enter are. On a more selfish note, I’m not a unreasonably kind person. I did have my own selfish reasons for leaving Mount Supreme behind...”

“Selfish reason? Is that to use those of us who seeks opportunities as entertainment?” Ye Zichen laughed coldly.

“Entertainment?” the elder was confused. “Child, what are you saying? The games are to eliminate the ones that do not fit the criteria. How can it be entertainment?”

“Elimination means death. You are truly an almighty god!”

“What death? Those who fail the missions will be automatically expelled from Mount Supreme. How could they die? I, Duan Gu, has never killed a person without reason in all my several hundred thousand years,” the elder replied with a bit of rage, but then he asked. “Child, tell me, did you have to go through something!?”

# Chapter 579 – Duan Gu, who screws people over

---

“Ridiculous!” Duan Gu’s lingering spirit howled in Ye Zichen’s consciousness, causing the latter to gulp in surprise.

“Senior, don’t get so worked up. You’re in my head, what if you scare me to death?”

“Hmmpf, I can’t believe that Duan Hai actually acted to outrageously,” Duan Gu cursed. “I told him to stay in Mount Supreme to help me choose some capable youngsters to give opportunities to. I didn’t tell him to mess with them.”

Duan Hai.

So that’s this great deity’s brother?

“Senior, is he your brother?” Ye Zichen asked.

“Kind of. Actually, he was the artifact spirit for my protective artifact, which was what transformed into Mount Supreme. He can also be said to be the control center of Mount Supreme,” Duan Gu replied plainly, which did not hide his endless anger. “I can’t believe he actually did not listen to my words. Does he really think that nobody can do anything to him just because this old man died?”

“...”

Ye Zichen was definitely unable to make conversation when the old person was having a monologue.

“Child, can you do me a favor?”

“This junior definitely will not refuse senior’s request,” Ye Zichen promised. Perhaps this senior might tell me Duan Hai’s fatal weakness, so I can easily cripple him when I get out.

“Duan Hai might have a terrible personality, but he is not bad at

heart. He just learnt to love messing about from me, but what he is doing now has already twisted my wish. I want to ask you to help me wipe his memories away, and turn him into a new artifact spirit...”

“Senior, then can you tell me his weakness?”

“I’ll be counting on you. My lingering spirit is about to disperse. It’s all on you now.”

“Hey... Hey...” Ye Zichen looked around and shouted as he stood on the boulder, but Duan Gu’s voice did not appear again.

What on earth!?

He gave me a mission, then went away? That’s way too irresponsible. What’s more, that Duan Hai is way too strong, he didn’t even tell me that guy’s weakness, and he actually wants me to wipe that guy’s memories clean...

He’s insane!

Or at least tell me what do I do now.

I thought I would get to know how to pass this stage.

“Who were you shouting at just now?” Xuan-Yuan Xiang asked.

Ye Zichen sat directly onto the boulder, then rolled his eyes, “Guess who I bumped into?”

“Bumped into?” Xuan-Yuan Xiang paused momentarily. “Oh, I get it now. You met the person who crafted this armor, right? It’s that great deity. So what did he tell you? More rules? Let me guess, did you have to answer questions when you put on the armor, and if you got it wrong, then its defensive capabilities are halved?”

“I feel like you could be Duan Hai’s family!” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth.

“Who’s Duan Hai?” Xuan-Yuan Xiang asked.

“Actually, the Niflheim Dragon’s name is Duan Gu. The person

setting the game rules right now is Duan Hai. He's the artifact spirit of the former's defensive divine artifact, and is the control center of the entirety of Mount Supreme. Just now, Duan Gu gave me a mission that is impossible for me to finish. He wants me to wipe the artifact spirit's memories clean," Ye Zichen said helplessly.

"Then go. As the master, he must know the weakness of his artifact spirit," Xuan-Yuan Xiang replied.

"But, the problem is that his spirit was about to disperse, so he told me jack shit," Ye Zichen was speechless. "Say, what the heck am I supposed to do? Duan Hai can kill me with a single slap. Isn't it delusional for me to even try and wipe his memories?"

Hehe.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang, who was floating in midair, suddenly giggled.

Ye Zichen glared at her, when she finally responded.

"Why are you glaring at me? It's not like I set you the mission. But then again, you don't have to complete the mission. He didn't say that you'll get killed if you don't complete it, right?"

"He didn't say it, but what about my friends if I don't kill that evil artifact spirit? What's more, I can't even ensure that I can clear each stage successfully. I'm not the Chosen One," Ye Zichen replied plainly.

At that very moment...

"New players have entered. The final destination of the third stage will be the Niflheim Palace. Please arrive within 48 hours. Those who are unable to do that will be killed! The countdown begins now. Good luck."

New players!

Don't you need the keys to enter Mount Supreme. How did these new players pop up?

What's more, I have to find the Niflheim Hall now, and the countdown has already begun.

"I have to hurry up and get out of this damn place," Ye Zichen immediately stood up, then jumped down into the water.

What he should consider right then was not Duan Gu's mission. Even if he was going to feel troubled by it, it should be after he gets out.

What's more, he has to get out as quickly as possible. Only then could he bring Xia Keke and co. over using the map.

"I'll definitely end up passing a boss or something, right? Oh yeah, the system seems to know everything, I might as well as it."

"System!" Ye Zichen held up his phone, then shouted towards it. The system didn't care about the lack of signals, and Ye Zichen understood that he would be unable to comprehend how the system worked.

System Notification: What? You shouldn't have reached the Niflheim Hall yet. The time isn't matching up.

"You even know about that?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. "System, just what are you? Why do you know everything? Are you an oracle or can you predict the future?"

System Notification: I can't tell you about the details. What business do you have with me? You have the map, it shouldn't be any problem for you to reach the Niflheim Hall.

"I'm not anxious because of that. You know about the Hell Trial of Mount Supreme, right? I don't know how to pass that. Hurry up and tell me the secrets to passing so I can go and get Xia Keke and the rest," Ye Zichen replied.

System Notification: Hell Trial? What's that? Why don't I remember?

The message was immediately redacted the moment it popped

up. However, Ye Zichen still caught a glimpse of it.

Remember.

Could the system have experienced Mount Supreme before?

But isn't this the first time Mount Supreme activated?

System Notification: Figure the Hell Trial out yourself. I'm sure you won't be stuck in there.

"Hey, explain to me what you meant by don't remember," Ye Zichen asked.

However, he did not get another reply, while the system notifications begun to disappear one by one.

What's going on?

Ye Zichen knit his eyebrows tightly together. He felt like something was amiss. However, time was passing by and he had no time to waste. He gradually sent his spiritual energy outwards, and walked forward as he remained vigilant.

Tap. Tap.

When he reached a crossroad, Ye Zichen heard a soft sound. He stopped and frowned, and listened carefully to the origins of the sound.

"The right hand side!"

# Chapter 580 – Tiantian, Bluey, Tenner

---

Ye Zichen was able to clearly see what was happening in the cave using the Fiery Eyes of Truth.

However, when he walked towards the right, he noticed that the cold aura suddenly became more intense, and there were even faint mists which blocked off his vision.

“I feel like you made a not-so-smart choice,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang floated in mid-air. Even though she was in her spiritual form, she was still shuddering from the cold. On the other hand, Ye Zichen was in a slightly better position, since the armor was using up spiritual energy in order to help him guard against the cold.

“If you feel like it’s too cold, then come back,” Ye Zichen raised his arm.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang nodded, then disappeared. Not long later, she spoke out in Ye Zichen’s sea of consciousness, “It’s pretty warm with you, but are you really going to continue on ahead? I feel like that’s the source of the cold.”

“Well, we’ve got to kill the boss in the mission. My instinct tells me that this is the place,” Ye Zichen replied, then held Xuan-Yuan Sword closer, as he begun to walk more carefully.

Tap, tap.

As Ye Zichen walked closer and closer to the end of the cave, the sound which had attracted him in the first place became clearer and clearer. Then all of a sudden, a glimpse of a fire on his left-hand side caught his attention.

“Someone’s there!”

There seemed to be two figures which moved by the fire.

Roar...

At that moment, the sound of a dragon’s roar echoed through the

cave.

Droplets of water dripped down alongside some falling rocks. Ye Zichen lifted Xuan-Yuan Sword to deflect the rocks, then when he could pay attention to other things, he noticed that a huge figure had appeared in front of him.

It had two legs and a pair of wings. Its body was pitch black, with balls of blue flames on its wings.

A winged dragon!

Roar...

The dragon roared once again, and the gust of wind due to its breath sent Ye Zichen crashing into the wall.

“Niflheim Dragon,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang frowned.

“Did you make a mistake? How could there be a Niflheim Dragon here? Could it be Duan Gu’s son?” Ye Zichen was surprised.

“Kid, hurry up and run. We can’t beat it,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang shouted in his mind.

Ye Zichen did want to run, but the winged dragon had already flapped its wings and walked in front of him, then locked him onto the ground with a claw.

Roar...

The dragon let out a deafening roar. As Ye Zichen met the dragon’s cold gaze, his body began to stiffen.

...

At the same time, some people had already finished their trial.

Some of them were even able to gain some benefits from with in the trials, so all of them had expressions of joy as they met up with their teammates.

At that very moment, the room they were in suddenly shook as if there was an earthquake.

“What’s going on?” Everyone frowned in confusion.

Duan Hai spoke up, “It has nothing to do with you. This is caused by someone’s Hell Trail. Hurry up and get to the third stage, you don’t have much time.”

As everyone else begun to walk away, Gou Yuzhan clenched his fist tightly as he looked at the door. “Boss Ye...”

Why is my luck so terrible? Ye Zichen couldn’t help but retort as he looked at the winged dragon, which pinned him down.

Ding.

Ye Zichen through Xuan-Yuan Sword at the winged dragon, but it merely caused a sound when the blade collided with it, and didn’t leave any marks behind.

Roar.

The winged dragon howled once more, then used its wings to hit Xuan-Yuan Sword into the corner.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang grunted in Ye Zichen’s consciousness, causing him to quickly ask, “Are you okay?”

“Just what sort of luck do you have?” Xuan-Yuan Xiang replied weakly. “This guy is seriously ridiculously strong. What looked to be a casual attack just now actually damaged my origins.”

F\*ck, am I really going to get screwed here?

Ye Zichen’s eyes twitched. What was strange was that the winged dragon merely roared repeatedly and did not actually attack him.

“Bro,” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows at the winged dragon then coughed. “You don’t like you want to eat me. Indeed, I’m old and the meat’s tough, it’s not delicious at all. If you want to eat, then go and eat Xuanzang, his meat can make you truly immortal. I didn’t mean to disturb you, so how about letting me go?”

Roar.

This guy doesn't understand human speech?

Ye Zichen thought about it for a moment, then...

“Roar...”

Roar.

“Roar...”

“What are you doing?” Xuan-Yuan Xiang asked in his sea of consciousness.

“I'm talking with him, what else?”

“You're an idiot,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang was speechless.

“You're the idiot. You try and communicate with it. I've really ran out of ideas.”

“Bluey, don't mess around,” at that very moment, a childish voice sounded near Ye Zichen's ear.

Someone's here!

“Say, you should understand what I'm saying, right? Tell this guy to get off me!” Ye Zichen shouted. Not long later, a cute and petite girl sitting on a ball of blue fire flew over.

“Daddy!” the little girl on the fire suddenly smiled in excitement, then jumped down.

Ye Zichen looked at the girl for a while...

“Tiantian!”

“Bluey, move. This is my daddy,” Tiantian put her hands on her hips with a pout.

The winged dragon shrank, then silently moved his claw aside.

Ye Zichen pushed himself up, while Tiantian leaped into his arms.

“Daddy!”

Yet, after a while, Tiantian began to weep in his arms.

Ye Zichen caressed her hair, and patted her back, “Daddy’s here.”

Meanwhile, the winged dragon merely blinked on the side. When it saw Tiantian cry, it lifted its wing and slowly patted her, as if it was comforting her.

A while later, Tiantian finally stopped crying, and wiped away at her dirty little face as she choked, “Mommy and Daddy were both gone. I thought you didn’t want Tiantian anymore.”

“How could we not? Tiantian is daddy and mommy’s treasure. How could we not want Tiantian anymore,” Ye Zichen repeatedly comforted Tiantian and stood up from the ground.

The winged dragon fixed its gaze onto Tiantian with care.

Ye Zichen carried her over to the fire, then saw Tenner sitting there playing with bricks. The bricks would occasionally fall down, and that was the sound that he had heard.

“Oh? Big Brother Ye,” Tenner looked up. When he saw Ye Zichen, he immediately pushed the bricks to the side and ran over.

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but shake his head. I didn’t expect Tiantian to end up staying with Soul Pearl Yiyuan.

“Tenner, you really didn’t lie to me. Daddy really came!” Tiantian giggled in Ye Zichen’s arms.

Ye Zichen was stunned for a moment, then raised his eyebrows, “Tiantian, you can see him?”

# Chapter 581 – Contract

---

Soul Pearl Yiyuan was definitely in spiritual body form. The reason Ye Zichen could see him was because it was his.

It was a bit strange that Tiantian could see him.

“Yeah!” Tiantian giggled, and pointed at Tenner. “I saw him playing with bricks at the mansion, and even played with him! I also know that there was a big sister who was also in Daddy’s room!”

Xuan-Yuan Xiang couldn’t help but appear when she heard Tiantian’s words.

Tiantian clapped her hands with a smile when she saw her, “Look, big sister is here too.”

This is strange.

Ye Zichen and Xuan-Yuan Xiang looked at each other. It was clear that neither of them understood how Tiantian could see artifact spirits which were in their spiritual body form.

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but raise his eyebrows after putting Tiantian down by the bonfire, “Why are you here?”

“Bluey’s fire brought me over,” Tiantian pointed at the winged dragon beside her. In all honesty, Ye Zichen was still rather stunned when he looked at the winged dragon. This guy’s huge.

At the same time, the ball of fire also blew beside Tiantian.

The fire radiated a bone-chilling cold, causing Ye Zichen to subconsciously take a step back. However, the wariness in his eyes quickly turned into interest.

“Is this beast fire shed by a Niflheim Dragon?”

“Yeah, it’s Bluey’s,” Tiantian nodded, then pouted towards the dragon. “Bluey, turn small. You’re too big.”

Not long later, the winged dragon approximately thrice as tall as Ye Zichen became a small winged dragon of a meter in height.

“Bluey’s great. He’s been taking care of me this whole time,” Tiantian nuzzled her head against Bluey’s.

Ye Zichen looked at Tiantian and the dragon in complete shock.

“Your daughter is truly... special,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang exclaimed. in his sea of consciousness.

However, Ye Zichen did not reply.

It is shocking. Tiantian is actually able to be so close with the winged dragon, and the fire doesn’t seem to harm her at all.

“Daddy, did you come to get Tiantian?” Tiantian tilted her head and asked.

Ye Zichen nodded, “Mhmm, but Daddy also came for other things.”

“What is it?” Tiantian blinked.

Ye Zichen glanced at the winged dragon, “I came here because I want to get a bit of beast fire.”

“Oh, okay. Bluey...” Tiantian called out towards the dragon. “Didn’t you shed another ball of fire a few days ago? Can you give that to my daddy?”

The winged dragon nodded in a human-like fashion, then ran off.

Not long later, it came back with a ball of fire in its mouth. It placed it by Ye Zichen’s feet, then flapped Ye Zichen’s shoulders with its wing, telling him to pick it up.

It’s giving it to me so easily? Ye Zichen scratched his head, then reached out towards the flames.

There’s no coldness to it.

The moment he picked up the fire, the winged dragon yelped a few times, then the fire entered Ye Zichen’s body through his

palm.

“The...”

“You are definitely a pill refiner since you wanted the beast fire. I heard my dad talk about those before. I just told the beast fire to enter your body. All you have to do is summon it out when you want to use it,” the winged dragon suddenly spoke in human words, completely shocking Ye Zichen. Then, it continued. “I’m a divine beast, so there’s nothing strange about being able to speak.”

Ye Zichen nodded like an idiot, and silently willed the ball of fire to come out by his hand.

It really is simple. I thought I would only get it after a lot of trouble. I didn’t expect to get the beast fire just on Tiantian’s request.

“Blue...”

“You can just call me Lil’ Blue.”

“Lil’ Blue, then do you know how to get out of here?”

“You’re going to leave?” Lil’ Blue’s tone suddenly became rather sad. He looked towards Tiantian with a hint of reluctance to part.

“Bluey, just come out with us. Staying here all the time is so boring!” Tiantian giggled. “Our house is huge. I’ll tell Mommy to give you a room, so you can just stay here. Oh yeah, Daddy, why didn’t Mommy come with you?”

“She...” Ye Zichen’s expression revealed a hint of sadness, as he patted Tiantian’s head. “She’s out on a trip. It’ll be a long time before she can return.”

“Oh, Mommy always went out on trips before,” Tiantian said, then looked towards the winged dragon with a smile. “It’s okay even if Mommy’s not here. You can just stay in my room. My room is also huge.”

“But my dad told me to stay here and leave with the Chosen One

after Mount Supreme activates,” Bluey shook his head. Then, soon after, he looked towards Ye Zichen. “You can’t be the Chosen One, right? Wait, if you’re not, then how could you even appear here? Yes, you’re definitely the Chosen One. That’s good, wait a moment.”

The winged dragon immediately ran away. When he returned, he threw several pieces of spiritual stone onto the ground with his mount.

“Oh, divine deities. I, Duan Lan, will form a... Wait, what’s your name?”

“Ye Zichen!” Ye Zichen answered subconsciously, but just when he was about to say that he wasn’t the Chosen One, Lil’ Blue had already continued to speak.

“I, Duan Lan, will form an equal contract with the Chosen One, Ye Zichen!”

Whoosh.

The stones on the ground suddenly emitted a blinding light. When the light finally faded, Ye Zichen felt like he was somehow connected to the winged dragon.

“Hurry up, let’s go. I’ve been so bored of staying here.”

“Actually, before we leave, I have to clarify something with you,” Ye Zichen raised his hand. “I’m not the Chosen One!”

...

Lil’ Blue’s expression turned into one that was complete dumbfounded.

“You’re not the successor my dad chose? Then how did you get here? My dad said that only the Chosen One can enter.”

“Uhm...” Ye Zichen smiled wryly. “I’m not sure of how either.”

“Mhmm, I guess I didn’t follow dad’s last will. But the contracts already set, so all of this talk is useless. C’mon, let’s quickly get out

of here.” Only a brief moment of remorse flashed across Lil’ Blue’s face before it was replaced by excitement.

Ye Zichen looked at him. I wonder if Duan Gu will turn in his grave due to this!

...

“You children are insistent on waiting for him here?”

Whenever anyone got out of the Hell Trials, they all hurried over to find the Niflheim Hall. That was everyone except Xia Keke and co., who merely sat in front of the door and waited for Ye Zichen to come out.

“His trial is no simple task. He might die!”

“You’re not allowed to curse him!” Xia Keke glared, as her eyes flashed with a gold light. “We like waiting, how’s that any of your business?”

“The youngsters nowadays are really getting...” Just as Duan Hai laughed mockingly, a light suddenly shone out from the door.

“I’ve finally come back out!”

## Chapter 582 – Identity Exposed

---

Duan Hai couldn't help but exclaim when Ye Zichen and co. came out of the door riding Lil' Blue. "Duan Lan!"

"Uncle Hai," Lil' Blue looked around in confusion for a moment. "Uncle Hai, why can't I see you? Where are you!"

"Why did you come out?" Duan Hai could not suppress the shock in his heart, especially when he saw Duan Lan carrying Ye Zichen and Tiantian. "Why are you with this brat, and who is this little girl?"

"Uncle Hai, you really have a lot of questions," Lil' Blue twitched his mouth. "Of course they are my friends. Otherwise, I wouldn't let them sit on my back."

At this moment, Ye Zichen also jumped down from Lil' Blue's back and after giving a cue towards Xia Keke and co., he laughed coldly, "Duan Hai, was pretending to be the master fun?"

"You found out everything?" Duan Hai's tone was rather sinister. All of a sudden, the sky became completely dark. "You really are lucky. Three out of the four paths led to fierce beasts, and you actually chose the path with Lil' Blue."

"Uncle Hai, what are you doing!?" Lil' Blue said angrily.

"Duan Lan, your father told you to wait for the Chosen One, but look at who you ended up with? He's not the Chosen One. Did you forget what your father asked of you?"

"But my father also said that everything is on fate," Lil' Blue snorted. "It was he who came to find me, so what's wrong with me coming out with him. Also, what do you want to do? Do you want to kill the people who came? My father never told you to kill anyone!"

"..." Duan Hai suddenly turned silent. After a long time, the rain clouds in the sky finally dispersed. "Lil' Blue is right, I was too

impulsive. The third stage of the game has already begun, there is still thirty six hours left. Hurry. Hmmph!”

Thus, Duan Hai’s voice disappeared with a cold snort.

Only then did Xia Keke and co. go over to Ye Zichen, “What did you guys talk about just now?”

“The person hosting this game isn’t the great deity who left Mount Supreme behind. It’s actually the artifact spirit of the protective artifact held by that great deity while he was still alive,” Ye Zichen said plainly. “I was fortunate enough to gain an armor the great deity left behind and talked with his lingering spirit. The purpose of this game is to train us juniors, but it merely became an entertainment tool for the artifact spirit.”

“Then he made the rules of killing whoever fails in the game?” Bai Hai couldn’t help but frown. “Just now, two people died because they couldn’t pass the trial, but what was surprising was that the kid without any spiritual energy actually managed to come out alive. The sickly guy who seems to be on bad terms with you also came out, and I seem to recall him having the second hardest trial.”

“Yeah. I feel like one of them should be the Chosen One,” Ruan Qingtian added.

The person without any spiritual energy should be Qiu Yuan, and the sickly person should be Mu Chengtian.

The fact that the two managed to get out of the trials were surprising for the others. However, Ye Zichen knew about Mu Chengtian, and how he was actually very strong. Yet, the fact that Qiu Yuan actually lacked spiritual energy, and disliked cultivation...

Just as Ye Zichen was pondering the issue, Xia Keke and Zuo Mo already walked in front of Tiantian.

“Little girl, what’s your name?”

“I’m Tiantian,” Tiantian giggled. Although her face was very dirty, it was still unable to hide her cuteness.

Xia Keke took out a handkerchief to wipe Tiantian’s face clean, then smiled, “What a cute girl.”

“Daddy, where are we going now?” Tiantian giggled, then ran over to hold Ye Zichen’s hand. Yet, the moment she said that...

Everyone else was completely petrified, especially Zuo Mo and Xia Keke.

“Zicehn-ge, when did you get a kid?” Although Xia Keke knew Ye Zichen in the modern realm, she had never found out about Tiantian.

“You actually have a kid!?” Zuo Mo exclaimed.

“Is that the issue right now?” Ye Zichen frowned speechlessly, then turned towards Lil’ Blue. “Lil’ Blue, Senior Duan Gu asked me to wipe away this artifact spirit’s memories before I met you. Do you have any suggestions to go about doing that?”

“To be honest, I don’t know,” Lil’ Blue shook his head. “Uncle Hai has always been with my father before, and father died pretty much right after I was born. He told me very little.”

“That’s troublesome,” Ye Zichen couldn’t help but frown. Since Duan Hai knows that his identity has been exposed, he’ll definitely use more dirty tricks against me, or even against those around me.

If I let him continue on like this, then not only us...

Even the Chosen one might get played to death.

“Brother Ye, I feel like we should put aside what you’re talking about. We still need to complete the stage,” Bai Hai fanned himself with a fan and turned to everyone else. “I wonder if you have realized. Although the person hosting the game said that he was going to kill the candidates, he never did it directly. He could only do it through the hands of the game, or as a punishment when they

fail. I'm sure that it's all too easy for him to kill us with his strength. Since he hasn't done it proactively, then there must be rules limiting him!"

"I agree," Ruan Qingtian nodded. "Brother Bai is correct. Although he is hosting the game, the Senior Niflheim Dragon is still the master of Mount Supreme. The host might be able to alter the rules slightly, but he is unable to change it completely."

"No matter what, he is still the host, so we should continue on with the game. At the very least, we can't allow him to find any excuses," the moment Bai Hai said that, everyone couldn't help but nod. "The main thing right now is how we're going to find that Niflheim Hall..."

"I've got a map," with that, Ye Zichen took out the map and said after glancing at it. "Follow me."

When everyone else left, Li Jiayi, who stayed at the very end looked up, then slowly followed behind the rest.

...

"Brothers and sister, I, Yuan Hong, has never asked you for anything. But this time, please," Yuan Hong cupped his hands.

The ones standing in front of him were the Great Sage, the Red Bottomed Horse Monkey and the Six Eared Macaque.

At a slight distance from them, Su Liu'er sat onto the floor with a stark white face. Meanwhile, Su Zhu frowned as she sat behind Su Liu'er to treat her. Su Liu'er's attempt to break through Mount Supreme's seals had already harmed her origins.

However, what was worth nothing was that despite all that had happened inside Mount Supreme, only an incense of time had passed on the outside.

"Third Brother don't worry, watch I, Old Sun', knock this open for you," The Great Sage scratched his face, then gradually became huge with the Ruyi Jingu Bang in his hands.

Bang.

He smashed the Ruyi Jingu Bang down onto the seal. Yet, the Great Sage's body trembled. Then, his staff flew out of his hands and returned to a normal size as it fell down upon the ground, while he also coughed up a mouthful of blood.

The other two spiritual monkeys also used their natal artifact. However, they didn't manage to achieve anything different from the Great Sage.

“Using brute strength to try and destroy Mount Supreme's seal is... just seeking death!” At that moment, a Fatty appeared and laughed coldly as he walked in front of the seal. “Move aside. I'm going to break through the formation now.”

# Chapter 583 – That Guy

---

“I, Old Sun, seem to have seen you before,” the Great Sage sat cross-legged on the ground and looked at the Fatty in front of him.

Yang Jian also couldn’t help but blink, “Now that the monkey said so, I feel like I’ve seen you before as well.”

“I’m your grandfather, since I’ve seen him before, then of course you have too,” even though the Great Sage was healing on the ground, he still couldn’t help but verbally attack Yang Jian.

“Since you’re injured, I’m not going to bother with you,” Yang Jian twitched his mouth, then squinted his eyes at the Fatty. “I seem to recall it being you who took us over to the Modern Realm when we led our armies, right?”

“Mhmm, now move aside since you’ve remembered,” Fatty lifted his hand and signaled the people in the surroundings to step back.

When everyone retreated by approximately ten meters, they saw a huge go board, with the black and white pieces placed on very special spots.

“Eight Formation Origin Chart!” Wei Chen couldn’t help but raise his eyebrows.

Everyone else also opened their eyes wide when they heard it.

Eight Formation Origin Chart!

That was a primordial divine artifact.

During the Great War of Demons and Gods, the Lich Clan had sent out the descendant of the [Twelve Great Liches](#) to bring the Eight Formation Origin Chart to the God Emperor of the time.

The God Emperor was able to trap and kill millions of demons into the Eight Formation Origin Chart, which was what brought about their victory.

However, the Eight Formation Origin Chart disappeared after

that.

The God Race had once sent out their troops to search for it, but they had never found it anywhere. What's more, there was never any news about it after that.

The only reason Wei Chen could mention it was because of his inheritance memories from one of the Four Sacred Beasts.

"This is really the Eight Formation Origin Chart?" The dragon elder gulped. Zhuge Hong also raised her eyebrows in shock.

The divine artifact that caused the entire Demon Realm to tremble in terror actually appeared here.

"Shut up," Fatty scolded. Although everyone else were people were of high status, none of them even revealed a look of impatience.

They merely looked at the formation overhead silently as it glowed with a gold or blue color...

Bang.

The Fatty in front of the formation suddenly retreated after receiving an attack. He quickly found his footing once again, but the formation above his head gradually faded.

"This is strange."

"Senior..." Su Liu'er naturally knew that the Eight Formation Origin Chart represented as the clan head of the Fox Yaos. She disregarded her injuries, and forced herself up to kneel in front of the fatty, "Senior, please. I beg of you. Please save my little sister!"

As her crystal-like tears dripped onto the ground, the fatty looked at her as suddenly recalled the image that person had shown him.

"You are... Su Liu'er?"

"Yes!" Su Liu'er looked up and nodded in confirmation.

"I know about you. Did your little sister get captured by someone

who requested Ye Zichen in exchange for her?” the fatty asked.

“Yes!” Su Liu’er nodded once more.

“I came here due to someone’s request to get Ye Zichen out in order to save a... what was she called again? Su Yan? Ahh, I think that’s it. Is that your little sister?” the fatty asked.

“Yes!” Su Liu’er nodded once more.

“That’s right then. Stop kneeling here, I can’t accept it. I heard that person say that you’re my older sister-in-law in the future. I seem to have married that little sister of yours called Su Zhu.”

“Tsk,” Su Zhu suddenly frowned. “Who’re you? I’ve never seen you before. Stop being so shameless. Marry me? I hate fatties.

“You’re Su Zhu? That guy seriously didn’t trick me. You really are beautiful,” the fatty couldn’t help but nod, then rubbed his chin. “This isn’t my main body, it’s a body I exchanged for using points. My main body is beyond handsome and cool. You definitely won’t regret being with me!”

“Go and die!” Su Zhu scolded.

“Lil’ sis!” Su Liu’er frowned in anger. Then, after Su Zhu calmed down, she spoke up once more. “Senior, can we not talk about all this? My little sister...”

“That guy has said it already. It has to be Ye Zichen who goes to save her. That is something he must experience,” the fatty twisted his neck and replied. “But he gave me the Eight Formation Origin Chart when we were coming over and told me that it can open the seal. But when I tried just now, I felt like something was missing...”

“Fatty, no need for you to do it now,” at that moment, an aged man appeared in the sky. What caught everybody’s attention was that there was the mark of a celestial sword on his right arm.

“Didn’t you say that it’s not good for you to reveal yourself?” the

fatty asked

“Things started going out of my expectations. This is no longer what I’ve experienced,” the man in the air sighed.

The fatty quickly raised his eyebrows, “Then is she still my wife? I like her quite a bit.”

“You...”

“Lil’ sis!

Su Liu’er dragged Su Zhu back, and looked up into the sky. Yet, no matter how hard she tried, there seemed to be a thin veil covering the man’s face.

“Yes. You were madly in love back then, but... Never mind, let’s not talk about it.”

The man slowly descended in front of the seal and tapped it...

“Trying to resist?” the man laughed mockingly. “A puny artifact spirit is actually trying to be fierce in front of me? Shatter!”

When the word “shatter” came out of his mouth, it felt like it was absolute. It was as if the laws of the world were his to command.

Crack.

All of the seals shattered like a broken mirror.

Then, the man walked in front of Su Liu’er and smiled, “Liu’er-jie, I will not allow Su Yan to leave Ye Zichen. Absolutely not!”

With that, he turned back towards the woods, “The seals outside Mount Supreme have indeed been destroyed, but the interior seals of Mount Supreme is more than a hundred times stronger than this. Six Eared Macaque, I need your help!”

...

Meanwhile, at the Niflheim Hall.

Fortunately, everyone who survived the trials found the hall. Of course, that was only because Ye Zichen had brought them over

together due to his kindness. Otherwise, unless they were insanely lucky, it was merely a dream for them to find the hall in a place as huge as Mount Supreme.

However, there were indeed new players just like what Ye Zichen heard during the trials.

Yet, all of them wore black robes, so he didn't know who they were.

At that moment, a black-robed man suddenly appeared on the throne in the hall they were in.

“Allow me to introduce myself. I'm Duan Hai, then current master of Mount Supreme!”

“Duan Hai, you are truly daring,” Ye Zichen smiled.

The man on the throne nodded, “Why wouldn't I dare? But let me tell you all now. Someone is forcibly breaking through Mount Supreme's seals from the outside. So the way we play the game will have to speed up. I don't want anyone to destroy this banquet of ours.”

Take note that the “Lich” (巫族) mentioned here is not those skeletal mages you normally think about. They can look vastly different according to the novel they are from. However, the origin of the Twelve Great Liches (十二大巫/十二巫祖) is more or less constant. They are formed from the blood essence of Pangu.

## Chapter 584 – Wait there for me

---

Someone is destroying Mount Supreme's seals.

This piece of news was like a bomb for everyone. However, plenty of people were actually excited about it.

Including... Qiu Yuan.

He was forcefully brought over by Ma Teng. All he wanted was...

To not be forced to cultivate!

There was also Mu Chengtian...

He didn't even know how he managed to get out of the Hell Trials. He was sick of the rules of the game. He didn't want to stay in a place where people were just going to die randomly.

He was the junior family head of a top family of the area outside of the Immortal Region, it was much better for him to just go back to inherit the family head position, then go out and play with girls.

However, they were not the only ones. Ye Zichen's entire gang seemed to want to leave as well. Of course, there were people who didn't. These people still wanted to risk it and see if they could manage to get a divine artifact, since if they did manage it, then their time will finally have come.

"I don't care what you all think, but the game must continue!" Duan Hai said firmly, and looked towards Ye Zichen meaningfully. "Of course, if anyone is dissatisfied with me, then you can fight me here and now."

Everyone else looked towards Ye Zichen's group. They knew that the gang had some kind of conflict with Duan Hai.

Even the new black-robed people looked over, and one of them had even fixed his gaze on Ye Zichen for quite a while.

"We don't have any issues with you. Let's begin!" Ye Zichen smiled.

Ruan Qingtian and Bai Hai had suggested that Duan Hai might be limited by the gaming rules.

Since that's the case, I have no need to clash with him. All I have to do was wait for my chance.

“Ha, since that's the case, then before the game starts, let's form the teams once more!”

With that, a table with a box on top of it appeared in front of everyone.

“There are twenty-six balls inside. The ones who gets 1 to 3 will form a team, 4 to 6 will form another, and so on. As for the people who received 25 and 26. Sorry, but you were unlucky, so you'll be eliminated. Now... Let's begin!”

Everyone immediately went up to the table one by one. However, they what they cared about when they picked up the balls were not who they were teamed up with. Rather, it was whether they would be able to form a team in the first place.

“6!” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows when he got his. He had thought that Duan Hai would give him a 25 or 26.

“Impossible, I can't possibly be 25...” Suddenly, a person shouted maniacally. Then, after him, another person also revealed a dead expression, and the number on the ball in his hand was... 26!

“Mhmm, sorry. You've been eliminated!” Duan Hai, who sat on the throne, smiled. The two people who got the balls of death immediately ran towards the exit of the hall as fast as they could.

“Be eliminated!”

Dong.

The two players fell limply onto the floor.

Everyone else in the room revealed looks of shock.

Although elimination meant death, it was the first time it had actually happened in front of them.

“The way this game works is simple. I’ll send you all to a secret location later. There are treasures, opportunities and danger everywhere in the secret location. If more than one of you want to get a treasure, then it is very simple, grab their jade pendant and crush it. That’s will be the end of his journey. However, if you find grabbing the jade pendant too troublesome, and just want to kill the other person, then I’m sorry. You will die after you killed him as well! Alright, I’ll give you half an hour to find your teammates. Let’s begin!”

With that, Duan Hai disappeared once again, while the people in the hall begun to shout...

“I’m Number 17!”

“I’m Number 21!”

“I’m Number 14!”

...

Ye Zichen’s group also got together and looked at each other’s numbers.

“It seems like I’m going to have to team up with outsiders,” Ye Zichen scratched his head with a wry smile. None of the group had a number that grouped up with his.

Approximately several minutes later, everyone in the hall stood together in threes. Only Ye Zichen and two people in long black robes didn’t.

“You guys are in the group for 4 to 6, right? I’m Number 6!” Ye Zichen walked in front one of them.

That person nodded, then showed Ye Zichen his ball.

Number 5.

The remaining person also walked over and held up the Number 4 ball.

“Then please take care of me during the mission,” Ye Zichen

smiled.

The two people nodded, but neither of them spoke.

Two strange people.

And they don't seem like they know each other.

As time ticked away, all of the other groups were in intense discussion as they got to know each other better. Yet, Ye Zichen's team was...

Silent.

"Times up! Mission start!" Duan Hai suddenly appeared in the room, and clapped lightly. Everyone in the room disappeared in their groups.

When all of the players left, he squinted his eyes and snorted, "You want to ruin my plans? You're just seeking death!"

...

"Uhm... What should I call the two of you?" After teleporting to the secret location, Ye Zichen scratched his head, and glanced at the two black robed people beside him.

"One!" The slightly smaller person replied.

"Then call me Two," said the other one.

These two are so weird.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but retort silently. But who cares about their real names. At least it is easier to have a conversation now that we have a way of addressing each other.

"One, Two, where should we go?"

"You choose."

This time, the two black-robed people spoke up together.

Ye Zichen rubbed his forehead...

It really is tiring to team up with people like this.

Since it was a secret location, it was not marked on the map, so Ye Zichen could only let out a soft sigh, then signal the two to wait a moment before walking over to the side to take out his phone and call the system.

“Hey, I’m at the third stage now. Where should I go?”

...

Meanwhile, outside Mount Supreme.

The man who had appeared to break the formation stood outside the mountain with a solemn frown. As expected of something left behind by a Sky Sovereign, it really is hard to break through it using only the formation skills of these realms.

Dingdong.

At that moment, he paused for a moment, then walked to the side with a shake of his head, and took out his phone to type out a reply.

“Wait at the teleportation point.”

...

System Notification: Wait at the teleportation point.

What does the system want? Does he want me to give up on the treasure hunt? I don’t really care, since I’ve gotten enough from this place, but my teammates might not agree.

“I’m in a team!” Ye Zichen frowned.

Not long later...

System Notification: There are no treasures in the secret location. On the other hand, it’s actually filled with traps. Your luck isn’t that great, so you’ll end up triggering a lot of traps if you move around. The location of the teleportation point is a safe zone. Staying in the room is your best choice.

System Notification: As for the teammates you’ve mentioned,

they won't refuse.

Huh?

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. The system sounds so sure. I don't know these two people, why would they listen to me?

However, before he could retort, the system sent another message.

System Notification: Wait there for me!

# Chapter 585 – A Sky Supreme Expert

---

Gulp.

Ye Zichen was completely dumbfounded. Is the system telling me that he's coming to see me?

“You're coming?”

System Notification: Kind of. I might not see you though, it'll all depend on how I feel. Alright, stay there and don't move, I'm breaking through the formations right now.

Then, the system notifications gradually disappeared. I guess he's not interested in chatting with me anymore.

Even so, Ye Zichen couldn't help but be stunned by the news...

The person breaking the formations outside is him, the system!

Ye Zichen rubbed his nose, then returned his phone to his pocket before walking beside the two black-robed people. The two of them did not show any hints of wanting to hurry Ye Zichen along. They merely sat quietly in different places without making a sound.

“Uhm, how about we not go out? What do you guys think?”

“Okay,” the two nodded together. The system really was right! They really didn't refuse.

“Wait, didn't you two come here for treasures? You really agree to not going anywhere?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

The two people merely nodded softly once again, then proceeded to get lost in their own worlds.

This is so strange! Ye Zichen scratched his head as he looked at the two black robed people who had their backs to him. What's up with them?

They spent so much effort to get to Mount Supreme, and it wasn't for any treasures? Could they just be here for fun?

But since they don't want to do anything, then I guess that's alright...

...

"Senior!" Su Liu'er couldn't help but speak up for her little sister, even though she didn't dare to go against the person who was breaking the formation, when she saw that person went to play with his phone. "Are... you going to break through the formations?"

"Liu'er-jie, it's hard to imagine you actually speaking to me like that. You were really fierce back then," the man smiled plainly with a hint of wryness. "I kneeled in front of the gate of the Fox Yao's mountain for a month, but you still didn't even do so much as go to look at me."

How's that possible!

Su Liu'er's eyes were filled with shock. Although she was rather cold, and didn't look at most people properly, it was impossible for her to ignore an expert of a senior like the one in front of her for a month, while he kneeled in front of her household.

What's more, I don't even remember that happening.

"Senior," Su Liu'er asked in a testing manner. "You..."

"I was just speaking randomly," the man smiled. "I have to break into Mount Supreme, so Liu'er-jie, don't worry. Just wait over to the side for the results."

With that, he walked in front of Mount Supreme's arched door.

"Senior Six Eared Macaque."

"What do you want me to do?"

The Six Eared Macaque is a female spiritual monkey who spoke very gently.

She was attentive and observative, and able to discern the origins of many things.

It could be said that her strength laid not in battle, but in deduction.

“Can you help me take a look and see which two spots on the arched door are completely identical?”

The Six Eared Macaque raised her eyebrows, then walked in front of the arched door as her pupils turned violet. If one looked at the door with their naked eye, the arched door seemed to have identical spots all over the place.

However, if one could look at it in more detail, that wasn't the case...

An hour passed by in the blink of an eye.

The Six Eared Macaque pointed out two circles on the door, then said to the man, “These two.”

“Thanks,” the man cupped his hands towards the Six Eared Macaque, then went over and placed his hands on the two spots she pointed out.

A hint of ice-cold flames begun to appear forth from the center of his palm, then the two circled locations began to get burnt black.

Then, he retracted the flames and formed a fist with his right hand.

“Open!” He punched the arched door.

All of a sudden, the entirety of Mount Supreme trembled.

Boom.

The door shattered.

“Who dares to cause trouble at Mount Supreme!” An angry yell rang out the moment the arched door shattered.

Then, Duan Hai appeared at the entrance with a frown, “Leave, or die!”

“Duan Hai, not killing you back then was truly my mistake,” the

mysterious man smiled, then stretched his neck and walked over slowly. “Allow me to make up for my mistakes back then!”

Buzz...

Raging spiritual energy was released from the man.

All of the surrounding Human Immortal experts alongside Su Liu'er and the three Yao Emperors couldn't help but kneel when they felt the pressure.

This spiritual energy.

This is definitely spiritual energy surpassing that of an Immortal King.

“You...” Duan Hai felt his eyes twitch when he felt the pressure. “How's that possible? How could a Sky Supreme expert appear here?”

“Afraid? You were very cocky back then. You engulfed Qiu Yuan's soul and took over his body, causing my friends to be completely slaughtered. You... never showed this sort of expression back then,” the man smiled coldly.

Then, as Duan Hai turned around to flee...

“You want to leave!?” The man lifted his hand and grabbed forward, causing Duan Hai to return to his hand uncontrollably. “Allow me to repeat what you said back then. You want to run in front of me? You're just delusional!”

Bang.

The man smacked down on Duan Hai's skull cap.

Duan Hai struggled repeatedly, but was unable to get free. Then, his gaze became empty, and his body turned small until he was the size of a four or five years old child.

“Return to being an artifact spirit.”

Boom.

Duan Hai's body shattered, then turned into speckles of light while disappeared into Mount Supreme.

At this moment, the man raised his eyebrows and looked towards the Fatty, "I'll leave the rest to you."

"You're not going to see him?" the Fatty raised his eyebrows.

The man shook his head with a smile. "There's no need for us to meet. We will naturally meet when the time comes. Oh yeah, give the inheritance to a kid named Qiu Yuan. It's supposed to go to him. And also... give him this armor."

The man took a set of armor out of nowhere and placed it onto the ground. Anyone could tell from first glance that it was no ordinary item from the glow of spiritual energy around it.

"Give it to him. It'll work as a compensation."

"You really are daring," the fatty was surprised. Then he picked up the armor and nodded. "I understand."

With that, the man leapt into the sky and disappeared.

"Mount Supreme's rules cannot be destroyed. Wait here, I'll go and bring Ye Zichen out. Remember, no one is allowed to step in there!" the fatty swept his gaze over the Sky Immortals, then walked into the cave.

...

Rumble.

Ye Zichen, who was sitting idly in the room, suddenly felt the space around him vibrate.

"An earthquake?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and noticed his two teammates already standing up.

"We're running?" He looked toward his teammates.

At that very moment, three more black-robed people suddenly appeared at the entrance to their room.

“Sun Yige, if you’re not going to make the move now, then when are you going to do it!?” The three people suddenly shouted.

Then, the smaller black-robed person behind Ye Zichen suddenly took out a dagger and thrust towards Ye Zichen.

# Chapter 586 – Holy Woman of the Nine Li

---

The dagger sliced through the air with a silvery light.

Ye Zichen, who was standing in front, had placed all his attention on the three new black-robed people, and could not react to the attack from his own teammate at all.

“Heh,” at that very moment, Ye Zichen’s other teammate snorted coldly.

He reached out and grabbed the person by the wrist, causing the dagger to fall down onto the floor.

The smaller black-robed person immediately pushed the person aside, then leaped over to where the three other black-robed people were. However, the hood covering her face also slid down to her shoulders as she jumped.

“Sun Yige,” Ye Zichen was stunned when he saw the familiar face.

“Do it,” one of the black-robed people at the entrance frowned.

Sun Yige looked towards Ye Zichen, then bit her lips and covered her face with her hood again. She took out a short sword and charged towards Ye Zichen alongside the rest of the black-robed people.

Why is Sun Yige here? Why is she trying to kill me?

Although Ye Zichen’s mind was filled with questions, the situation did not allow him to consider any of them at all. Sun Yige was already moving towards him. Thus, he merely took a few steps back, and fixed his gaze on Sun Yige.

“Yige...” Ye Zichen repeatedly stepped backwards as he called out her name.

The black-robed man near Sun Yige smiled sinisterly, “I didn’t expect you to know the Yellow Emperor. Lil’ Sun, don’t hold

back.”

“I know,” Sun Yige nodded. “I will not forget the vendetta of the clan.”

With that, Sun Yige’s attacks became fiercer.

Ye Zichen grabbed her by her wrist and frowned. “Yige, can you wake up? What ‘vendetta of the clan’?”

“Let go of me!” Sun Yige frowned.

Ye Zichen subconsciously let her go.

Bang.

She kicked Ye Zichen, then used the dagger to force him against the wall.

“Sun Yige, what exactly are you doing? Just what happened to you after all this time?” Ye Zichen shouted repeatedly.

His black-robed teammate tried to go over to help him, only to get encircled by the other three people in the room.

“Don’t even think about going over there,” then, they turned towards Sun Yige. “What are you waiting for? Shouldn’t you just kill him now? We have no idea what’s wrong with Mount Supreme, so hurry up and finish him so we can go back.”

“I don’t need you to lecture me,” Sun Yige turned around with an angry shout. Her cold gaze caused the three people to immediately turn silent.

“Yige,” Ye Zichen.

“Enemy,” Sun Yige bit her lips. She raised her dagger up high, but was unable to stab down. Her arms trembled... Her lips trembled... Her shoulders trembled...

The person in front of me is the one I had a crush on in university...

If I kill him, I....

“Why are you the Yellow Emperor!?” Sun Yige grabbed Ye Zichen by his collar and shouted, while droplets of tears began to form in her eyes. “Why am I the holy woman of the Nine Li!?”

Tears flowed down her cheeks and dropped to the floor.

Ye Zichen was completely shocked when he heard her words.

Nine Li.

Doesn't that mean she belongs to the clan that the Yellow Emperor had committed a genocide against during his battle with Chiyou? I saw that scene while I inherited Xuan-Yuan Sword...

It didn't matter if they were woman or child, young or old; It didn't matter if they surrendered or not.

Killed.

Every single one of them were killed.

“How could you be the Nine Li's...” Before Ye Zichen could finish his words, a strange mark began to form on Sun Yige's forehead. That was the mark Ye Zichen saw on the people the Yellow Emperor slaughtered when he inherited Xuan-Yuan Sword.

“I don't know either,” Sun Yige began to weep. Back in the Modern Realm, her father had suddenly said that he was taking her somewhere.

Ever since then, she was called the holy woman.

At the same time, she was also given a task – to kill Yellow Emperor Xuan Yuan, the enemy of the Nine Li!

More importantly, the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor was actually Ye Zichen!

“I...” Sun Yige's dagger remained held up, it did not come down.

Ye Zichen let out a long sigh, then slowly reached up to pull Sun Yige's raised arm down. “Sorry, I feel deeply apologetic for what the Yellow Emperor had done back then. I will go to the Nine Li

and ask for my punishment in the future, but not now... I have other things that I have not completed that are very important right now.”

Then, using the opportunity of Sun Yige’s internal struggle, he hit her on the back of her neck. “Sorry.”

Ye Zichen carried her slowly to the corner of the room, while a cold light surfaced in his eyes. He also drew Xuan-Yuan Sword.

“Nine Lis!”

“What do you want?”

The three black-robed people, who acted rather cockily earlier, suddenly shot backwards. It wasn’t because they were scared of Ye Zichen. Rather, it was Xuan-Yuan Sword...

That sword had affected the Nine Li way too much.

A single person, and a single sword...

Had slaughtered essentially their entire clan.

“What else could I want? Nine Li, die!”

Zzzzss....

Ye Zichen sliced horizontally, sending a blade of wind from Xuan-Yuan Sword. The three people immediately raised their weapons to defend themselves. Yet, even though they could feel that the person holding the sword wasn’t exactly too strong, they were unable to muster up any confidence to defend themselves.

“Ye Zichen! Is Ye Zichen here!?”

The three people judged from the tone that the incoming person had a grudge against Ye Zichen...

“Here, Ye Zichen is here!” The three Nine Li clan members shouted.

Not long later, a fatty appeared at the entrance of the room.

“Fatty Yin.”

“Your position is way too hidden away, I’ve looked for you for ages,” Fatty Yin twitched his mouth and grabbed Ye Zichen’s shoulders. “Your journey through Mount Supreme ends here. Come with me.”

“You... can’t be the system, can you?” Ye Zichen was stunned.

“The heck you talking about? It’s because a person who cares a lot about you told me to come and bring you out. Of course, before that... What’s with the three of them?” Fatty Yin indicated towards the three members of the Nine Li.

“Nine Li clan members. They want to kill me,” Ye Zichen replied faintly.

“Oh,” Fatty Yin nodded.

The three of them were already worried. They had thought that the incoming person was going to kill Ye Zichen like they wanted to. They didn’t expect it to be Ye Zichen’s acquaintance at all!

They immediately began to run, but soon after, they hit against an invisible wall.

“Oh, a formation master,” Fatty Yin raised his eyebrows at the remaining black-robed person, but didn’t say anything else. He merely pointed towards the three Nine Li Clan members. “I can’t leave trouble like the Nine Li running around!”

Thus, all three of them fell dead onto the floor without a chance to scream. Then, he turned towards Sun Yige.

“She’s the holy woman of the Nine Li,” at that moment, the black-robed person helping Ye Zichen said in a hoarse voice.

Hearing that, Fatty Yin raised his eyebrows.

It’s actually her!?

# Chapter 587 – Qiu Yuan – The Chosen One

---

“Holy woman of the Nine Li, isn’t that...” Fatty Yin muttered as he slowly walked towards Sun Yige.

“This has nothing to do with her,” Ye Zichen stopped him, and blocked off his path towards Su Yige. “She’s not from the Nine Li.”

“She said it herself just now. She’s the holy woman of the Nine Li,” the black-robed person continued to speak in a hoarse voice.

Ye Zichen frowned, “I said she isn’t, so she isn’t. We don’t know each other, so don’t stick your head into my business.”

The black robed person paused in confusion for a moment, then nodded, and walked to the side of the room.

Fatty Yin maintained his gaze on Sun Yige and raised his eyebrows, “Ye Zichen, is she the holy woman of the Nine Li or not? If she really is, then she’ll be huge trouble in the future.”

“She isn’t,” Ye Zichen shook his head.

Fatty Yin met Ye Zichen’s gaze for ten-odd seconds, but Ye Zichen refused to look away.

“Whatever, you really are the same person. Even your choices are the same. I don’t care about so much. Since you said that, then I’ll pretend that she isn’t,” Fatty Yin shook his head with a smile, while his expression darkened slightly.

“What did you come to find me for?” Ye Zichen yanked Fatty in away from Sun Yige’s side.

Fatty Yi chuckled, “Didn’t I say it earlier? I’m going to get you out. Mount Supreme has nothing to do with you anymore, but I do have some things to take care of before that.”

The Eight Formation Origin Chart surfaced above his head once more. Not long later, the scenery in front of them changed, and everyone, who were searching for treasures, returned to the

Niflheim Hall.

“What’s going on?”

“Why did we all suddenly return? Is it because time’s up?”

“But that senior didn’t say anything!”

All of a sudden, many of the players fell into intense discussion.

Fatty Yin coughed twice, then slowly walked over to sit down on the throne as he squinted his eyes at the people underneath the throne’s dias.

“All of you, quiet down.”

“Who’s this guy? He isn’t the senior from earlier.”

“I didn’t see him when we were forming teams earlier...”

“What’s going on with Mount Supreme!?”

“Be quiet!”

Bang.

Fatty Yin slapped the armrest of the throne, and released terrifying pressure that instantly turned everybody else silent.

“Mount Supreme’s games ends here. From now on, you can choose to search for treasures within Mount Supreme, or you can choose to leave,”

Whoosh.

A huge door appeared at the end of the hall.

“That leads to the outside of Mount Supreme. You can leave now if you want. Of course, the original owner of Mount Supreme did not lie to you. There are opportunities here, but at the same time, it is also filled with danger. If you want to take your chances, then you can stay here as well.”

With that, Mu Chengtian begun to walk out with a tremble. Qiu Yuan also wanted to sneak out...

“Get back here!” Ma Teng raised his hand and grabbed Qiu Yuan once again.

At this moment, Fatty Yin also spoke up, “Which of you is called Qiu Yuan here?”

“Me!”

Qiu Yuan, who was being dragged by Ma Teng, immediately raised his hand.

Fatty Yin nodded, then glared at Ma Teng, causing the latter to immediately smash against the wall behind him with a cough of blood.

“Come over here.”

Qiu Yuan gulped, then walked over, “Senior.”

“This armor is for you,” Fatty Yin took out an armor from his spatial artifact and placed it onto the floor. “Drip a drop of a blood on it and bind it to you.”

The surrounding people couldn’t help but feel envious when they saw it. The armor seemed to be even stronger than the bell that had been given to Gou Yuzhan.

“Senior, I’m not interested in cultivation. I think I don’t need this armor. There are plenty of people stronger than me here, you...”

“I said it’s for you, so it’s for you!” Fatty Yin said plainly, then grabbed Qiu Yuan’s arm, and stabbed it.

“Ouch!” Qiu Yuan leaped up in pain, while blood flowed down from his arm onto the armor.

Drip.

The moment blood soaked through the entire armor, it lit up and disappeared into Qiu Yuan’s body.

Then, a teleportation gate appeared by Fatty Yin’s side.

“Walk through this gate. Mount Supreme’s Duan Gu’s inheritance lies behind the gate. Now go!”

Everyone else in the hall looked towards the gate with a heated gaze. If they were able to get the inheritance of Mount Supreme’s master, they would definitely become the strongest person in the Three Realms.

“Senior, I’m not going to cultivate!” Qiu Yuan sobbed.

“Go in, or do you want me to kick you in?” Fatty Yin knitted his eyebrows.

“O-Okay,” Qiu Yuan said with a troubled manner, then walked into the teleportation gate unwillingly.

At the same time, Fatty Yin also snorted at the others, “I know some of you are displeased, but let me tell you. That kid is Mount Supreme’s Chosen One. It’s natural for the inheritance to be given to him.”

None of the people in the hall dared to retort. After all, the fatty’s strength had already far surpassed theirs.

Even if Qiu Yuan was not the Chosen One, they wouldn’t dare to go against Fatty Yin’s words.

“Alright, before Qiu Yuan finishes accepting the inheritance, Mount Supreme will remain open to the public. I’ll set down some seals later so that those above the early stage of the Sky Immortal level will be unable to enter. That means some Sky Immortal leveled people will be able to enter. However, there is no need for you to worry. I will set up a mirage formation so that anyone who enters will lose their direction. Whether you can find a treasure will be up to your luck. Let me say it once more, if you want to leave, then the door is right here. If you don’t want to, then... good luck.”

With that, Fatty Yin walked in front of Ye Zichen and raised his eyebrows. “Come with me, this has nothing to do with you

anymore.”

“Are you guys going to stay? Or are you coming with me?” Ye Zichen looked towards Zuo Mo and co.

“I’ll stay. It wasn’t easy coming down. If I don’t bring a few divine artifacts back, the clan elders will cause trouble for me,” Bai Hai smiled.

“I’m staying here too,” said Ruan Qingtinan.

“Then are the rest of you coming out?” Ye Zichen glanced at the others.

They all nodded.

Ye Zichen picked Tiantian up with a smile, then looked towards Fatty Yin, “Let’s go!”

...

Outside Mount Supreme.

Su Liu’er held her hands tightly together and paced in front of Mount Supreme. Although only several minutes had passed since the fatty went after Ye Zichen, she was still extremely anxious.

Whoosh.

Ye Zichen and co. suddenly appeared outside Mount Supreme. The moment they appeared, many people crowded around them.

“Little friend Ye, I wonder if our...” the three Yao Emperors immediately asked.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, then thought back to the three people who didn’t stay with them, “They should have stayed inside to look for treasures.”

“I see,” the female Yao Emperor nodded in comfort. “About the things that you wanted us to give you before you enter...”

“Move aside!”

At that moment, Su Liu’er shouted, and pushed everyone else in

order to walk in front of Ye Zichen, then looked at him in such a way that if looks could kill, he would have been dead.

“Liu’er-jie.”

“Come with me!”

With that, Su Liu’er grabbed Ye Zichen’s arm and began to leave.

## Chapter 588 – The Kidnapped Su Yan

---

“What’s happened to Liu’er-jie? She doesn’t seem like she’s in a good mood at all.”

Xia Keke couldn’t help muttering when she saw Su Liu’er abducting Ye Zichen.

“Young Lady, we shouldn’t stick our noses the dragon elder grabbed Xia Keke’s hand, then the pair left immediately.

Zhuge Hong and the Jail King also took Lil’ White and Zhuge Kongming away.

“Young lady Zuo Mo, I am Wei Chen, Ye Zichen’s number one fighter. A senior said that you will face danger as you return, so I was sent to escort you back,” Wei Chen walked over with a smile.

Zuo Mo looked towards Yang Jian.

“It’s true. I’ll be escorting you back as well. We will not be leaving before you return to your clan,” Yang Jian nodded with a smile.

Zuo Mo also nodded, “Then please do.”

“Then what about the two of us?” Third Fatty Jin wrapped his arm around Gou Yuzhan’s shoulders and smiled wryly. “You guys all have places to go, but what about us!?”

“You go back to the Immortal Region. That ahoge is going with the monkey,” Yang Jian rolled his eyes.

At that moment, Iron Bull walked over with a fierce glare on his face, “Why hasn’t my young master come out!?”

...

“Liu’er-jie, where are you taking me?” Ye Zichen asked as he was dragged through the sky by Su Liu’er.

“Shut up!” Su Liu’er shouted angrily at Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen peeked at her angry expression, then thought about it for a moment before deciding to obey her.

Within an hour, they arrived at the land of the fox yaos.

“Get in there.”

Bang.

She shoved Ye Zichen into a girl’s bedroom.

Ye Zichen, who fell down on the floor, looked around.

The arrangement of the room looked rather familiar, for some reason, he seems to feel like he had entered the same kind of room while in the Modern Realm.

That was when he noticed the picture frame at the dressing table.

This is Su Yan’s room!

Ye Zichen stood up from the ground when he saw the photo in the frame containing him, Xia Keke and Su Yan.

“Where’s Su Yan?”

“See for yourself!”

Slam.

Su Liu’er threw a jade tablet towards Ye Zichen angrily. The moment Ye Zichen grasped it, an image appeared in front of him.

“Hey, Ye Zichen. Long time no see, I’ve missed you!”

The person who appeared was a man who was smiling towards him as he sat in a chair.

Gu Li.

It’s him again!

“I’ve really missed you greatly. There was no helping it, so I could only use some tricks to be able to see you. Look...” with that, Gu Li shifted the scene sideways.

“What exactly are you? Why did you trick me!?”

“It’s your fault that you were stupid. You just believed it when I said that I would take you to see Ye Zichen.”

“Su Yan!” Ye Zichen exclaimed.

At that moment, Gu Li lifted Su Yan’s chin. “Watch this place properly. I’m going to send Ye Zichen a video. You better act a bit more pitiful so that he’ll tremble in anger. Hahaha...”

“Ye Zichen, don’t come, he...”

Slap.

Gu Li slapped Su Yan’s face, then snapped his fingers. Two black-robed men immediately appeared in front of Su Yan and gagged Su Yan’s mouth.

“Ye Zichen, how is it? Do you like this surprise I have for you? Believe me, my surprises never disappoint.”

Creak.

Ye Zichen clenched his fist tightly, while Gu Li continued to speak in the video.

“If you want to see her, then come to the Howling Valley three days after you see this video. Oh yeah, don’t bring anyone else, I’ve very cowardly. My hands might tremble, causing me to kill Su Yan if there are too many people. Oh yeah, bring the beast fire you got in Mount Supreme. Don’t say that you don’t have it. I’m sure you definitely got it in Mount Supreme!”

“So despicable!” Ye Zichen cursed.

Gu Li, who was in the video, chuckled. “You must be saying that I’m despicable. Hahaha, thank you for your praise. Alright, the tablet can’t store too much information. If you want to see this woman safe, then come to the Howling Valley three days from now. See you then.”

Bang.

Ye Zichen shattered the jade tablet with his hand. When he

looked up and saw Su Liu'er's dark expression...

"Liu'er-jie, sorry. This is all on me."

"Just how long do you want to torture lil' sis for!?" Su Liu'er shouted at Ye Zichen with a cold glare. "Back then, she died and reincarnated in order to protect you. Ever since then, lil' sis has always followed you in all her lives. Yet, no matter which one of them it was, she's never had a good ending. You are the scourge, why must you continually torture my little sister? Lord Yellow Emperor, I'm begging you, I, Su Liu'er, is even keeling down right now. Can you go and torture someone else?"

Su Liu'er trembled as she begged Ye Zichen.

Yet, Ye Zichen's lips merely murmured, and only managed to reply with one word. "Sorry."

"Apologize, all you know is how to apologize. Back when you were the Yellow Emperor, you also just said sorry when you brought my sister back. Just what do you want from us? I'm asking you, just what do you want!?"

Bang.

Raging spiritual energy knocked Ye Zichen into the wall, causing him to cough up a mouthful of blood.

Ye Zichen merely silently stood up and wiped away the blood dribbling from the corner of his mouth, then slowly walked beside Su Liu'er with his head lowered...

Bang.

Su Liu'er punched Ye Zichen in his stomach, causing him to cough up another mouthful of blood.

Ye Zichen stood up silently, then walked beside her once more.

"If hitting me makes you less angry, then please continue. But Liu'er-jie, please leave me with at least a single breath. I have to go and exchange myself for Su Yan at the Howling Valley."

“You...” Su Liu’er clenched her fists tightly.

At that moment, the door pushed open. Su Zhu hurried in from the outside and grabbed Su Liu’er’s hand.

Yuan Hong followed behind her. When he saw the blood stains on the wall, he quickly used his spiritual energy to stabilize Ye Zichen’s condition.

“Liu’er-jie, stop hitting him. It’s not going to help Su Yan even if you kill him!”

“Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation, I’m warning you here. If lil’ sis can return safe and sound, then I will pretend like nothing happened. But, if anything goes wrong and you cause her to get hurt, then I don’t care whether you’re the Yellow Emperor, or the Jade Emperor or the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven, I won’t let you off. I definitely won’t!” Su Liu’er glared fiercely at Ye Zichen one last time before turning and walking out of the room.

Su Zhu looked down at Ye Zichen, “How are you, my sister...”

“It’s my fault,” Ye Zichen smiled wryly.

Su Zhu sighed, then turned towards Yuan Hong, “Big Brother Yuan Hong, please.”

“Ai, alright,” Yuan Hong nodded, then used his hand to transfer spiritual energy into Ye Zichen’s body.

When Su Zhu saw Yuan Hong nod towards her, she also turned and left.

After doing so, she walked up to Su Liu’er with a frown, “Sis.”

Yet, Su Liu’er, who always put up a strong front in front of other people, suddenly turned around and hugged Su Zhu with a weepy expression. “Lil’ Zhu, just what should I do now?”

# Chapter 589 – Trouble in the Underworld

---

“Brother Ye, I’m not making excuses for Liu’er, but she’s really desperate,” Yuan Hong sat behind Ye Zichen as he transferred spiritual energy into Ye Zichen’s body.

Ye Zichen nodded, then thought back to the jade tablet. Su Liu’er must have seen it already, so she’s definitely worried.

“It’s all my fault,” Ye Zichen smiled bitterly, then squinted his eyes.

Gu Li.

His existence is truly troublesome.

“Big Brother Yuan Hong, do you happen to know where the Howling Valley is?” Ye Zichen asked.

“That’s the point of connection between the Eastern Continent and the Central Continent. It’s named the Howling Valley because terrifying screams can be heard from the valley all year long,” Yuan Hong removed his hand from Ye Zichen’s back. “But a deathly aura has always filled the place. No living things can actually live there. I suppose it counts as a forbidden location.”

“I see,” Ye Zichen nodded. “Thank you, Big Brother Yuan Hong.”

“Welcome, I just stabilized the spiritual energy within your body, but you still have to sort it out yourself. I’m going to take a look at Liu’er. You stay here for now.”

With that, Yuan Hong departed from the room.

Ye Zichen nodded, then walked around Su Yan’s room after Yuan Hong left.

The room was arranged in a similar way to her room in the Modern Realm, and both the cabinet and dressing table had photos of her with either Xia Keke or him.

There was a large hole in the corner of her room, which seemed

like where Gu Li had taken her from.

“Damnit,” Ye Zichen clenched his fist tightly.

At that moment, Su Liu’er suddenly walked in.

“Liu’er-jie,” Ye Zichen said apologetically.

Su Zhu and Yuan Hong also hurried in after her. They were truly afraid of Su Liu’er actually killing Ye Zichen in her present state of mind.

“I’ll send you to the Howling Valley tomorrow morning. I don’t care whether you live or die, I just want to see my little sister return safely,” Su Liu’er said coldly, while her eyes lacked any sort of caring as to whether he lived or died.

“Okay.”

“Heh, then enjoy your evening,” Su Liu’er snorted, then left the room, while Yuan Hong quickly followed.

Su Zhu walked in and smiled wryly, “Don’t think too much into it. Liu’er-jie doesn’t actually mean that. You have to go to the Howling Valley, but we’ll ensure that you’re safe as well.”

“Mm,” Ye Zichen nodded.

“Then I’ll leave.”

As the room turned quiet again, Ye Zichen rubbed his head, and wanted to smoke. However, when he remembered that it was Su Yan’s room, he put the cigarette back into the box again.

Dingdong.

His phone rang. Ye Zichen took it out and saw that Xia Keke had sent a message to him.

“Zichen-ge, what did Liu’er-jie find you for?”

“Nothing,” Ye Zichen smiled.

“Then are you at Susu’s? Hurry up and tell Susu to explain why she deleted me. Seriously, I’m so mad. She actually dared to delete

me from her contacts.”

Ye Zichen could easily imagine just how Xia Keke was acting from the other side of the screen, so he could only smile wryly, “I didn’t see her.”

“How’s that possible? If you went to the fox yao’s, Susu will definitely go and find you. Or did Liu’er-jie tell Susu to go into closed cultivation again?”

“Perhaps,” Ye Zichen replied. Then, in order to ensure that Xia Keke doesn’t notice something amiss, he immediately added. “Alright, I’m a bit tired, so I want to rest.”

“Okay.”

With that, Ye Zichen closed his chat with Xia Keke. That was when he noticed a friend request on his contact list...

Su Yan.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows when he saw it, and quickly accepted it.

“Su Yan?”

“This is Su Liu’er. Lil’ sis’s phone is with me. Get some rest. See you!”

Ye Zichen didn’t dare to make any other replies. Then, as he was closing the chat, he accidentally clicked open the Underworld’s Staff chat.

The staff chat which had turned silent for a long time suddenly became lively once more.

Yet, from the looks of it, they seemed to be talking about...

The Howling Valley.

Ox-Head: I have to report to the higher-ups in the group. Recently, some higher-ups haven’t been doing their job properly, causing large amounts of beast souls to flow into the other realms.

What's more, they have been going over to the Howling Valley very often. The Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven had once said that those of the Underworld are not allowed in the Howling Valley.

Horse-Face: Adding to that, large amounts of souls, which should be sent to hell have disappeared. I hope the higher-ups go and investigate this thoroughly!

Judge Cui: Got it.

Xie Bi'an: The Underworld has indeed been very strange lately. I have felt outsiders visit the Underworld several times, but when I look on the register, I don't see any visitors recorded.

King Chujiang: Several Yama Kings have been investigating this matter recently. Please don't worry.

Meng Po: @King Chujiang, recently, the traffic here at the [Bridge Henai](#) has been way too much, so I'm requesting an increase in salary.

Ox-Head: There must be something wrong. With such huge amounts of souls coming to the Underworld recently, something might have happened in the Three Realms.

Xie Bi'an: According to my apprentice Impermanences, all of the lost souls they were tracking were lost around the Howling Valley.

King Qinguang: Alright, everyone, stop worrying for nothing. Do your jobs properly and stop discussing in the group.

Ox-Head: Got it

Meng Po: Got it.

Judge Cui: Got it.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but raise his eyebrows when he saw the messages. I didn't expect something to have happened in the Underworld, and linked to the Howling Valley on top of that.

I wonder if this has any connection to my problem.

If there is, then the problem might not be so tiny. The person there is Gu Li, someone of the Demon Realm. It is definitely shocking news for someone in the Underworld to be in cohorts with those demons.

Within the Yama King chat group.

King Chujiang: The situation is getting worse. I feel like we should sort this out before Lord Kṣitigarbha hears of this.

King Qinguang: Indeed. I guess that someone in the Underworld is getting in contact with other factions.

King Yanluo: And it isn't a faction in the Three Realms.

King Songdi: Then we...

King Pingdeng: How about this. King Chujiang and I will go to the Howling Valley tomorrow to see what's there.

King Chujiang: Alright.

King Lunhui: Count me in.

King Qinguang: Don't, just them is enough. Too many will create too big of a target, making it easier for you to be spotted. It'll be for the best if they manage to get anything when they go, but don't go too far in. Prioritize safety above all else.

King Pingdeng: Understood.

King Chujiang: Wait for our good news!

Bridge Henai (奈何桥) is the bridge crossing a river in the underworld, and Meng Po stays on top of it and asks the souls that crosses to drink her soup so that the soul will forget everything about their life.

# Chapter 590 – Souls

---

At a crack on the ground...

As a sinister wind howled, one was not able to see the bottom of the crack. If one listened carefully, they would be able to hear the terrible screams coming out from within the crack.

There were no living beings within a five kilometer radius. There wasn't even a single strand of grass, one of the most resilient plants.

That is the Howling Valley, the place which was called a dead zone in the Three Realms.

“Act according to the plan. Understood?” Su Liu'er glanced at Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen held the jade pendant in his hand tightly. It was something that Su Liu'er had given to him as they were coming over here. As long as he gets into any danger or sees Gu Li, he would immediately shatter the jade pendant, and she would immediately teleport over.

“Understood,” Ye Zichen nodded.

“Now go in.”

Ye Zichen nodded, then put the jade pendant into his pocket and walked into the valley.

The death aura within the valley caused Ye Zichen to feel like he was unable to breathe. Thus, he could only erect a barrier around him with spiritual energy and slowly walk in.

“Gu Li!”

Ye Zichen shouted every few steps. The video in the jade tablet did not clearly tell him the exact location of their meeting.

“Gu Li!”

After an hour of walking, Ye Zichen's throat felt hoarse from all the shouting, but he still did not see Gu Li.

“Roar...”

The strange calls from within the valley became more and more piercing.

At that very moment...

“Be careful,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang said in Ye Zichen's sea of consciousness. Then, the Xuan-Yuan Sword came out by itself surrounding with a swirl of flames and sliced forward. “Activate your Fiery Eyes of Truth. There are souls of the deceased here.”

Hearing that, Ye Zichen quickly did as she instructed.

What he saw was countless souls of the deceased floating around in midair. All of them revealed menacing expressions as they screeched and circled Ye Zichen.

They wanted to get closer, but were afraid of Xuan-Yuan Sword.

“Why are there so many souls here?” Ye Zichen frowned. Then, he recalled the news he had read in the Underworld's staff chat.

Could these be the souls that the Underworld lost?

“Capture!”

At that very moment, a shout sounded through the valley. Ye Zichen looked around and saw King Chujiang, who was in a green robe, holding a box in his hands which was sucking in the surrounding souls.

These souls immediately wanted to escape as if they had seen their arch enemy...

“All of you, stay here,” King Pingdeng, who was in a white robe, also appeared, as a large green net fell down from the sky, covering all the souls in the valley...

As well as Ye Zichen.

“Hmmpf, there really is someone in the Underworld in cohorts with an outer realm. I didn’t expect to see so many souls here,” King Pingdeng frowned, while the captured souls wailed.

“Every single one of them are lacking a physical and a spiritual soul. It seems like someone is using them to increase their strength,” King Chujiang’s face was completely dark. Using the souls of the deceased to increase one’s strength was forbidden within the entirety of the Three Realms.

In simpler terms, it was a method of demonic cultivation!

Although absorbing the physical and spiritual souls of the deceased could quickly increase one’s strength, it was very wrong!

“This seems like it’s no longer something we can suppress. We must see Lord Kṣitigarbha when we return,” King Pingdeng spoke plainly.

At the same time, Ye Zichen also shouted out, “You two, stop chatting up there. Hurry up and get me out of this net!”

Only then did King Chujiang and King Pingdeng notice Ye Zichen trapped inside the net.

So, they quickly retracted it. At the same time, King Chujiang also asked, “Master, why are you here?”

“This sovereign cares about all life. I felt like something was amiss over here at the Howling Valley, so I came to investigate,” Ye Zichen smiled.

As expected of a master.

Ye Zichen’s reply instantly caused King Chujiang and King Pingdeng’s respect for him to rise.

“I wonder if Master has noticed anything?”

“The Demon Realm,” Ye Zichen smiled. “There are demons here and looking at these souls.... King Chujiang, it seems like some people in the Underworld is not acting properly!”

Ye Zichen's words were not just baseless accusations, it was something that he had concluded.

Gu Li had set this place to be their meeting point, and the Underworld's staff chat had also mentioned that some higher-ups are often going to the Howling Valley. What's more, there were also large numbers of souls, which were the lost souls missing from the Underworld.

After arriving, it was clear that the lost souls ended up in the Howling Valley. What's more, although the air was filled with a deathly aura, one could still feel traces of demonic energy.

Thus, there was a very high chance of some people in the Underworld being in cohorts with the demons.

"How's that possible? Those of the Underworld cannot possibly be in cohorts with the demons," King Chujiang immediately shook his head in denial.

Ye Zichen smiled and raised his eyebrows, "Then do you dare to come with me?"

...

The deeper into the valley they traveled, the more souls there were, and the denser the violent demonic energy was. At the same time, King Chujiang and King Pingdeng's expressions only grew darker and darker. They were no fool... Quite contrary to that, all of the Yama Kings were exceptionally bright people.

Even if they didn't believe it before, they could no longer help but admit...

Someone in the Underworld was indeed in cohorts with the demons.

"Brothers, the time of revolution has come. Why should we become that guy's goods? Why should we submit to their ideas? Regardless of man or beast, we should be treated equally. Are we just going to allow those guys to suck our souls!? Definitely not, we

will resist..." At that moment, a man's call sounded out from a short distance away.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but gasp. Is this the start of a revolution!?

Thus, the trio quickly walked over, and saw a muscular man with a dark colored face clench his fist tightly as he floated above the other souls as he shouted.

"Think about how many of our brothers and sisters died in their demonic claws. Do you still remember how much like living corpses they were like when they came out? Do you want to become vengeful spirits and never be reincarnated!?"

"No!"

"Since you don't want to, then what should we do?"

"We will resist, we will protect our rights!"

"Yes, we will resist! We will protect our rights!" The man in the lead continued to wave his fist.

The surrounding souls also began to raise their fists under his influence, "We will resist. We will protect our rights!"

"Blackie!" Ye Zichen couldn't help but call out.

The man in the air looked down. When he saw Ye Zichen, he quickly flew over, "Boss!"

Meanwhile, the surrounding souls all surrounded King Chujiang and King Pingdeng, and begun to tell them about their sufferings.

"Alright, get back there!" King Chujiang took out another box, which all of the souls entered, except for Blackie.

"Dark faced guy, you have quite a bit of talent for leading. How about getting an official position in the Underworld?"

## Chapter 591 – Come and find me in the Demon Realm if you want to save her

---

King Chujiang had clearly seen how capable Blackie was at influencing others, and Blackie had also made a great chant. While he looked at the souls, he was sure that Blackie could make the ghosts do anything for him with a single sentence.

The entirety of the Underworld was rather worried, and they lacked an official with Blackie's capability.

"An official? I don't like being an official," Blackie twitched his mouth. "What's more, you'll have to ask my boss before I agree or disagree."

King Chujiang turned towards Ye Zichen. The latter was still someone he had to treat carefully.

"Master, do you think..."

"I'll let him go if you need," Ye Zichen smiled. It was a good thing for him if Blackie became an official in the Underworld. "But before we worry over that, can we think about now?"

When Ye Zichen noticed that he still didn't see Gu Li after so long, he already had an idea of what was going on.

He's messing with me.

Gu Li's very careful. It's impossible for him to just be waiting here just because he set this as our meeting point. He might be watching over me somewhere to see if I'll bring anyone here.

If Gu Li appears now with King Chujiang and King Pingdeng here, then he'd just be a fool.

"Blackie, did you see anyone around here?" Ye Zichen asked.

"Not any humans, but I did see a few who seemed like ghost servants from the Underworld," Blackie raised his eyebrows.

“Those ghost servants would come here every half an hour or so to lead a bunch of souls away, then bring them back half an hour later. But all of those souls would have already turned into menacing spirits.”

“What!?” King Chujiang’s opened his eyes wide. At that very moment, several ghost servants lead a group of menacing spirits over.

“Stop right there!” King Pingdeng shouted.

The ghost servants immediately wanted to run when they saw King Chujiang and King Pingdeng.

“Hmph.”

King Chujiang instantly blocked off their path, causing the ghost servants to shiver and kneel down on the floor with a trembling form, without daring to look up.

“You really are daring!”

“Sire, we had no choice!” The ghost servants replied in abject terror.

King Chujiang snorted, “Then do tell, just who exactly ordered you to do this?”

All of the ghost servants merely looked down at the ground without speaking.

King Chujiang immediately frowned, “Speak!”

“Sire, actually, it is...” One of the ghost servants wanted to speak, but before he could even utter the name, he immediately imploded.

Seeing that, the other ghost servants also sobbed, “My lord, we can’t say it. If we try to say it, then we’ll die!”

“Then do tell this king whether the person instruction you is still inside the valley, and just how many more souls of the deceased are in there!”

“Sire, you definitely wouldn’t be able to see him if you go in now. We only brought these souls out, these and the ones at the entrance to the valley.”

“King Pingdeng!” King Chujiang knitted his eyebrows tightly.

King Pingdeng immediately walked over and glanced over at the ghost servants.

“Take them back to the Underworld. King Kṣitigarbha might have a way,” King Chujiang nodded with a sullen look, then turned around and cupped his hands towards Ye Zichen. “Master, the situation is rather dire this time. Pingdeng and I have to quickly bring them back to the Underworld to see the bodhisattva. The black-faced man beside you also needs to return with us.”

“Alright,” Ye Zichen nodded towards Blackie, indicating for the latter to depart with the Yama Kings.

...

Approximately five minutes later, Ye Zichen looked up and snorted. “Come out, I know you’re keeping watch over this place. The Underworld folks have already left, so you should show yourself!”

“Brother Ye truly understands me,” a meaningful laughter sounded out from the sky. Not long later, Gu Li, who was dressed in a black robe, appeared in front of Ye Zichen.

“Heh, I didn’t expect you to actually have contact with the people of the Underworld!” Ye Zichen snorted.

“Likewise,” Gu Li smiled. “Doesn’t Brother Ye have contact with them?”

“Where’s Su Yan!?” Ye Zichen demanded.

“You’re talking about that little beauty? Of course she’s not here,” Gu Li smirked, then glanced at Ye Zichen’s pocket. “I’m no fool. If I brought her over, you’d shatter the jade tablet, then

wouldn't I be screwed?"

"Then what do you want?"

I didn't expect him to even know about the jade tablet Su Liu'er gave me. Doesn't that mean he has spies amongst the fox yaos?

But only Su Liu'er and Su Zhu were there at the time...

But it can't possibly be either one of them.

"Stop trying to think about it, I naturally have my ways of getting information," Gu Li smiled. "This test is just to see how sincere you are, but sorry, I'm not satisfied with you at all."

"Then tell me, what exactly do you want?"

"Don't be so anxious. It's very simple, I want your beast flames."

Voom.

A ball of flames instantly rose up from Ye Zichen's palm. The flame itself was bluish, and was swirling with a cold aura.

"If you need it, then I can immediately cut off my link with it and hand it over, but I need to see Su Yan safe and sound."

"You truly don't disappoint, but do you think that you actually have the right to negotiate right now?" Gu Li laughed mockingly.

At that moment, the temperature in the area rocketed down.

"Why do you bullshit with him so much when we can just directly capture him?"

Actually, Su Liu'er had followed Ye Zichen the entire time, so she had heard most of Ye Zichen and Gu Li's conversation as well as the ordeal with the Yama Kings. So this guy is the one who kidnapped lil' sis...

"See? How can we have a proper conversation when you're being followed?"

Gu Li's body suddenly twisted, then eventually disappeared from the valley, leaving only the echo of mocking laughter within.

“If you really want to save her, then come to my palace in the Demon Realm. Remember, only come by yourself. If anyone else follows, or give you some teleporting item, then don’t think about seeing her ever again. As for how, just go back to the fox yaos, you’ll see there!”

“Liu’er-jie!”

This time, Ye Zichen was kind of annoyed. What should I do if Gu Li does anything to Su Yan because of this!?

“Are you throwing a tantrum with me?” The cold aura around Su Liu’er turned colder.

“I know you’re very worried about Su Yan, but my worry is no less than yours, or even a lot more. Su Yan getting in trouble is indeed partially my fault, but I am doing all I can,” Ye Zichen snorted coldly. “You are very powerful, but your emotional intelligence is terrible. Please allow me to take care saving Su Yan, just wait back in your territory for her to return. If you really want to see your little sister safe and sound, then stop adding to the troubles!”

With that, Ye Zichen turned around and left.

# Chapter 592 – There's a Spy amongst the Ten Yama Kings

---

The ghost servants caught by King Pingdeng and King Chujiang in the Howling Valley knelt on the floor of King Kṣitigarbha's palace, while Blackie stood at the center of the palace.

Meanwhile, King Kṣitigarbha sat at the very end of the palace with Diting lying down beside him.

The Ten Yama Kings sat on either side of the palace with their eyebrows locked.

“Tell me about the situation.”

“Basically, these ghost servants were going to bring souls, who were going to be reincarnated, over to the Howling Valley where someone was consuming them in order to strengthen themselves. King Pingdeng and I saw this, so we captured them, and are currently handing it over so that you can handle this,” King Chujiang stood up from his chair. Although he spoke simply, he made everything very clear.

Hearing that, Diting looked over at the ghost servants, while King Kṣitigarbha nodded and spoke in an indifferent manner, “I see. So that means someone in the Underworld is practicing demonic cultivation?”

“Yes, this black-faced man is one of the many victims. King Kṣitigarbha, if you need to know any other details, you can ask him about it,” said King Chujiang.

“No need,” King Kṣitigarbha shook his head slowly, then pointed at the ghost servants and Blackie. “Tell them to leave, they are not needed here anymore.”

After Blackie and the ghost servants left the hall, King Qinguang spoke up, “Did you notice something?”

“Know your wrongs, correct yourself, you still have time to turn back. Don’t make mistakes until the end,” King Kṣitigarbha said randomly as he departed from the hall with Diting in tow.

...

The moment they left the hall, King Kṣitigarbha spoke up, “The Underworld is getting harder and harder to control. I think we might have to ask the Great Emperor to start doing things.

“Is someone of the Ten Yama Kings also working with the demons?” Diting asked.

King Kṣitigarbha smiled, “You should know that better than me, right? You probably already caught the scent of the Demon Realm.”

“A little,” Diting nodded. “I can pretty much sense which of them it is. I’ll pay more attention to them.”

“Don’t let them notice,” King Kṣitigarbha reminded him.

“Of course,” Diting nodded.

...

The Ten Yama Kings did not leave the hall after King Kṣitigarbha departed. King Qinguang frowned as he looked in at the other Yama Kings with a hint of coldness in his eyes.

What Lord Kṣitigarbha had said was clearly directed at them. It was very obvious that someone amongst them had taken a wrong turn.

All of the Yama Kings looked at each other.

Sensing the strange atmosphere, King Chujiang quickly chuckled, “King Kṣitigarbha’s words might not have been talking about any of us, so don’t think too much into it. We, the Ten Yama Kings, cannot be worried and in a mess, otherwise, the Underworld will be unable to function properly.”

King Qinguang nodded in agreement, “King Chujiang is right, let

us return to our posts. But, whoever you are, don't let me catch you. Otherwise, don't blame me for disregarding our brotherly bonds."

Thus, King Qinguang and King Chujiang left the hall with a snort.

"Old Chu, who do you think it could be?" King Qinguang couldn't help but frown after leaving the palace.

King Chujiang shook his head, "I can't tell right now, but what King Kṣitigarbha and Big Brother said just now will definitely cause that person to expose themselves. But I just didn't expect one of us to actually go over to the other side."

"Heh, that's his decision," King Qinguang snorted. "Oh yeah, who else did you bump into at the Howling Valley?"

"I bumped into Master."

...

Ye Zichen wore

a completely solemn expression after returning to the fox yaos. When he had arrived, all of the fox yaos were gathered at a space in their back mountains.

There was a portal that had appeared there, which nobody knew where it led.

Yuan Hong, Su Zhu and the guards had encircled the portal, and prevented anyone else from getting within a ten meter radius around it.

"Brother Ye..."

At that moment, Yuan Hong saw Ye Zichen.

Su Zhu also ran over in excitement and looked behind him.

"Liu'er-jie and lil' sis..."

"Liu'er-jie should be behind me. I didn't manage to save Su Yan,"

Ye Zichen said plainly. Then, he ignored the disappointment in Su Zhu's eyes and pointed at the portal. "When did that appear?"

"About two hours ago," said Yuan Hong.

That should be around when I met Gu Li. I guess this is what he was talking about.

"Okay," Ye Zichen nodded, then went to the side.

He was indeed very anxious to save Su Yan, but that didn't mean that he was going to charge in blindly. God only knows how many traps Gu Li has laid for me on the other side of the portal. I don't need to care about my own life in order to get Su Yan, but at the very least, I have to live until I get her back.

What's more, when it comes to a petty villain like Gu Li...

I can't count him on holding up his end of the promise.

Ye Zichen walked to a secluded space in the back mountains, then sat down and sent a message to Old Lord Taishang.

"Give me a few thousand bottles of Physical Recovery Pills and Spiritual nurturing Pills that complete stage Human Immortals can take."

"Ha..." Old Lord Taishang chuckled coldly. "Weren't you going to refine pills yourself? Why are you asking me for them? I heard Yue Lao tell you where the beast fire was. How was it, did you manage to get it? If you did, then I'll give you the pill refinement manual. I've been waiting for a long time."

Old Lord Taishang was merely mocking him. If beast fire was actually so easily gotten, then there would have been pill refiners everywhere.

"Oh, I nearly forgot, I found the Beast Fire. Send me that pill refinement manual."

"..."

Old Lord Taishang was shocked. Thus, he immediately sent Ye

Zichen a video chat request in disbelief.

Accept.

“Show it to me, I don’t believe that you got the beast fire,” Old Lord Taishang frowned.

Ye Zichen smiled and lifted his right hand, “Watch closely.”

Voom.

A ball of light blue flames appeared in his hands.

Seeing that, Old Lord Taishang opened his eyes wide.

“How’s that? Do you believe me now?”

“Hmph,” Old Lord Taishang ended the video chat, and clenched his teeth angrily in the pill refinement room.

“He’s so damn lucky. He knows the technique of spiritual guidance, and managed to get a Beast Fire...”

“Hey, hurry up and send me the secret manual,” Ye Zichen said with a smile.

A good five minutes later, Old Lord Taishang finally replied, “What were you asking me for again? Physical Recovery Pills and Spiritual Nurturing Pills, right? Wait a moment, I’ll send those over right now.”

With that, a red packet appeared on the screen.

Tap.

You received Old Lord Taishang’s red packet. Physical Recovery Pill x30, Spiritual Recovery Pill x100.

“Alright, I already sent you what you wanted. My apprentices managed to cause their furnaces to explode again, so I have to take a look. Talk to you later.”

## Chapter 593 – The Elder in the Prison

---

“This geezer...” Ye Zichen couldn’t help but shake his head with a smile when he noticed that Old Lord Taishang did not reply anymore.

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but smile when he saw that Old Lord Taishang no longer replied.

It seems like the pill refinement manual is extremely important to him, so he is rather reluctant to give it up.

Ye Zichen merely shook his head, but did not retort.

I did get the Beast Fire, but it won’t be mine much longer.

Since that’s the case, it doesn’t matter even if I don’t get the pill refinement manual.

Then, Ye Zichen began to go on a shopping spree in the Treasure Shop, leveling his Fiery Eyes of Truth, Seventy-Two Transformations, Body-Freezing Technique, Unbreakable Body etc. to level 3.

He also purchased plenty of spiritual sigils. He had no idea whether they’ll be useful for him.

But I still have to be ready just in case!

Ye Zichen took a look at the pills and sigils in the Treasure Chest, then at the secret scriptures that the system notification informed him that he already studied, Ye Zichen stood up from the ground and slowly walked towards the portal.

“Brother Ye,” said Yuan Hong.

“Tell Liu’er-jie that I’ll definitely bring back Su Yan safe and sound,” with that, Ye Zichen stepped into the portal.

Su Liu’er shot through the air the moment he entered.

“Where did Ye Zichen go!?”

“He just went in, he also said that he’ll definitely bring lil’ sis back safe and sound. Sis, this portal...” Su Zhu looked at Su Liu’er in confusion.

At that moment, Fatty Yin urgently descended from the sky. Then, he couldn’t help but frown as he watch the portal begin to disappear, “I’m late!”

With that, he took out a phone and sent a message.

“Ye Zichen already went over to the Demon Realm. I didn’t make it. Time for Plan B!”

...

Purple mist swirled in the area. The place where Ye Zichen exited the portal was gate at the foot of a mountain.

The mountain itself reached into the mountains, and Ye Zichen could see that there were plenty of muscular humanoids with pupil-less black eyes patrolling around with bats in their hands.

Transform!

Buzz...

Ye Zichen had called out silently in his heart, then turned into a little mosquito which then flew up the mountain.

As Ye Zichen had anticipated, pretty much every single level of the mountains was heavily guarded. From the looks of it, Gu Li wants me to slowly fight my way up, but he could never possibly imagine that I know the Seventy-Two Transformations.

It was the first time Ye Zichen had come to the Demon Realm, and he paid attention to the strength of the guards as he flew up.

They truly are strong.

Yet, after flying for so long, he still didn’t see a single expert below the Human Immortal level.

Since this is the Demon Realm, I wonder where Yumei is. It’d be

great if she's with Su Yan, then I can save them both together. Ye Zichen murmured silently as he neared the apex of the mountain.

“Who!?”

Two ten-meter-tall humanoids stood at the top of the mountain, and guarded a jail-like building in a way befitting a gate guardian.

“Mosquito? Why's there a mosquito here?”

One of them clapped towards Ye Zichen with both his hands evoking a huge gust of wind.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen hurried dodged to the side, then snuck in through a crack in the prison gate.

“It escaped.”

“So be it. A mosquito can let the girls inside feel the passion of our Demon Realm mosquitos,” the other humanoid laughed. “I just wonder what Lord Gu is thinking, why did he capture human women.”

“Shh, don't talk about Lord Gu Li in private. Did you forget about those guys...”

The man's face lost all its color and gradually turned stark white.

How could I forget? It was just last month when a thousand demon elites were all killed due to disobeying Gu Li's orders.

“Let's just guard this place properly.”

...

After Ye Zichen entered the jail, he intentionally transformed into an insect that caused less vibrations in the air in order to prevent himself from catching other people's attention, while he searched for Su Yan inside the jail.

There were plenty of people inside the prison's many cells, and Ye Zichen could tell that none of them were demons, yet none of them were people from the Three Realms either.

Wait, no, there's one over there.

Ye Zichen flapped his wings and flew over towards the cell. The one in the cell was an old man with cuffs around his hands and legs. What's more, he was also locked by the neck and essentially pinned to the wall in a pitiful state.

"Senior, senior..." Ye Zichen called out to the man. The man lifted his head and struggled to open his eyes.

When he saw the insect in front of him, he was momentarily stunned before asking, "You are talking to this old man?"

"Yes, senior. It's me," Ye Zichen flew up and down. "You look like someone from our Immortal Region. Why are you here?"

"Immortal Region. You are someone from the Immortal Region!?" Clear excitement flickered in the elder's eyes, and the chains around him also rattled as he tried to move. Yet, not long later, he began to laugh coldly. "Heh, demon scum, you still want to trick this old man? I'm telling you, the Treasure Tower will not be your cohorts!"

The elder struggled intensely as if he wanted to eat Ye Zichen alive.

But what he said just now...

Treasure Tower!

This old man is from the Treasure Tower!

I might not be able to prove my identity if he was from any other place, but proving my identity to someone from the Treasure Tower is all too simple. Ye Zichen flew out to see where the prison guards were, then quickly transformed back into a human to withdraw the Tower Head Token from his phone.

"Senior, look..."

"You think I'm going to look just because you told me to... The Treasure Tower's Tower Head Token!? You damned demons, you

actually dared to make a move against this old man's clan!?" The elder struggled even more intensely, causing his wrists, ankles and even collarbone to begin to bleed.

Ye Zichen quickly pushed him down, and chucked a pill into his mouth.

"Heh, you can't stand it anymore? You're finally going to kill this old man? Demons, this old man will not yield even as a ghost!"

God knows what this old man has been through here, but it looks like he already made up his mind that I'm a demon.

Ye Zichen could only shake his head helplessly.

At that very moment, a prison guard ran over.

"Stop acting insane. If you continue to do so, then I'll whip you!"

With that, the prison guard left with a snort.

Ye Zichen, who had transformed into a brick, let out a sigh. That scared me to death, that prison guard came way too suddenly.

"Heh, aren't you together? Why are you still pretending in front of him? Or were you sent by another demonic faction?" the elder smiled mockingly. "Demons, stop trying to waste your efforts on this old man. I will not collude with you. It's just death, nothing special!"

## Chapter 594 – The Domineering Lu Lu

---

“Senior, why are you so stubborn? Why do you keep on saying that I’m a demon?” Ye Zichen shook his head helplessly. “The pill I gave you just now was a healing one. As for why I have the Tower Head Token, it’s because I have a bit of relationship with the Treasure Tower, and Lady Zuo Mo is a good friend of mine.”

“Lil’ Mo,” the elder’s blurry eyes displayed a bit of emotion.

Then, he used a tiny portion of the slither of spiritual energy to check up on his body’s condition. He’s telling the truth, he really gave me a recovery pill.

“Kid, do you think that I will believe you just like that?” the elder snorted. “You despicable demons, you can do anything. Don’t think that faking kindness will make me believe you.”

“Whatever, I’m not going to waste my breath with you anymore. Do you know if a girl called Su Yan is imprisoned here? And if you do, where is she?”

This old man’s too stubborn, I can’t be bothered with him. I came here to save Su Yan.

“What do you want!?” the elder snorted.

“I came here to break her out. She’s my girlfriend,” Ye Zichen glanced at the elder. “If you know, then tell me. If you don’t want to tell me, then I’ll look for her myself.”

With that, Ye Zichen transformed back into an insect. At that very moment, the elder stopped him from leaving, “I don’t know where the Su Yan girl you’re talking about is, but I do know that there is a girl in this prison. She didn’t seem like a demon. She’s at the very depths of the prison, you can go over to take a look.”

“Thanks.”

After Ye Zichen got out of the elder’s cell, he immediately flew

towards the depth of the prison.

The truth showed that the elder did not lie to him. There was indeed a woman locked at the end of the prison hall. However, there was only a single oil lamp within, so the dim light was unable to shine onto the woman's face.

Buzz...

Ye Zichen quietly flew towards the woman.

Lu Lu!

Ye Zichen was shocked. He understood very well just how strong Lu Lu is. It was no falsity even if he called her one of the strongest existences in the Three Realms. Everybody had to give her face.

After all, the title of Ice Empress was not just for show, but... Why is she here?

Her face was stark white, and her eyes were blanked out.

She hugged her legs tightly, and sat against the wall in the corner of the cell. Ye Zichen was unable to tell what she was thinking.

“Lu Lu!” Ye Zichen settled on the oil lamp and called out to her.

Lu Lu, who was spacing out, looked up in confusion. However, when she noticed that the person she thought she heard wasn't there, she chuckled in self-mockery, and resumed how she was acting before.

“Lu Lu!”

This time, Ye Zichen directly flew in front of her.

Lu Lu blinked, and looked at the tiny insect in front of her, “You...”

“Yes, it's me. I'm Ye Zichen.”

With that, Ye Zichen transformed back to how he originally looked.

Seeing him, Lu Lu's expression drastically changed, then

punched him on the chest. “You bastard.”

“Alright, alright, I’m a bastard. But honestly, how did you get caught by the demons? Even the twelve demon sovereigns might not match up to you,” Ye Zichen frowned.

Lu Lu bit her lips and snorted, “It’s all your fault.”

“My fault?” Ye Zichen was confused.

“Yeah, the only reason I’m here is because of you. I wouldn’t have come over here if I didn’t go and look for you in Maple City,” Lu Lu bit her lips, while hints of tears appeared in her eyes. “I’ve ruled in the Three Realms for so long. I have never been treated like this before.”

“Stop crying, I’ll definitely get you out of here,” Ye Zichen patted her shoulders. Although she did not go into detail of the situation, since she said it was his fault, Ye Zichen could only accept it.

“Stop it, you didn’t come here to save me did you? Tell me, just who did the demons capture to make you risk your life?” Lu Lu twitched his mouth.

“Su Yan!” Ye Zichen replied.

“Su Yan? How did she get captured by the demons?” Lu Lu squinted his eyes and raised his eyebrows. “I get it now. Ye Zichen, you really are unlucky. Your luck as Zhang Junbao was already terrible. It seems like the demons want to make you worried using your woman.”

“Perhaps,” Ye Zichen smiled wryly.

“Let’s think more carefully about breaking me out. You should have seen the two gate guardians outside when you entered, right?”

Ye Zichen nodded. After all, he was nearly slapped by one.

“Those two gate guardians are left behind to deal with me, but they’re just scum and terribly weak. If I didn’t get poisoned, so

that I can't even use a hundredth of my actual strength, do you think I would stay here?" Lu Lu snorted domineeringly.

Ye Zichen glanced at her.

She wasn't like this before!

"You scared?" Lu Lu raised her eyebrows. "Ahh right, this should be the first time you meet my main body. You only talked to my Body Double before. I'm telling you, I'm like this. You have to marry me whether you like it or not."

"..." Ye Zichen was rather confused.

"Oh well, it's too early to talk about all this with you. Can you see if you can get me a cure? I can definitely help you slaughter the way out if you can get me the cure. Getting Su Yan back is just a small thing then, I can even help you shatter this sub-dimension," Lu Lu patted her chest in certainty.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, "This is a sub-dimension?"

"What do you think? The Demon Realm is tiny as it is, they can't live without using sub-dimensions," Lu Lu smiled. "Most demon higher-ups have their own sub-dimension."

Ye Zichen nodded.

"307, stop shouting. You speak to much."

"Stop shitting me. Come over here if you dare. I'll slap you to death," Lu Lu replied mercilessly.

Hearing that, the prison guard did not dare to retort.

Lu Lu's probably the only one in the entire prison who dares to talk like that to the prison guards!

"Keep pretending. When Lord Gu gets the Beast Fire, then you'll just be moaning underneath him," the prison guard muttered as he walked away. Although the prison guard spoke very softly, everyone in the prison could still hear him.

Beast Fire.

Just what exactly does Gu Li want the Beast Fire for? Is he going to become stronger than Lu Lu when with it?

“Hey, what are you blanking out for? Hurry up and get me the cure,” Lu Lu frowned. “Or do you want me to get on a bed with that Gu Li brat?”

“You have to at least give me some clues, alright?” Ye Zichen was speechless. The personality of the Main Body and Body Double are like complete opposites!

“Clue? How could I have any clue? Don’t you know Old Lord Taishang? Get him, he’ll definitely have a way!”

# Chapter 595 – Poisoned Old Li

---

Old Lord Taishang was truly annoyed in the recent times. There's actually someone even more talented than me at pill refinement in this world! He's managed to learn the art of spiritual guidance right after coming into contact with pill refinement, and even managed to get a Beast Fire.

Just look at these apprentices I took in...

Exploding furnaces!

Exploding furnaces everywhere!

All they do is waste my materials. Even though the materials were only of the lowest grade, he was still beyond annoyed.

“Look at you guys! You've learned pill refinement from me for around half a year haven't you? Yet, you only have a thirty percent success rate for the most basic of pills. Don't you dare say that you're my disciples. I'm way too ashamed for that!” Old Lord Taishang scolded them.

The surrounding disciples all lowered their heads, and did not dare to retort.

“Master, stop getting angry at these junior brothers,” Old Lord Taishang's chief disciple walked over with his phone. He smiled towards his junior brothers, then handed Old Lord Taishang's phone over. “Someone is looking for you. Take a look, please allow me to watch over these junior brothers for you.”

“Mm,” Old Lord Taishang nodded.

If I continue to stay here, I might really beat them to death due to my anger...

Thus, he took his phone, and went to sit down on a vine chair. He thought that it was only Yue Lao telling him to play cards with them, but...

“Why is it him again!?” Old Lord Taishang threw his phone to the side in his anger.

At that very moment, the phone rang.

Old Lord Taishang picked his phone back up and was rather annoyed by the new message notifications.

“Just what do you want!? I’m not in a good mood, so don’t annoy me!”

...

Back in the Demon Realm...

Ye Zichen sat on top of the pile of straw in the prison cell. Since Lu Lu was around, the prison guards did not dare to get near them at all.

“How is it?” Lu Lu asked.

“Doesn’t seem too good,” Ye Zichen replied, and rolled his eyes at Old Lord Taishang’s response.

Is he having his menopause? God, it’s so hard to understand what makes him angry and what doesn’t!

“I don’t want anything. You should have some sort of poison curing pill right? Give me one.”

“Do you think I’m your pharmacy? Do I have to give you a pill just because you want one?” Old Lord Taishang replied in anger. “I don’t have any. Go and look somewhere else, stop pissing me off.”

“Old Lord, look at what you’re saying...” Ye Zichen smiled. “No matter what, you’re one of the Three Pure Ones, you have to be more magnanimous. What’s more, doesn’t our revolutionary friendship run deep? Did you forget how I gave you better cigarettes when you were competing with Yue Lao?”

“This old man bought it from you,” Old Lord Taishang snorted.

“Alright, alright, stop throwing a tantrum. I’m really desperate

here, so be more forgiving and send me one,” Ye Zichen replied with a smile.

“What poison is it?” Old Lord Taishang didn’t want to waste his breath. I’ll just give him the pill, so he’ll stop annoying me.

“What sort of poison is it?” Ye Zichen asked Lu Lu.

Lu Lu blinked, “How would I know?”

...

Ye Zichen looked at Lu Lu speechlessly, then typed out a reply.

“I don’t know what poison it is.”

“Send me a blood sample.”

Old Lord Taishang was already speechless. Instead of retorting, he directly sent a red packet over.

You received Old Lord Taishang’s red packet.

Clay vial x1.

“Put the blood sample inside and send it back over. I’ll examine it, then give you the cure.”

“Sure.”

Ye Zichen withdrew the vial, and crooked his finger towards Lu Lu.

“What?” Lu Lu walked over.

“I need some of your blood.”

Then, Ye Zichen used a blade formed from spiritual energy to make a small cut on Lu Lu’s arm before she could react, then moved the vial so that blood dripped into it...

Her blood was a purple shade that had a hints of black smoke coming out of it.

“Ouch!” Lu Lu yelped softly.

Ye Zichen used spiritual energy to seal her wound, then stared at

the vial.

Scan.

Send.

Dingdong.

Old Lord Taishang received your red packet.

“This is the blood sample of the person you said was poisoned?”

Old Lord Taishang’s eyes twitched. Purple blood with black vapor... I literally just cured someone of that poison.

“Yes,” Ye Zichen nodded. “How long would it take for you to prepare the cure?”

The moment he sent the message, he noticed that Old Lord Taishang had already sent him a red packet.

You received Old Lord Taishang’s red packet.

Blood Exorcism Pill x1.

“Here’s the cure, give it to him,” Old Lord Taishang replied. Then sent a follow up message. “Where did your friend get poisoned?”

“How did you know that it’s a friend and not me?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“After getting poisoned, the victim will suffer a shock. When they awaken, they will feel powerless in their limbs. You’ll be very lucky if you manage to actually survive this poison with your pitiful cultivation level,” Old Lord Taishang snorted. “Even Old Li couldn’t get up for half a month after getting poisoned.”

Old Li!

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li!

Ye Zichen was stunned.

“You said Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li fell victim to this

poison as well?”

“Mhmm, don’t you remember him investigating the situation after the Seven Fairies’ concert?” Old Lord Taishang confirmed. “Oh yeah, where did your friend get poisoned? Tell me, I might be able to find out more.”

“The demon realm!” Ye Zichen squinted his reply and typed out his reply. If Old Lord Taishang was in the same room as him, he would be able to see just how unmistakably dark Ye Zichen’s expression had turned.

“There!? Doesn’t that mean you are currently...”

“Yeah, I’m in the Demon Realm,” Ye Zichen confirmed. “It seems like demons have already infiltrated into the Heavenly Court. This isn’t the time to speak. I’ll come to the Heavenly Court after getting out of here. Let’s chat in detail then!”

“Okay. Do you need me to get God of Thunder and co. to back you up?” Old Lord Taishang replied.

“Probably not, the demons haven’t noticed me yet,” With that, Ye Zichen told Old Lord Taishang that he’ll talk to him later before putting his phone again.

Yet, he was unable to calm down...

Heavenly Court... underworld...

The demons have their claws on these two realms already, and there was the elder from the Treasure Tower as well...

Just what exactly is the demons doing!?

Are they trying to take over the Three Realms at once!?

No matter what, I can’t let them get what they wish for. But more importantly right now, I have to break Lu Lu and Su Yan out.

“How’re you doing? Have you recovered?” Ye Zichen turned around and raised his eyebrows.

Lu Lu, who was sitting cross-legged, opened her eyes. Her sharp gaze seemed to pierce through everything.

She stood up from the straw pile and stretched lazily.

“Old Lord Taishang is truly the top pill refiner in the Three Realms. Kid, come with me, it’s time for the slaughter!”

## Chapter 596 – Seeing Su Yan

---

A faint light swirled around Lu Lu's body. Ye Zichen gulped as he watched her slowly walk over in front of the jail bars.

“Open!” She grabbed the door to her cell and yanked.

“Open!”

“Open!”

...

Lu Lu shouted countless times, but the door to her cell did not budge even a single bit.

“Well... This is awkward,” Ye Zichen scratched his nose.

Lu Lu tried to yank it apart a few more times in disbelief.

“Stop trying, even complete stage Sky Immortals can't get out of the cell. It's funny how you think you can open it when you're poisoned!” A prison guard walked over and mocked her when he heard the sound of her door being yanked on.

“Hurry up and open this damn door. Otherwise, you'll be the first one I freeze into a popsicle when I get out,” Lu Lu frowned.

The prison guard merely smirked as he walked away.

Ye Zichen, who had transformed into an insect, returned to human form and glanced at the cell door, “Since the prison guard said that, then stop wasting your strength. If we get out right now, they might do something to Su Yan anyways. Stay here for a while, I'll check out where Su Yan is first. Then I'll go and steal the keys to the cell.”

“That's the only way,” Lu Lu nodded, then kicked the jail bars with a snort. “Damn this shitty door, I didn't expect it to be made out of Qilin Stone.”

Qilin Stone was exactly like its name suggested, it was the

spiritual stones where from where Qilin inhabited.

Actually, they were originally just normal stones, but since they had been with a Qilin for a long time, they managed to receive some of a Qilin's magical immunity, thus increasing their toughness.

If one wanted to shatter it, then they had to be at least a complete stage Sky Immortal, as well as using all their strength.

Although Lu Lu was a complete stay Sky Immortal expert, she was just cured of her poison, so she needed some time to allow her body to return to its peak condition.

“I'll wait for you here.”

Ye Zichen nodded towards Lu Lu, then transformed into an insect and flew out.

Just where is Su Yan!?

Ye Zichen immediately raced around like a headless chicken. He had pretty much searched everywhere, and the only places he hadn't searched was the courtyard with several Sky Immortal experts guarding it.

Buzz...

Left with no other choice, Ye Zichen could only flap his wings and fly towards the courtyard.

The moment he entered...

“Don't contact me like this anymore. The Heavenly Court guys are surely bound to notice.”

Ye Zichen heard a quiet conversation. He looked around towards the entrance of the manor, and saw Gu Li walking out with a black-hooded elder.

Heavenly Court...

Ye Zichen was intrigued, and subconsciously flew towards the

pair.

“Who!?” The elder turned around, and saw Ye Zichen, who was flying around.

“It’s just an insect, nothing special,” Gu Li swatted Ye Zichen to the ground and stepped on him.

“Heh,” the elder snorted. “I will try my best to do as you ask, but don’t think of me as your ally. Keep in mind that I’m merely helping you due to back then.”

“No worries, you might think that we’re not allies now, but there will be a day that you’ll understand. Now that’s that, my door here will always be open to you,” Gu Li opened his arms wide and with a smile.

The elder snorted, then left.

When he left the sight, Gu Li ground his foot against the ground and snorted, “A puny insect dares to try and pry on our conversation? Heh, what foolishness. Ahh, I just wonder when my old friend Ye Zichen is coming. I have to take good care of that young lady before he comes.”

With that, he snapped his fingers at a nearby attendant. “Go and wait in front of Su Yan’s room and satisfy any needs she might have.”

Then, he left the courtyard.

When the attendant watched him leave, he walked further into the courtyard. Ye Zichen, who had been squished by Gu Li, quickly got up, and followed the attendant into the courtyard.

“Young Lady Su, just tell me what you need directly,” the attendant stopped in front of a solitary room, and smiled.

“Screw off. Tell Gu Li to hurry up and let me go. Otherwise, when Ye Zichen and my Liu’er-jie comes, he’s definitely in for punishment.”

Ye Zichen, who lay on the attendant's shoulder, raised his eyebrows.

This...

Is Su Yan!

Ye Zichen flew into the room through the gap in the door while the attendant was unaware.

At that moment, Su Yan was still biting her lips and shouting angrily towards the door. However, the attendant merely closed the door after telling her to make herself at home.

"Hurry up and tell Gu Li to let me out of here!" Su Yan banged against the door angrily.

After a while, perhaps due to her becoming a bit tired, she sat down onto the floor and began to weep.

"Damn it! Why was I so foolish! Why did I believe in what he said!?" Su Yan's sobbed in a self-reprimanding tone.

Ye Zichen let out a sigh, then returned to his normal form and brought her into his arms.

"Hmm?" Su Yan looked up in confusion. When she saw who was in front of her...

"Sorry, I caused you to go through a lot," Ye Zichen patted her back and smiled warmly.

Su Yan's heart raced as she laid in his arms. Her eyes blinked as she looked closely at him.

"Am I dreaming?" Su Yan muttered. Then, she closed her eyes and snuggled into Ye Zichen's embrace. "If it's a dream, then don't let me wake up."

Five minutes later, Su Yan stood up from Ye Zichen's arms.

She looked up with her watery eyes, and muttered to herself, "This dream is great. If only if it wasn't a dream."

“Dummy, this isn’t a dream,” Ye Zichen patted her head.

Only then did Su Yan react with a joyful but surprised tone, “It really is you?”

“Of course!” Ye Zichen smiled. “I came to get you out of here.”

“No, if it really is you, then run!” Su Yan started to shove him out. “Gu Li has surveillance in this room. He’ll definitely find you here.

Creak.

The door to the room opened, and a slither of sunlight fell in through the gap.

Gu Li smiled indifferently with many experts by his side as he crossed his arms and looked at the pair in the room. “Brother Ye, long time no see! Sorry, but I don’t think you can take her out of here.”

# Chapter 597 – Fight

---

As more and more people hurried over, Ye Zichen felt like he had fallen right into a trap.

A hint of mockery could be seen in Gu Li's eyes as he shook his head and raised his eyebrows, "Brother Ye, I didn't expect you to be such a fool. Couldn't you tell that my words were specifically for you earlier?"

Ye Zichen frowned as he thought back.

Gu Li nodded, "What you are thinking is correct. I knew that insect was you. I intentionally didn't kill you. You should thank me since I had someone to bring you over, since I was worried you wouldn't be able to find Su Yan."

"How did you notice?"

"It's simple. Your smell," Gu Li squinted his eyes and smiled. "I had already noticed you when you arrived in front of my mountain gate. However, I wanted to see how you were going to break in. Yet, since I didn't get any news from the subordinates underneath, I assumed you got in some other way. But I did not expect the Seventy-Two Transformations at all. This seems to be a very high leveled ability for those in the Heavenly Court."

Gu Li continued to smile in a completely relaxed manner.

It was impossible for Ye Zichen to do anything no matter how strong he was. After all, Gu Li had a plenty of Sky Immortal level experts gathered around him.

What's more, with the entire sub-dimension as his territory, he did not believe that Ye Zichen could do anything.

"Wow," Ye Zichen nodded with a smile. "That's pretty amazing. You actually manage to infiltrate into both the Heavenly Court and Underworld. Can you tell me who that Heavenly Court person earlier was?"

“Do you think I’m an idiot?” Gu Li snorted.

“I can’t possibly get out of here alive, so isn’t it fine for you to satisfy my curiosity before my death?” Ye Zichen replied.

“Since that’s the case... But... I want you to die with your curiosity,” Gu Li laughed mockingly. Then, he crooked his finger towards Ye Zichen. “Stop bullshitting. Give me the Beast Fire.”

“After so long, you should understand that I’m not the kind of person who likes being ordered around, right?”

Boom.

At that moment, a huge commotion was heard over at the prison.

Lu Lu stepped into the air with chilling air surrounding her body.

“Damn Qilin Stone. You want to trap me? What a joke!”

The chilling hair caused the demonic energy in the surroundings to gradually crystalize.

Gu Li raised his eyebrows. Although he didn’t display too shocking of an expression, his twitching eyes still showed how stunned he was.

“You didn’t expect this did you!?” Ye Zichen snorted.

“Brother Ye, that is truly impressive,” Gu Li snorted.

He did not expect Lu Lu to be cured of her poison, so this truly caught him off guard.

“Ye Zichen, what are you thinking? Move!”

Lu Lu was already surrounded by several Sky Immortal level experts. Ye Zichen licked his lips, then allowed Xuan-Yuan Sword to float out of his hands.

“Sword Slash Maelstrom!”

Xuan-Yuan Sword floated above Ye Zichen’s head, and repeatedly sent out blades of wind.

However, Gu Li merely smiled indifferently, and released Chiyou Sword.

Bang.

Ye Zichen threw a fist towards Gu Li. Gu Li blocked off the punch with both hands, then released his grey wings.

“Hmmpf,” Ye Zichen laughed coldly, while his pair of black wings appeared.

Dong. Dong. Dong.

The two of them no longer used any spiritual techniques, and merely fought using pure strength. As intense echoes resonated through the entire sub-dimension, the Immortal Region elder, who was chained in the cell, looked up.

“So that young man was actually speaking the truth...” The elder sighed softly. I was too careful and lost the chance to return to the Immortal Region.

Bang.

A huge noise sounded out where Gu Li and Ye Zichen fought in the air. Not long later, Gu Li spat out a mouthful of blood, and fell down onto the ground.

Ye Zichen did not hold back upon seeing this. Allowing Gu Li to live is definitely trouble. It was already impossible for him to make Gu Li realize his wrongs and correct himself.

I’ll beat you when you’re down!

“Die!”

Ye Zichen raised his hand, and Xuan-Yuan Sword shot through the air towards him.

“Crap,” Gu Li’s pupils contracted, and raised his hand to summoned Chiyou Sword back to his hands.

Ding.

The blades clashed together. Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, and continued to apply force through his arms to press down upon Gu Li.

Bang.

Gu Li kicked Ye Zichen, then frantically rolled over. Although he was still bleeding, the mockery on his face was ever more obvious.

“Brother Ye, impressive.”

Yet, what faced him was another wind blade.

“Brother Ye, that isn’t quite right, is it? We were chatting nicely just now. Hand me the Beast Fire, and I’ll let you and Su Yan leave. What the heck is all this fighting!?”

“Ha, don’t you find your words hilarious?” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth. “If it wasn’t for Lu Lu, then perhaps even if I did give you the Beast Fire, you wouldn’t have let us leave.”

“Brother Ye truly understands me!” Gu Li squinted his eyes with a smile. Then, his gaze turned cold. “But... Do you really think that victory is in your hands?”

“At least it looks this way,” Ye Zichen wasted no more time. Xuan-Yuan Sword floated into the air once more, while he punched towards Gu Li’s chest.

“Ugh.”

Gu Li staggered backwards. As blood continuously flowed from his mouth, Xuan-Yuan Sword also came shooting down.

“Slash!”

Xuan-Yuan Sword radiated with a gold light and descended with a huge blade of wind.

Gu Li had nowhere to escape, but... He actually smiled.

Yes, I’m seeing this right. He is smirking.

“Geezer, it seems like I need you to act after all,” Gu Li smiled.

Ding.

The blade of wind rang sharply as if it had slashed metal.

An elder with a dark expression also appeared beside Gu Li. He glanced at Ye Zichen, and picked Gu Li up.

“Twelve Demon Sovereigns!” Ye Zichen was stunned.

It was not the first time he had met this geezer. He should be one of the Twelve Demon Sovereigns.

“How many times have I said it already? Call me Lord Demon Sovereign.”

“Yes, Lord Demon Sovereign. I’ll leave Lu Lu to you. You seem very interested in her,” Gu Li replied.

“Ha, you get me,” the old man smiled. “Then can you handle this brat?”

“Handling him is just a piece of cake!”

With that, something else protruded out of Gu Li’s back...

It was another pair of wings.

# Chapter 598 – The Unsealed Xuan-Yuan Sword

---

Gu Li's aura reached a new height the moment his second pair of wings were fully extended out.

Ye Zichen stared at the pair of wings, while Gu Li smirked in disdain.

“You really hurt me just then!”

Gu Li's expression turned darker, then flapped his wings, causing a rampaging surge of wind to flow towards Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen subconsciously raised his sword to deflect it...

Dong!

The wind sent Ye Zichen right against the wall. It was at that moment that Ye Zichen finally noticed Gu Li's actual strength.

Mid stage Sky Immortal.

I didn't expect him to actually improve so much in such a short period of time.

Also, the two pairs of wings behind him!

“Brother Ye, I never fight battles I have no confidence in winning. You should know that very clearly, right?” Gu Li snorted.

Lu Lu pushed back the Sky Immortal experts around her, and tried to back Ye Zichen up.

However, a huge skull appeared in her path. She could erected a wall of ice in front of her, then took a few steps back.

The demon sovereign old man slowly walked through the air towards her, while holding a crystallized skull in his hand.

“Ice Empress, I've heard a lot about you!”

“You want to stop me!?”

Lu Lu glanced at him indifferently. For some reason, she felt a bone-chilling sense of danger. That was something she would not feel normally, but since there was still poison lingering within her body, she was only able to use up to seventy percent of her actual strength.

The old man smiled silently in response. Seeing that, Lu Lu also smiled.

I can lose in strength, but I can't in stature. Lu Lu refused to reveal any trace of worry.

"It seems like you truly want to stop me. Then I can only turn you into an ice sculpture, so that I can save my Lil' Chenchen."

"I have heard that Lord Ice Empress have already cultivated the power of ice to the utmost limit. I have always wanted to take a lot. I wonder just who is stronger between Lord Ice Empress, and the one in the Central Continent's Fox Yao," the old man smiled.

Lu Lu smirked, "I don't know which of us is stronger, but both of us should be stronger than you! Helheim!"

Whoosh.

With that, ice formed in the space surrounding her. Chilling winds howled, and feather-like snowflakes danced around them.

The snowflakes fell down extremely quickly, so the old man turned into a snowman in mere moments.

Then, the snow gradually turned to ice, and the old man became frozen within.

"Shatter." Lu Lu called out quietly.

Yet, at that very moment, a crack appeared in the ice sculpture. Followed by another, and another, and another...

Bang.

The entire ice sculpture shattered, yet the old man remained unharmed. The skull in his hand glowed with a purple light. He

brushed off the ice shards on his body and smiled.

“Ice Empress, the ninth of the Beast Region, is merely so so! They always say give and take, and since Ice Empress showed me a spiritual technique, I naturally have to return the favor!”

WooooOOOOOooHHHH...

Pitiful wails sounded out from all around them, which gradually affected everyone’s mentality.

Lu Lu immediately made the decision to shut off her hearing, while the old man tossed the skull up into the air.

“Soul Unity!”

Tens of thousands of souls flew out from the skull and begun to tear at each other. Then, they manifested into a huge skull over several tens of meters tall.

“Go!”

The old man pointed, and sent the skull flying towards Lu Lu.

“I wonder how Lord Ice Empress will break through my Soul Unity. I am greatly anticipating it!”

...

Ugh...

Ye Zichen pushed himself up from the ground using Xuan-Yuan Sword, while clenching his chest with the other. He quickly took out a Physical Recovery Pill and put it into his mouth, and began to stabilize his own condition.

I ended up like this just by him flapping his wings a bit. If he uses any spiritual techniques...

“Ye Zichen, hand over the Beast Fire. I can still let you live,” Gu Li smiled. Chiyu Sword also cycled around him as it released a faint aura as if it was mocking them.

“Ha...” Ye Zichen laughed coldly and looked up at Lu Lu. She’s

fighting the huge skull, so it's impossible for her to come and help me.

But based on what I know about Gu Li... If I hand the Beast Fire over, then I'll lose my final bargaining chip.

Voom.

A small blue flame rose up from Ye Zichen's palm. Since he was holding Xuan-Yuan Sword with his right hand, and the Beast Fire was also summoned forth through the same hand, he noticed that the Beast Fire seemed to climb towards Xuan-Yuan Sword.

"Ye Zichen," Xuan-Yuan Xiang called out in excitement in his sea off consciousness. "Hurry up, use this fire to burn me..."

Xuan-Yuan Xiang noticed in mere seconds that her seals seemed to loosen slightly.

It's impossible for Ye Zichen to greatly improve his strength right now. So the only way is for me to be unsealed. Even unsealing a single seal would mean that Gu Li wouldn't be able to match up to him.

Ye Zichen immediately maximized his fire output upon hearing Xuan-Yuan Xiang's words.

Xuan-Yuan Sword became covered in a light blue fire in mere moments...

Boom.

A shocking arc of lightning shot down from the sky and landed on top of Xuan-Yuan Xiang's blade edge, causing it to sparkle with lightning, while the blue fire continued to burn...

Then, a rainbow light shone down from the sky, while Xuan-Yuan Xiang floated out of Ye Zichen's hands.

Buzz....

Xuan-Yuan Sword's humming became louder and louder while receiving the baptism of the holy light.

“Crap.”

Gu Li, who was smiling in confidence, immediately noticed something amiss. He glanced at Xuan-Yuan Sword, then glanced at the unarmed Ye Zichen.

Ding!

Gu Li instantly appeared beside Ye Zichen with Chiyou Sword and hacked down.

Ye Zichen expected him to do that, so he had already summoned out the Swirling Flash Plate.

A small sparkle appeared as the blade clashed against the armor.

Gu Li frowned, and clenched his teeth, “A divine artifact!”

Since Chiyou Sword was a divine artifact, the only armors it was unable to break was a divine artifact, or something of an even higher grade.

The humming of Xuan-Yuan Sword became even louder, while Gu Li’s eyes twitched even more. At that very moment, the aura Xuan-Yuan Sword released was already extremely dangerous, so he had to take Ye Zichen down before the sword finished strengthening itself.

However, Ye Zichen also understood that. What he had to do was simple. Hide...

Until Xuan-Yuan Sword was released from the holy light.

Clang, clang, clang.

Gu Li maniacally mustered spiritual energy and hacked at Ye Zichen’s armor, but... the Swirling Flash Plate was a full-body armor...

Gu Li was unable to break through its defenses.

Zing!

Xuan-Yuan Sword, which was being baptized, rang, then return

to Ye Zichen's hand like a ray of light.

Ye Zichen was able to feel a hint of insuppressible sword intent just by gripping it...

Whoosh.

He slashed downwards with the Beast Fire-covered Xuan-Yuan Sword in his right hand, and his left hand behind his back...

We can do this!

# Chapter 599 – Given You Everything

---

“Brave young man, let’s go!” Xuan-Yuan Sword called out in Ye Zichen’s mind. From her tone, it wasn’t hard to tell that she was in a really good mood after the seal coming undone.

“Let me feel what it was like to sweep through the Three Realms back then. I’ll just chop the wings off this winged scum!”

“Calm down,” Ye Zichen replied in his sea of consciousness, then gripped Xuan-Yuan Sword tightly and slowly looked up.

He slashed out.

Although it was merely a casual slash, Gu Li frantically lifted Chiyou Sword to defend against it. Yet, the blade of air merely went through Chiyou Sword and attacked Gu Li directly.

Ugh.

Violet blood spurt out from his mouth, while a new franticness filled his eyes.

Ye Zichen’s strength did not change at all. The only thing that changed was Xuan-Yuan Sword.

Even Ye Zichen was stunned after seeing its effects...

So strong!

He couldn’t help but call out in his mind.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang chuckled in his sea of consciousness, “The Yellow Emperor was merely a complete stage Sky Immortal back then. Why was he feared even by those in the God Realm? It’s because of me. Back then, I killed plenty of ‘gods’. This is nothing compared to that!”

It wasn’t hard to tell how proud she was from her tone.

Gu Li clenched his chest with a troubled manner and panted heavily. Violet blood also flowed out of his mouth as he coughed.

“Why did it turn out like this!?” Gu Li hammered the ground with his right hand. I actually lost to Ye Zichen again. “I can’t accept this!”

Boom.

At that very moment, a huge noise rang out in the sky above them.

Ye Zichen looked up...

The old man grabbed Lu Lu, who was covered in blood, by her head, and descended in front of Gu Li.

“You don’t look to be too successful here,” the old man smiled. Then he chucked Lu Lu onto the ground, causing the latter to writhe...

“What did you do to Lu Lu!” Ye Zichen lifted his sword and pointed it at the old man.

The old man merely smiled, then crooked his finger towards the side...

Then, Su Yan appeared in his grasp.

“Yellow Emperor Xuan Yuan. I guessed it was you when I went to the Modern Realm, but Lord Su kept on interfering and did not allow we Demon Sovereigns to act. It seems like today is the day that I, Sun Bin, makes a huge accomplishment,” the old man smiled, and snapped his finger at Su Yan.

Su Yan immediately felt sleepy. Then, she slowly closed her eyes, while the old man chucked her beside Lu Lu.

Lu Lu continued to writhe on the floor, while blood seeped out from her mouth.

Creak.

“You are seeking death,” Ye Zichen glared sullenly at Sun Bin.

However, Sun Bin merely smiled, and let out two ghosts from the

crystallized skull, who stationed themselves above Lu Lu and Su Yan. “To be honest, I might not be able to defeat you since you have a divine artifact. But, if you want to fight, then I can immediately get my darling to engulf these two kids. Do you want to bet on that?”

With that, the two ghosts reached out towards Su Yan and Lu Lu.

Ye Zichen immediately cried out, “Don’t! I’ll listen to you. What do I need to do for you to let them go?”

“Throw me your weapon,” the old man smiled.

“No!” Xuan-Yuan Xiang yelled in Ye Zichen’s sea of consciousness. “The only reason you can bargain with them right now is due to me. If you throw me out there, then you lose all your bargaining tools. Ye Zichen, we might as well risk it. No one will refuse to submit when their lives are at stake.”

“Here,” Ye Zichen ignored Xuan-Yuan Xiang’s words. Although he understood what she spoke was the truth, he could not afford to let Su Yan and Lu Lu to be in danger.

“Ye Zichen!” Xuan-Yuan Xiang cursed in Ye Zichen’s sea of consciousness.

The old man smiled, then made a strange gesture.

Not long later, a triangle-like mark landed on Xuan-Yuan Xiang’s blade.

“Hehe...” Xuan-Yuan Xiang suddenly laughed. “Ye Zichen, are you truly the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor? Ask yourself honestly, are you worthy? Are you truly ready to accept everything of the Yellow Emperor? Look at you, I’m sealed, and we’re done for. I don’t mind. I’m an artifact spirit and I can wait for my next master, but you? Ye Zichen, your indecisive personality will sooner or later cost you your life!”

“Sorry, but I can’t be as cold blooded as you. I can’t possibly watch them die. Even if it is only a one in ten thousand chance, I’m

willing to try,” Ye Zichen replied calmly.

“But don’t you feel like using the unsealed me to deal with the demons have a greater chance of saving them?” Xuan-Yuan Xiang interrogated.

“I have my own thoughts on this. Sorry,” Ye Zichen replied, then looked towards the old man. “You’ve sealed Xuan-Yuan Sword. Now, can you let them go?”

“Beast Fire!” Gu Li stood up with a cold laughter.

“Here!” Ye Zichen forced the Beast Fire out of his body without any hesitation. However, it only made his face stark white. He tossed the Beast Fire over to Gu Li...

“You wanted the Beast Fire, happy now? Can you let them go now? This has nothing to do with them. You want me, and I already gave you everything you want!”

“Idiot,” Gu Li suddenly laughed coldly after receiving the Beast Fire.

The old man beside Gu Li also shook his head, “I thought you to be a ferocious and ambitious one. It seems like I overestimated you.

“I never admitted that. Can you let my people go!?” Ye Zichen smiled.

Sun Bin shook his head, “No!”

“Mm,” Ye Zichen continued to smile without saying anything. Although Xuan-Yuan Xiang was cursing him to no end in his sea of consciousness, he still maintained a smile on his face as he shrugged. “Then how are you going to deal with me?”

“Ye Zichen, just what ploys do you have!?” Gu Li’s expression darkened.

“Stop joking around, what ploys can I have? You sealed Xuan-Yuan Sword and I gave you the Beast Fire, now you’re saying I

have a ploy?” Ye Zichen shook his head. “I merely expected this to be the end result. That’s all.”

“Yellow Emperor Xuan Yuan’s spirit is truly incomparable!” Sun Bin chuckled.

Ye Zichen nodded, “You might not know, but I’ve been enduring it this entire time. I’ve already cursed the eighteen generations of your family, but I can’t beat you now, so I’m holding it in.”

“Yellow Emperor Xuan Yuan is truly interesting,” Sun Bin pursed his lips. “If you weren’t the arch nemesis of us demons, then I would love to have a drink with you.”

“Since that’s who I am, then what do you want to do?”

“Take you to see Lord Black Dragon!”

# Chapter 600 – Leyline

---

At the Demon Dragon Palace.

Several dragons in a different posture were engraved on the four main pillars within the hall. At the very end of the hall sat Lord Black Dragon on top of a throne, who looked down on Ye Zichen with a cold smile.

On the two sides stood the Twelve Demon Sovereigns of the Demon Realm, alongside some acquaintances of Ye Zichen...

Such as Su Yiyun, Gu Li, and Li Min'e!

“Yellow Emperor!” Black Dragon chuckled and nodded towards Ye Zichen. “Grant him a seat!”

“Lord Black Dragon, there is no need for that. I understand my position rather well. I’m merely your prisoner right now, so let’s forgo the seat. I feel more comfortable standing up,” Ye Zichen refused Black Dragon’s good will.

Black Dragon nodded, “Alright, since Yellow Emperor has said so, then I shall not force the issue.”

“Also, there is something I would like to correct. I don’t deny being the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation, but I dislike being called the Yellow Emperor,” Ye Zichen smiled, yet a sort of determination remained in his eyes.

Black Dragon chuckled speechlessly. He did not expect Ye Zichen to speak to him using such a powerful attitude in this sort of circumstance.

“Brat, do you know where you are!?” The bald one amongst the Twelve Demon Sovereigns shouted.

“Bael!” Black Dragon scolded the bald one.

The baldie snorted towards Ye Zichen and went quiet.

At the same time, Black Dragon also responded, “Heroes truly

come from a young age. Little friend Ye is truly braver than all the others. You are the first to dare to speak to me like this ever since the name of Black Dragon became known.”

Ye Zichen pursed his lips with a light smile without answering.

Black Dragon gripped the handle of his throne, and leaned over and observed Ye Zichen with his gray eyes, “Are you not afraid of death?”

“Would you kill me?” Ye Zichen looked up with a soft smile still on his face.

The two of them met gazes for thirty seconds or so, Black Dragon laughed loudly and clapped as he shook his head repeatedly, “Interesting, interesting...”

“Likewise!” Ye Zichen continued to wear his faint smile, as if he didn’t care about the danger so close at hand.

The Twelve Demon Sovereigns looked towards the two with different reactions. Su Yiyun, in particular, never allowed his gaze to leave Black Dragon, and silently pondered just what Black Dragon was up to.

Yet, Gu Li could not wait anymore. He had brought Ye Zichen over to see him get executed by Black Dragon. However, from the looks of it, Black Dragon had no such intentions at all.

“Lord Black Dragon.”

“I know what you want to say,” Black Dragon interrupted Gu Li. “Little Friend Ye is an important guest of the Demon Realm. Don’t ever mention your thoughts again!”

Then, Black Dragon brought the sealed Xuan-Yuan Sword over with a smile, “Xuan-Yuan Sword, the number one primordial divine artifact.”

“Is Lord Black Dragon interested?” Ye Zichen smiled again.

Black Dragon nodded, “Naturally. I am a normal person, so how

could I not be interested? Yet...”

He returned the sword to the box and looked towards Ye Zichen, “Tell me where the ley line is. As long as you do that, then I would naturally return Xuan-Yuan Sword to its rightful owner.”

“I don’t understand what Lord Black Dragon is talking about?” Ye Zichen replied, still smiling.

“The reason there has been no new gods in the Three Realms for tens of thousand of years is due to the Yellow Emperor sealing the ley line. As the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor, I’m sure you know where it is,” Black Dragon smiled in a heart-chilling way.

“If you tell me, then I can treat you as the most important guest in the Demon Realm. I can disregard the entirety of the past, but if you don’t...”

“You’ll kill me?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“Naturally I would not. I will never allow an enemy to leave with such ease. There are plenty of fun activities in the Demon Realm. Little friend Ye, would you like to test them for yourself?” Black Dragon raised his eyebrows with another smile.

“No,” Ye Zichen shook his head.

“Then tell me!” Black Dragon slapped the armrest of his throne, shocking everyone in the hall with his sudden burst of aura.

Ye Zichen, who had remained calm until that point, gulped. At that moment, he truly felt like he was on the verge of dying.

“Lord Black Dragon, you have to give me some time to think, alright? I don’t have a particularly good impression of the Demon Realm, you should know that better than me. I cannot be sure that what you said was the truth. Treat me as the most important guest... Gu Li said that he would let my friends and I go if I gave him the Beast Fire, but he went back on his words as well,” Ye Zichen forced a calm smile onto his face.

Black Dragon looked at him for a moment, “Alright, since that’s the case, then I’ll give you three days to consider. After that, if you don’t tell me, then don’t blame me for being inhumane!”

Thus, Black Dragon called out with a wave, “Send little friend Ye to the Ming Garden!”

The ones who guided Ye Zichen was Su Yiyun and Li Min’e. The two of them were acquaintances of his from the Modern Realm. Despite this, none of them spoke to one another during the walk, they did not look down on him.

“We’re here,” Li Min’e suddenly said.

Ye Zichen walked into the garden without any hesitation.

Su Yiyun seemed to want to say something, but in the end, he merely clenched his fist, and turned around silently with Li Min’e.

When they finally left, Ye Zichen stopped walking and looked towards where Su Yiyun had left from with a sigh.

The arrangement of Garden Ming was not glorious, but it was still far better than a prison cell.

Ye Zichen sat on the side of his bed while using spiritual energy to deflect the demonic energy around him. Actually, he did not need to do so as a Fallen, but he truly detested the aura of the Demon Realm from the depths of his heart.

“Just what sort of thing are you planning?” Ye Zichen whispered towards his phone. “Xuan-Yuan Sword is sealed and the Beast Fire is gone from my body. What’s more, I don’t even know how or where Su Yan and Lu Lu are. You have to give me an explanation of why you told me to give up resisting, right?”

Dingdong.

System Notification: I naturally have my reasons for doing so. Su Yan and Lu Lu will not come into any danger, and Xuan-Yuan Sword will be unsealed. Do you not trust me?

“I naturally do, that’s why I disregarded Xuan-Yuan Xiang’s objection and came with them,” Ye Zichen responded plainly. The reason he had done so in the first place was due to getting a message in his mind from the system.

System Notification: That’s good. Since you believe me, then what do you have to worry about?

“At least tell me what your plans are. I was improvising the entire time. Thank god I was smart enough, otherwise, I might have died in the hall,” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth.

System Notification: No, even if you had been in danger, someone still would have protected you.

# Table of Contents

## [Red Packet Server](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 501 – How about teaching me pill refining?](#)

[Chapter 502 – Honor Cannot be Violated](#)

[Chapter 503 – I’m Your Third Sis](#)

[Chapter 504 – True Purpose of the Birthday Party](#)

[Chapter 505 – Mount Huaguo and the Water Curtain Cave](#)

[Chapter 506 – Seeking a Husband](#)

[Chapter 507 – You’re all trash](#)

[Chapter 508 – I protect the Fox Yaos](#)

[Chapter 509 – Come and Die!](#)

[Chapter 510 – Scourge](#)

[Chapter 511 – Su Yiyun and Gu Li](#)

[Chapter 512 – Ill-fated Relationship](#)

[Chapter 513 – Hundred Years Peach of Immortality](#)

[Chapter 514 – Robbing Spiritual Treasures](#)

[Chapter 515 – Since you want it, then I’ll give it to you](#)

[Chapter 516 – Ability of the Bomb](#)

[Chapter 517 – Zuo Qingcheng](#)

[Chapter 518 – Jade Emperor has sent a friend request](#)

[Chapter 519 – The Jade Emperor’s alt account](#)

[Chapter 520 – Mount Supreme](#)

[Chapter 521 – Pitiful Shi Qian](#)

[Chapter 522 – Trouble](#)

[Chapter 523 – Immunity Medallion and Tower Head Token](#)

[Chapter 524 – Unable to Withstand Flicking](#)

[Chapter 525 – Got into huge trouble](#)

[Chapter 526 – Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches](#)

[Chapter 527 – Arguing with the Jade Emperor](#)

[Chapter 528 – The First Girl Band](#)

[Chapter 529 – I want to learn Pill Refinement](#)

[Chapter 530 – Pill Refinement](#)

[Chapter 531 – Art of Soul Guidance](#)

[Chapter 532 – Chang’e’s Visit](#)

[Chapter 533 – Awkward Date](#)  
[Chapter 534 – The Sickly Heavenly Court](#)  
[Chapter 535 – The System’s Ambition](#)  
[Chapter 536 – Suspicion](#)  
[Chapter 537 – I Want Your Position as the Master of the Heavenly Court](#)  
[Chapter 538 – Yang Jian’s Choice](#)  
[Chapter 539 – News of Beast Fire](#)  
[Chapter 540 – Girl Band Server](#)  
[Chapter 541 – Kidnapped](#)  
[Chapter 542 – Earth Traveler Sun](#)  
[Chapter 543 – Envoy](#)  
[Chapter 544 – Staying in the City Lord Manor](#)  
[Chapter 545 – Two Keys](#)  
[Chapter 546 – The Seven Fairies Were in Danger](#)  
[Chapter 547 – Zuo Hongxin](#)  
[Chapter 548 – Summoning the Divine Dragon](#)  
[Chapter 549 – Entering Mount Biluo](#)  
[Chapter 550 – News about the Fire](#)  
[Chapter 551 – Strange Seal](#)  
[Chapter 552 – Staying at the Snow Rabbit Clan](#)  
[Chapter 553 – Gathering](#)  
[Chapter 554 – Chosen One](#)  
[Chapter 555 – Rules of the Black-Robed Person](#)  
[Chapter 556 – Third Fatty Jin’s Return](#)  
[Chapter 557 – Triggered](#)  
[Chapter 558 – Undefeatable](#)  
[Chapter 559 – Helper](#)  
[Chapter 560 – Defeat](#)  
[Chapter 561 – Those who think too highly of themselves will not prevail](#)  
[Chapter 562 – Profound Art – Sundering Lightning](#)  
[Chapter 563 – Great Emperor Qingming Appears](#)  
[Chapter 564 – Su Yan the Runaway](#)  
[Chapter 565 – Back Up](#)  
[Chapter 566 – Mount Supreme Appears](#)  
[Chapter 567 – Just try and hit me!](#)  
[Chapter 568 – Yang Jian and the Great Sage’s Friendship was Exposed.](#)  
[Chapter 569 – Entering the Mountain](#)  
[Chapter 570 – The Enraged Su Liu’er](#)  
[Chapter 571 – The Great Deity with a Disgusting Sense of Humor](#)

[Chapter 572 – A Bit Older, and Been Through a Bit More](#)  
[Chapter 573 – Enemies Only Get Angrier When They Meet](#)  
[Chapter 574 – Trouble and Fortune Comes Hand in Hand](#)  
[Chapter 575 – Chief Disciple of the Hundred Flowers Gate](#)  
[Chapter 576 – A Test of Strength](#)  
[Chapter 577 – A Different Ending](#)  
[Chapter 578 – Swirling Flash Plate](#)  
[Chapter 579 – Duan Gu, who screws people over](#)  
[Chapter 580 – Tiantian, Bluey, Tenner](#)  
[Chapter 581 – Contract](#)  
[Chapter 582 – Identity Exposed](#)  
[Chapter 583 – That Guy](#)  
[Chapter 584 – Wait there for me](#)  
[Chapter 585 – A Sky Supreme Expert](#)  
[Chapter 586 – Holy Woman of the Nine Li](#)  
[Chapter 587 – Qiu Yuan – The Chosen One](#)  
[Chapter 588 – The Kidnapped Su Yan](#)  
[Chapter 589 – Trouble in the Underworld](#)  
[Chapter 590 – Souls](#)  
[Chapter 591 – Come and find me in the Demon Realm if you want to save her](#)  
[Chapter 592 – There's a Spy amongst the Ten Yama Kings](#)  
[Chapter 593 – The Elder in the Prison](#)  
[Chapter 594 – The Domineering Lu Lu](#)  
[Chapter 595 – Poisoned Old Li](#)  
[Chapter 596 – Seeing Su Yan](#)  
[Chapter 597 – Fight](#)  
[Chapter 598 – The Unsealed Xuan-Yuan Sword](#)  
[Chapter 599 – Given You Everything](#)  
[Chapter 600 – Leyline](#)